A
000 090 476
3
UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY

179/3473

15

William Warren

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

15

H 6, 68

Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica & Lusitano-Anglica:

OR, A

NEW GRAMMAR,

ENGLISH and PORTUGUESE,

AND

PORTUGUESE and ENGLISH;

Divided into Two PARTS:

The FIRST, for the Instruction of the ENGLISH, who are desirous to attain to the Knowledge of the *Portuguese* Language.

The SECOND, for the Use of the PORTUGUESE, who have the like Inclination to the *English* Tongue.

The First Part of which is corrected and amended, and the Second executed in a plain, familiar, and easy Method.

The SECOND EDITION.

To which is now added,

Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica & Lusitano-Anglica:

OU,

GRAMMATICA NOVA,

INGLEZA e PORTUGUEZA,

E

PORTUGUEZA e INGLEZA;

Dividida em Duas PARTES:

A PRIMEIRA, para a Instruição dos [illegible] que desejarem alcançar o conhecimento da Lingua *Ingleza*.

A SEGUNDA, para o uzo dos PORTUGUEZES que tiverem amesma Inclinação a Lingua *Ingleza*.

Das quais a Primeira está corrigida e emendada, a Segunda executada por Methodo claro, familiar, e facil.

Por J. CASTRO, *Mestre e Traductor de ambas as Linguas.*

LONDON:

Printed for W. MEADOWS, at the *Angel* in *Cornhill*; and E. COMYNS, at the *South-Gate* of the *Royal-Exchange*.

M.DCC.LI.

TO THE

READER.

SINCE the *Portuguese* Language is of great Use in Commerce, we justly admire how it comes that it is so little known among us. Most People think it a harsh and unpolite Language; and as the *Spanish* is commonly imagin'd to be its Mother, we generally apply ourselves to this, and neglect the other; but that these are vulgar Errors, and that the *Portuguese* is as valuable a Language as the *Spanish*, both in respect to its Original and Use, I hope to prove by the following Remarks.

To trace the Rise of this Language, as well as of all others, we must look back into History, to know what Nations have inhabited this Country. The earliest Account we have is, that the *Grecians* and *Carthaginians* had several Colonies in *Spain*; but as the *Romans*, when they made themselves Masters of the Kingdoms of *Spain* and *Portugal*, soon expell'd them, there is hardly any Sign of their Language either in the *Spanish* or *Portuguese* remaining.

1692764

As the *Roman* Language, by reaſon of their powerful Conqueſts, became a kind of a univerſal Language, ſo it obtained likewiſe in *Spain* and *Portugal*, where (for about five Centuries) it was ſpoken as familiarly as in *Latium* itſelf. Then the *Goths* and *Vandals* made themſelves Maſters of theſe Countries, and poſſeſs'd them almoſt 200 Years, till the *Saracens* were call'd over from *Africa*, to revenge an Injury their *Gothick* King *Roderick* had done to a Lady of an antient and noble Family. Upon this the *Saracens* render'd themſelves Maſters of *Spain* and *Portugal*, and remained in Poſſeſſion of them till they and the *Jews* were expell'd by King *Ferdinand* in 1485; who, as the moſt ſecure Means of keeping out thoſe Nations, ſet up an Inquiſition, for which Pope *Innocent* gave him the Surname of *Catholick King*.

All theſe Nations, who made themſelves Maſters of *Spain*, ſubdued likewiſe the Province of *Luſitania*, now call'd *Portugal*, becauſe of its lying ſo conveniently on the Ocean, which open'd a Commerce to other Parts, and ſecur'd the quiet Poſſeſſion of the reſt.

Thus we ſee the *Portugueſe* Language is coæval with the *Spaniſh*, and that it cannot be ſaid to proceed from the *Spaniſh*, ſince it had the ſame Original with that Language.

But that it has a different, or, which ſome will call a more barbarous Sound, proceeds from this, that *Henry* Duke of *Burgundy*, one of the Family of the Dukes of *Lorrain*, (who married

married a Daughter of *Alphonso* VI. King of *Castile*, with whom he had the Province of *Lusitania* for a Portion) introduced the *Gaulic* Dialect: And this we may conclude with the more Probability, since that *French* Prince was the Occasion that the Province *Lusitania* receiv'd the Name of *Portugal*; for great Numbers of his Countrymen follow'd him, who intermarry'd with the People of *Oporto*, where his Court then resided; and from this Mixing of the *Gauls* with the People of *Oporto*, the Kingdom obtained the Name of *Portu-gal*.

And if we observe that the Difference there is betwixt the *Spanish* and *Portuguese* Pronunciation, is all conformable to the *Gaulic* or *French* Dialect, I hope this Conjecture will be allow'd a good one. Those that know *French*, and compare their Pronunciation with the *Portuguese*, require no farther Demonstration; but for the sake of others who have not that Advantage, I here observe the following Particularities.

The *Portuguese* then differ from the *Spaniards* in the Sound of their *g*, *j*, *m*, *x*, *lh*, *ão*, *ões*, *ça*. The *Spaniards* sound the *g*, *j*, and *x* as a Guttural, with a strong Aspiration in the Throat; but the *Portuguese* sound the *g* and *j* exactly like the *French*, and the *x* they use instead of the *French ch*, except in some Words derived from the *Latin*, as is shewn in the Grammar, where it keeps the Sound it has in the *English* Tongue. The *m* sounds like *eng* in *English*: This is a true *French* Sound;

for when the *Portuguese* ſound *bom* good, and the *French* their *bon* good, there is no Difference at all to be perceived. Likewiſe the *Portugueſe* Words *ſom*, *tom*, a Sound, a Tone, the *French* write *ſon*, *ton*, but pronounce exactly alike. The *lhe* ſounds like the *French ll* when an *i* ſtands before it, and another Vowel follows; thus the *French* Word *fille*, a Daughter or Girl, would be wrote by the *Portugueſe* *filhe*. The *ão* is pronounced like *aung* in *Engliſh*, which is alſo of *French* Extraction; and the *French* Words *faon*, *paon*, a Deer, a Peacock, if wrote in *Portugueſe* Characters, muſt be *fão* or *fam*, or *pão* or *pam*. Beſides, it is obvious that the *French* often ſound the *em* like *aung*. The *óens* is pronounced like *oings*; this alſo is eaſily perceived to be a *French* Sound, and therefore, for Brevity's ſake, we'll ſay no more on this Head, but take it for granted that the Sounds wherein the *Portugueſe* differ from the *Spaniſh*, are of *French* Extraction.

And as the *French* Language has ſo generally obtained all over *Europe*, by reaſon of its Softneſs of Sound and Expreſſion, it is ſurpriſing that what is admired in the *French* Tongue, ſhould be condemned and deſpiſed in the *Portugueſe*. What I have ſaid here is to vindicate the *Portugueſe* Tongue from the Prejudices which it labours under in the Opinion of Men. And to conclude this Argument, we may very juſtly ſay that the *Portugueſe* Tongue has a Mixture of the *Spaniſh* Gravity and *French* Softneſs, and is as uſeful in Commerce as the

Spaniſh,

Spanish, and therefore equal (if not superior) to its Rival.

Was I to enumerate the many *Portuguese* Settlements on the *African* Coast and both the *Indies*, I could easily verify what I advance; but that is too obvious to need being taken notice of here; I will only observe that the *Portuguese* being near akin to the *Lingua Franca*, it is current upon all the Coasts of the *East Indies* and *Africa*; and as a *Portuguese* is easily understood by a *Spaniard*, one may correspond to all their Dominions in *Europe* and *America* in that Language; to which I may add, that the *Portuguese* is easier for an *Englishman*'s Tongue than the *Spanish*; and that that Nation are better and more constant Friends to the *English* than the *Spaniards*.

By reason of the aforesaid Prejudices Men have had in Favour of the *Spanish* Tongue, the *Portuguese* has lain disregarded and uncultivated among us; insomuch, that hardly any *Portuguese* Books are imported, and within these thirty Years past but one Grammar has been printed; which Work was done in so confused a Method, that many did not learn the Language for want of a proper Guide; and those who resolved to make a Progress in it were confused by the many Contradictions, and led into gross Mistakes by the erroneous Account the Author gives of the Declensions and Conjugations.

All these Disadvantages, I hope, have been removed in this present Undertaking. I have con-

conſulted the Grammars of all the *European* Languages, to bring this into the beſt Method poſſible; and ſince I am acquainted with all thoſe Languages, I have endeavour'd to explain in an eaſy Manner the Difficulties of the *Portugueſe* Tongue, by comparing them with one or other of the modern Languages.

Firſt, the Letters and their Pronunciation, and the Reading of them, is ſhewn in an eaſy Method, from *Engliſh* Examples: That done, the Accents are treated on; and then to acquaint the Learner with what he is going to do when he handles Nouns, Verbs, *&c.* all the Parts of Speech are explain'd to him in ſo familiar a Manner, that the weakeſt Capacity may learn thereby, that Nouns, Verbs, Participles, Adverbs, *&c.* are not ſuch Myſteries as in ſome Grammars they ſeem to be. The Signification of Caſes, and Numbers, Singular and Plural, both in Nouns and Verbs, is afterwards explain'd; ſo that this Grammar may ſerve as well as any to one who has a Deſire of knowing the Rudiments of Grammar, be it for what Language ſoever, the Foundations being laid down here in a clear, intelligible, conciſe, and methodical Order.

When the Reader takes a View of the Contents of the Chapters, the Work will ſpeak for itſelf.

The Articles, which moſt Beginners are ſtrangely perplex'd at, are in no Grammar that I have ſeen yet explained in ſo plain and ample a Manner as in this. The Declenſions of

Nouns

Nouns and Pronouns, I flatter myſelf, will be found clear and ſatisfactory. In the Conjugating of Verbs I have avoided the unneceſſary Multiplication of Moods, and only ſet down the Indicative, Imperative, Optative or Subjunctive, and Infinitive. Some are fond of others they call *Potential*, *Permiſſive*, and *Conjunctive*, which many and hard Words deter and diſcourage the Learner, thinking he has ſo many different Moods and Terminations yet to learn, when, in effect, thoſe Moods are nothing elſe but the Indicative or Subjunctive, conjugated with ſome Conjunction prefix'd, which governs either the one or the other of theſe Moods; and if the Multiplication of ſtrange and hard Things adds to the Beauty of a Grammar, I have ſhewn the Reader how at Leiſure he may compoſe as many different Moods as there are different Kinds of Conjunctions. The *permiſſive* Mood, taken notice of, *p.* 82, ſeems ſomewhat confuſed on account of the Word *amaſſe*, which is ſaid to be of the perfect Signification; but as ſome Authors make uſe of it in that Senſe, I hope the Critick will lay the Fault on the Idiom of the Language, and not on me. The Uſe of theſe Moods muſt be learnt by Practice; and when the Learner once knows how to apply the Conjunctions, which we have ſhewn in the Syntax, he will in courſe ſpeak in the Permiſſive, Potential, *&c.* Moods, without knowing there are any ſuch perplexing Things belonging to Grammar.

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE Author of this Grammar, who has lately publish'd a Treatise, intitled, A Present for young Gentlemen on entring the Compting-house, *teaches, either at his House in* Houndsditch, *between the* Sun *and* Crown, *near* Bishopsgate, *or abroad, young Gentlemen, Ladies,* &c. *Writing, Arithmetick, and the true* Italian *Method of Book-keeping, in a short Time (without the common Detail of Rules, Tables, and impertinent, or rather unnecessary Questions) by a successful and approved Method of Instruction, in a Merchant-like Manner.*

ADVERTENCIA.

O Author desta Grammatica o qual ultimamente publicou hum Tratado, intitulado, *Hum Presente para os Mancebos em entrando ao Contor*, emsina, tanto em sua Caza em *Houndsditch*, entre as Insignias do *Sol* e *Coroa*, perto de *Bishopsgate*, como por fora a Ler, Escrever, Contar, e Livro de Caixa pello Modo *Italiano* e em pouco Tempo (sem as costumadas Regras, Taboadas, e impertinentes ou inutils Questoens) por hum Methodo, claro, patente, e bem a provado no estilo Mercantil.

GRAM-

GRAMMATICA
Anglo-Luſitanica.

CHAP. I.

Of the Letters, and their Pronunciation.

THE *Portugueſe* endeavour to pronounce as they write, and to ſound all their Letters; ſeveral of them have Sounds peculiar only to that Nation, which we have attempted here to repreſent by Examples from the *Engliſh* Tongue, to the End that the Reader, with very little Aſſiſtance, may be able to attain the true Pronunciation of that Language.

They have Twenty-four Letters, as

ABCDEFGHIJLMNOPQRSTUVXYZ.

Six of them are Vowels, *viz. a, e, i, y, o, u.*

A is pronounced like the *Engliſh au* or *a* in *all*, *wall*, *fall*; as *amór* Love, read *aumór*; *amo* a Maſter, r. *aumo*.

It is ſometimes long, ſometimes ſhort, according as the Accent is placed, as ſhall be ſhewn hereafter.

E ſounds like the *Engliſh e* in *every*, or *a* in *ſame*; *edificár*, to build, r. *adificaur*; *eſcola*,

a School, r. *Ascólau.* It is both Masculine and Feminine, the Masculine is mark'd with an Accent, the Feminine not; as *Pedro*, Peter, r. *Padro*; but *busqué*, I look'd for, r. *booská.*

I sounds like *e* or *i* in *intimate*; as *indiciar*, to disclose; *intimar*, to intimate.

Y stands also for *e*, but with this Difference, that it is pronounced longer, or like *ee*, *Rey*, the King, r. *Raï*; as *monumento*, a Monument, r. *monumento*; and before *a* and *o* it is perceived most; as *joya*, a Jewel, r. *joe-iau*; *joyo*, Darnel, or Tare, r. *joe-io.*

O sounds like *o* in *over*, *open*, *&c.*

U is pronounced like *oo* in *shoot*, or *ou* in *you*; as *absoluto*, absolute, r. *aubsolooto.*

The Consonants are,

B, which has the same Power or Sound as the *English.*

C before *e* and *i* sounds like *s*, and before *a*, *o*, and *u*, like a *k*; but when 'tis mark'd with a little *s*, or a Stroke underneath, which they call a *Plica*, it also assumes the Sound of an *s*, or rather a *ss* before *a*, *o*, and *u*; as *çapato*, a Shoe, r. *saupauto*, *açóute*, a Whip, r. *assoete*; *çumo*, Juice, r. *sumo.*

D and *F* always retain the same Sound they have in other Languages.

G before *a*, *o*, and *u* sounds like the *English*, but before *e* and *i* like a *French g*, much softer than the *English*, or like the *g* in *Edge*, if that Word could be imagined to be pronounced without the *d* in it, which is always heard before the *English g*, and causes that Difference there is in the Sound between the *English* and *French*, or *Portuguese g*; but as we have no Example truly to represent its Sound, we must leave it to be learnt from a Voice. *Gue* and *gui* are pronounc'd hard, and the last Vowel only heard, as *guerra*, War,

War, r. *garrau*; *guisa*, a Manner, r. like *gi* in *give*, *gisau*.

When *g* stands before *ua*, the two Vowels must be sounded distinctly; as *guarda*, a Guard, r. *gu-aurdau*.

H before a Vowel has hardly the Force of any Sound; as in *homem*, *herdéyro*, *honrado*, r. *ómeng*, *erda-eero*, *onraudo*.

But this Letter is of Use in a peculiar Manner among the *Portuguese*, when placed after the Letters *c*, *l*, *n*; as *ch*, *lh*, *nh*.

Cha, *che*, *chi*, *cho*, *chu*, pronounce as you do the *ch* in Chamber, Cherry, Child, Choice, Church: Thus *chave*, a Key, r. *chau-ve*; *chegâr*, to arrive, r. *chegaur*; *chinela*, a Slipper, r. *cheenálau*; *chorâr*, to cry, r. *choraur*; *chupar*, to suck, r. *choopaur*.

☞ Some pronounce the *ch* as the *English* do *sh*, but as that Custom has not yet universally prevailed, we cannot lay it down for a Rule.

Lha, *lhe*, *lhi*, *lho*, *lhu*, r. *liau*, *liée*, *le-á*, *li-o*, *li-oo*; as *abelha*, a Bee, r. *aubal-eau*; *Mulher*, a Woman, r. *Mool-eâr*; *colhido*, gather'd, r. *col-e-eedo*; *filho*, a Son, r. *feel-e-o*; *olhudo*, full of Eyes, r. *ol-e-oodo*.

Nha, *nhe*, *nhi*, *nho*, *nhu*, r. *ne-au*, *ne-a*, *ne-ee*, *ne-ó*, *ne-oo*; as *unha*, a Nail, r. *oon-e-au*; *dinhéyro*, Money, r. *deen-e-áero*; *grunhir*, to grunt, r. *groon-e-eer*; *linho*, Flax, r. *leen-e-o*; *nenhum*, Nobody, r. *nan-e-oom*.

N. B. Observe the *h* in *cha*, *che*, *chi*, *cho*, *chu*, and *nha*, *nhe*, *nhi*, *nho*, *nhu*, stands for an *i*, or *English e*, which, however, ought to be pronounced very short.

J or the *j* Consonant, sounds like their *g*, with this Difference, that it is soft before all Vowels, without Exception.

L, whether single or double, always sounds

like the *English l*; *lado*, a Side, r. *laudo*; *alli*, there, r. *allee*.

M sounds like the *English m*; as *macho*, a Male, r. *maucho*; but *am*, *em*, *im*, *om*, *um*, at the End of Words read *aung*, *eng*, *ing*, *ong*, *oong*; as *carvam*, a Coal, r. *caurvaung*; *bem*, well, r. *beng*; *assim*, so, r. *aussing*; *bom*, good, r. *bong*; *algum*, somebody, r. *algoong*.

Am, *im*, *om*, *um*, in the Beginning or Middle of Words, retain their natural Sound: But *em*, either in the Beginning or Middle of a Word, sounds like *eng*; as *emgano*, a Cheat, r. *eng-gauno*; *dizemlhe*, they tell him, r. *deesenglié*; except in the Words that come from the *Latin*, where the *m* keeps its natural Sound; so *emperador*, an Emperor, r. *emperadór*; *exemplo*, an Example, r. *exemplo*.

N sounds like the *English*.

P sounds like the *English*.

Q before *ua*, r. *kuaw*; thus *qual*, which, r. *kuall*; but *que* and *qui*, r. *ka* and *ke*; *quebrar*, to break, r. *kabraur*; *quinta*, a Country Seat, r. *keentau*.

R, or *rr*, is pronounced as in other Languages.

S, or *ss*, the same.

T, the same, except that before *i* it never assumes the Sound of a *c*, as in *English*; thus, *fatiar*, to cut, r. *faut-e-aur*; *fatía de pam*, a Slice of Bread, r. *fauteeau de paung*.

V sounds like the *English*.

X, pronounce like *sh*; *queyxáda*, a Cheekbone, r. *kaïshauda*; *queyxarse*, to complain, r. *kaïshaurse*; but in some Words derived from the *Latin*, beginning with *a* and *e*, it retains its natural Force, as in *axungia*, *exemplo*, &c.

Z is pronounced like *s*; thus *produzir*, to produce, r. *prodooseer*; *prezar*, to value, r. *presaur*; *resão*, Reason, r. *rasaung*.

The Diphthongs.

The *Portuguese* have many Diphthongs, which they generally pronounce like distinct Letters, with this Difference, that the first Letter must be sounded longer than the second; as, *máis*, more, r. *mau-is*; *náo*, a Ship, r. *nau-o*; *auto*, an Act, r. *au-uto*; *déito*, I fling away, r. *dá-ito*; *vestío*, I cloath, r. *vestí o*; *pois*, then, r. *po-is*; *pessóa*, a Person, r. *pessó-au*; *rúa*, a Highway, r. *roo-au*.

The Diphthongs or Combinations of Vowels are of five Sorts.

The first is the *ae*, as *cae*, *caem*, he falls, they fall; also in *ay*, as *pay*, Father; in *ao*, as in *páo*, Wood; *máo*, bad; and in *au*, as in *causa*, a Cause; *pausa*, a Pause.

The second is in *ea*, *ey*, *ei*, *eo*, and *eu*, as *céa*, a Supper; *rey*, *ley*, a King, the Law; *véo*, I see; *meu*, *teu*, *seu*, mine, thine, his.

The third in *ia* and *io*; *Clemencia*, Clemency; *fugío*, he fled.

The fourth in *oa*, *oe*, *oy*, and *ou*, as *pessóa*, a Person; *póem*, they put; *boy*, an Ox; *dóu*, I give.

The fifth in *ua*, *ue*, *ui*, and *uo*, as *guarda*, a Guard; *guerra*, War; *guinchar*, to cry aloud; *quotidiano*, daily.

Observe, The *i* before the *o* in Words derived from the *Latin* is short; as, *necessario*, necessary, r. *necessâur-e-o*; *contrario*, contrary, r. *contraur-e-o*.

Also when two Consonants follow, the first Vowel of the Diphthong is short; as *poente*, the West, r. *po-ente*; *doente*, sick, r. *do-ente*; *migalha*, a Crum, r. *mig auliau*.

i before *u* is short when a Syllable follows; as, *viuva*, a Widow, r. *ve-óovau*; *miuda*, small, r. *me-óodau*.

Likewise when an *r* or *z* follows after a Diphthong, the first Vowel is short; as *doér*, to feel Pain, r. *do-ár*; *roer*, to gnaw, r. *ro-ár*; *júiz*, a Judge, r. *jou-ees*.

And the *i* in *uim* and *oim* is long; as *ruina*, Ruin, r. *roo-eenau*; *roim*, evil, r. *ro-íng*.

óens is pronounced *o-ins* and *o-ings*; as *galióens*, Galeons, r. *gaulio-ins*; *rezóens*, Reasons, r. *rezo-ings*; others write *óes* instead of *oens*; as *galióes*, *rezóes*, *dilaçóes*, *cargaçóes*, &c.

Ou is sounded by some like *oi*; thus, *ouro*, Gold, is pronounced by some *óiro*; *óutro*, another, they read *óitro*; but the politer Way is to pronounce it like the *ow* in a *Bow*; thus, *outro*, r. *owtro*; *ouro*, r. *owro*, &c.

ao with a Stroke over them, call'd *Til*, sounds like *am*, and they are indifferently wrote one for the other, tho' some pretend, that putting *am* instead of *ão*, is the most elegant Way of Writing, thus, *naçam*, or *nação*, a Nation, r. *naussaung*; *provisão*, or *provisam*, Provision, r. *provisaung*.

ãa pronounce *aung*; thus, *irmãa*, a Sister, r. *eermaung*; *maçãa*, an Apple, r. *maussaung*.

ães, r. *au-engs*; thus, *escrivães*, Writers or Clerks, r. *escree-vauengs*.

They have also some Triphthongs, which always have the Accent plac'd on the middlemost Vowel; as *poéira*, Dust, r. *poé-ira*.

Many other Exceptions might be added; but as too many Rules commonly perplex the Reader, we leave the rest to be attain'd by Practice.

To put these Rules about Pronunciation in Practice, we'll give the Reader here a few Lines of *Portuguese*, express'd after the *English* Way of Spelling, to shew how easy it is for any one to learn, almost by himself, to read that Language, by the Help of those Rules.

POR-

PORTUGUESE.

Tive a honra de suas de quinze e vinte do mes passado pello correo, e de 22 ditto pello navio A. Capitam j pellas quais recebi suas ordens de carregar por seu risco e Conta a bordo do primeiro bom návio, fazendo a viagem paro Amburgo 25 caixas de Açucares com 6. Caixas de brancos, e 50 rolos de Tabaco consignados aos seus amigos e Correspondentes os senhores A. B. e Companhia o que tudo a seu tempo sera puntualmente comprido. Pello Correo proximo passado remety a V. M. 2 Letras de cambio, huã por ll. Esterl. 250 e outra por 320 ditto, das quaes despois de chagadas não duvido de devido comprimento; pella primeira occasiam avizarey a V. M. o necessario mais largamente.

ENGLISH.

Teéve au honra de suaus de kinze e veente do mes paussaudo pello Corrão, a de 22 ditto pello Nau-veeo A. Caupitaung j pellaus qu-auis recebee soo-aus ordengs da cauregaur por sa-oo risco a Conta au bordo do primá-iro bong nauveeo, fauzendo au veeaugeng paurau Aumboorgo 25 Cau-ishaus de Ausoocaures cong 6 Cau-ishaus de brauncos, a 50 rolos de Taubauco consignaudos auos sa oos aumeegos e Correspondentes os Saniores A. B. a Compapanee-au, o ke toodo au sa-oo tempo sarau poontooaulmente compreedo. Pello Corrao proximo paussado remetee au Vossau Merced. 2 Létraus de caumbio, hooma por ll. Esterl. 250 a owtrau por 320 ditto, daus qu-auis despo-es de chegáudaus nau-ong dooveedo de deveedo comprimento; pellau prima-ira ocausiauong aveez-aura-ee a V. M. o necessaurio mau-is largaumente.

CHAP. II.

Of the Accents and Apostrophe.

ACcents are little Notes, invented to mark the Tone of the Voice in the Pronunciation.

These Inflections of the Voice are of three Sorts; the raising it, the falling it, and that which partakes of both raising and falling the Voice in the same Syllable.

Therefore Men have invented three Sorts of Accents, two of them simple, *viz.* the Grave and Acute; and the third composed of both, to wit, the Circumflex.

The Acute raises the Syllable a little, and is mark'd by a little Line that rises from the Left to the Right; thus, (´).

The Grave falls the Syllable, and is mark'd by a little Line descending from the Left to the Right; thus, (`).

The Circumflex is composed of both, and is mark'd thus, (^).

The *Portuguese* don't use many Accents; but when they do, it is to distinguish the different Signification of some Words depending upon the placing of the Accent; for which use they commonly apply the Acute, as *ésta*, the Accent being placed upon the first Letter, is the Pronoun *this*; and *está* the Accent on the last, is the Verb *estou* I am, in the third Person Singular, of the Indicative Mood, Present Tense; *partíram*, the Accent over the *i*, is the third Person Plural, of the Imperfect Subjunctive, of the Verb *partir*, to part, and *partirâm* the third Person Plural of the future Indicative.

The

The *Grave* has but little share in their Writing, and is only placed over some few Monosyllables, as the Feminine Article in the Dative Case, and the Adverb *jà*, already: But many mark even these with the *Acute* Accent.

The Circumflex is also but seldom made use of, it being look'd upon as no Fault to put the Acute instead of it, as *nô* a Knot, is likewise wrote by some *nó*. Here an Accent is absolutely required to distinguish it from the Particle *no*, in the, *e. g. Day hum nô nó Cordel*, make a Knot in the Rope.

To know which Syllables are long and to be mark'd with Accents, belongs to another Part of Grammar, and shall be shewn under the Head of the *Prosodia*.

☞ We have made use of more Accents in this Grammar than is customary, which we beg the Criticks not to find fault with, it being done to point out the Letters the Stress shou'd be put upon, for the sake of Beginners.

The *Apostrophe* likewise takes place in this as in other Languages, being designed only for the more pleasant and easy Pronunciation of Words, by cutting off a Vowel; as *de ouro*, *de arroz*, *de ovos*, the Vowel *e* of the Particle *de* is supplied by a Synalepha or Vocal Note, or what we commonly call an Apostrophe, and is writ as follows, *d'ouro*, *d'arroz*, *d'ovos*; but they generally put the Letters close together, and place an Acute on the first Vowel instead of the Apostrophe; as *dóuro*, *dárroz*, *dóvos*, *néste*, *nélle*, *délle*, &c.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Of the Parts of Speech.

THE *Portuguese*, as well as the *Latins*, have Eight Parts of Speech, which we think proper to explain before the Declensions and Conjugations, that the Learner may know what is meant by the Word Noun Substantive or Adjective, Pronoun, a Verb, *&c.* before he undertakes to decline, or conjugate them.

A Speech or Discourse is composed of Sentences, a Sentence of Words, a Word of Syllables, and a Syllable of Letters. *N. B.* Some Words have but one Syllable, which are called Monosyllables, as *bem*, well; *sem*, without; *por*, for.

By the Parts of Speech we mean here Words, which of what Signification soever they may be, are reduced under the eight following Heads, *viz. Noun*, *Pronoun*, *Verb*, *Participle*, *Preposition*, *Adverb*, *Conjunction*, and *Interjection.* Some call the *Article* the ninth Part of Speech, which however upon due Consideration will be found to belong to the Class of the Pronouns.

A Noun expresses a Thing that may be felt, heard or understood; it is of two Kinds, as the Substantive and Adjective.

A *Noun Substantive* (from the *Latin*, *nomen* a Name, *substantivum* standing by itself, from *subsisto*, I subsist) may be understood by itself, without the Addition of any other Word; and is divided into two different Classes: As Appellative and Common.

The

The Noun Substantive Appellative is the Christian or Sirname of any Man or Woman, Town or Country; as *Joam*, John; *Carlos*, Charles; *Anna*, Anne; *Catherina*, Catherine; *Londres*, *França*, London, France, *&c.*

The Noun Substantive Common, is a Word that is common to all Things of the same Sort; as *homem*, a Man; *mulher*, a Woman; *caza*, a House; *pam*, Bread; *cam* a Dog; *gallo*, a Cock; *pedra*, a Stone; *navio*, a Ship; *livro*, a Book; *ouro*, Gold; *fogo*, Fire; *agua*, Water, *&c.*

A *Noun Adjective* (from *adjicio*, I add) is a Word that has no determinate Signification of its own, but is commonly join'd to a Noun Substantive to signify its Quality: Therefore whenever you can join the Word Thing with it, 'tis a certain Sign of its being a Noun Adjective. Thus you may say a great, handsome, white, black, good, long, full, hard, *&c.* Thing; but a Man, Woman, Child, Table, Pen, Book, a House, is a Noun Substantive; because you cannot say a Man, Woman, Child, Table, Pen, Book, House Thing.

And *grande*, great; *bello*, handsome; *branco*, white; *negro*, black; *bom*, good; *longo*, long; *cheyo*, full; *duro*, hard, *&c.* cannot be understood till some Noun Substantive is joined with 'em, to explain who or what is great, handsome, white, black, good, long, full, hard, *&c.* as a great House, a handsome Woman, a white Hand, black Ink, a good Law, a long Street, a full Measure, a hard Metal or Stone, *&c*, and you may say a great, handsome, white, black, *&c.* Thing.

A *Pronoun* (i. e. *pronomen*, a Fore-name, or something before the Name) is a Word which stands instead of some other Noun to denote a Person or Thing; as, *eu*, *tu*, *elle*, I, thou, he;

que, what; *quem*, who; *este*, this; *aquelle*, that; as, *que diz elle* ou *ella*, what doth he or she say? Here the Pronouns *elle* and *ella* denote the Person of a Man or Woman that spoke before; and *que*, what, the Thing spoke of; *quem he este*, who is that? here *quem* and *este* indicate the Person of some Man.

A *Verb* (i. e. *Verbum* a Word) is a Word that signifies either some Action or Passion; as, *quero*, I will; *siguo*, I follow; *encho*, I fill; *tolero*, I suffer; *sou* or *estou*, I am; *ey* or *tenho*, I have.

A *Participle* (from *participo*, I partake) is made of a Verb, and partakes of it in such a Manner that it may also be used for a Noun, and always has regard to some Person. There are Participles of three different kinds, as of the Preterperfect Tense, in *Latin amatus*, beloved; of the Present Tense, loving, *amans*; and the Future, as *amaturus*, he that shall or will love.

☞ We make use here of Examples from the *Latin*, because they expressing the Thing in one Word may best serve to illustrate the Nature of this Part of Speech; which the modern Languages have retained, tho' they cannot express themselves in so simple and pure a Manner, but are fain to make use of some auxiliar Verbs for that purpose; as may be seen in its Place in the Conjugation of the Verbs, whither we refer the Reader.

The *Adverb* (from *ad* to, *verbum* a Word) is joined to the Verb to signify some Qualification: Thus to express the Manner how I read, write, *&c.* cannot be done without the Help of an Adverb, *e. g. leyo bem*, *escrevo mal*, I read well, I write ill. *Vid. the Chap. of Adverbs.*

The

The *Conjunction* (from *conjungo*, I join together) is a Particle which joins Verbs and Sentences together; as, *e*, and; *se*, if; *ou*, or, *que*, that; *mas*, but, *meo páy e máy*, my Father and Mother; *se tudizes que ésta cóusa he verdadeira ou falsa*, *if* you say, *that* this Thing is true *or* false, *&c.*

A *Preposition* (from *præpono*, I put before) is an indeclinable Particle, and is often joined with Nouns, Pronouns and Verbs, to modify their Signification: Such are the Words *em*, in; *fora*, without; *sem*, without; *a*, to; *de*, from, *&c.* *(Vid. the Chap. of Prepos.)* as *estar em caza*, to be in the House, or at Home; *escrevér á hum amígo*, to write to a Friend; *não pode vivér sem elle*, he cannot live without him; *em amár*, in loving; *pera ler*, for to read.

An *Interjection* (from *interjicio* to cast between) is a Particle not declinable, used to express some Emotion of the Mind, as Surprize, Admiration; as *háy de ti*, woe be to thee! *O que me pesa*, O how sorry am I! *O que Deós he grande*, O how great God is! *O mofíno de mim*, O miserable that I am!

☞ If you shou'd find these Rules too few and short, to conceive a perfect Idea of all the Parts of Speech and their Use, you may turn over the Syntax, where you will find more ample Instruction.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Genders, Numbers, and Cases.

THE *Portuguese* Nouns have but two Genders, *viz.* the Masculine, which is signified by the Article *o*, and the Feminine, by the Article *a*, answering to the Latin *hic* and *hæc*. Some of their Pronouns have also the Neuter Gender, which may be seen under the Head of *the Pronouns Demonstrative*; some Nouns both Substantive and Adjective are of the Masculine and Feminine Gender at once.

The Declension, which is a Changing of a Noun into several Cases, has two Numbers, *viz.* the *Singular* which speaks but of one, and the *Plural* comprehending many; as in Singular *livro* a Book, in Plural *livros* Books.

The Plural is commonly made by adding an *s* to the Singular: As *caza*, a House; *muro*, a Wall; *cidáde*, a City; in Plural *cazás*, Houses; *múros*, Walls; *cidádes*, Cities.

They have six Cases, or Changes, *viz.* the *Nominative*, *Genitive*, *Dative*, *Accusative*, *Vocative*, and *Ablative*, to denote so many different Senses the Word shou'd be taken in.

The *Nominative* (from the Latin *nominare* to name) only names the Person or Thing, as *homem*, a Man; *pédra*, a Stone.

The *Genitive* (from *generare* to beget) betokens that one Person or Thing proceeds from, depends from, or is another's Property; as *filho de Joam*, the Son of John; here *Joam* stands in the Genitive Case, being the Person the Son belongs to, proceeded or depended from: *Caza de Pedro*,

Pedro, the House of *Peter*, or *Peter*'s (his) House, *Peter* stands in the Genitive, he being the Person the House belongs to.

The *Dative* (from the Latin *dare* to give) denotes the Person to whom a Person or Thing is given; as *dou a Pedro*, I give to *Peter*.

The *Accusative* (from the Latin *accusare*, to accuse) signifies the Person or Thing we do or intend to act upon; as *escrevo a carta*, I write the Letter; *lerey o livro*, I will read the Book; *açoutarey a Pedro*, I will whip *Peter*; here *carta*, *livro*, and *Pedro*, stand in the Accusative, being the Subject of some Action.

The *Vocative* (from the Latin *vocare*, to call upon) signifies that a Person or Thing is call'd upon; as *O filho que fazes!* O Son, what dost thou! *O desgraciada casa!* O unhappy House! *filho* and *casa* being here call'd upon, stand in the Vocative Case.

The *Ablative* (from the Preterperfect Participle *ablatus*, the Verb *aufero*, I take from) shews that Person or Thing, a Person or Thing is taken away from; as *venho dâ cidade*, I come from the City; *Pedro o salvó dò fogo*, *Peter* saved him from the Fire; here *cidade* and *fogo* stand in the Ablative, because something comes from, or is taken from the City and the Fire.

For a farther Information about the Use of the Cases, and how they are often govern'd by Prepositions, I refer the Reader to the *Syntax*, the present being only to instruct him so far that he may know what he doth when he declines a Noun thro' the Numbers and several Cases.

CHAP. V.

Of the Articles, and their Declensions.

THE Articles properly belong to the Pronouns, as we said above; but as no Noun can be declined without them, I thought it necessary to shew how they are declined, before we enter upon Nouns Substantive and Adjective.

The Articles are either *definite* or *indefinite*.

The Masculine Article definite.	The Feminine Article definite.
Singular Number.	*Singular Number.*
N. o, *the.*	*N.* a, *the.*
G. dó, *of the.*	*G.* dá, *of the.*
D. ao, pera o, péllo, *to the.*	*D.* à, pera a pélla, *to the.*
Ac. o, ao, *the.*	*Ac.* á, *the.*
V. o, *ô.*	*V.* o, *ô.*
A. dó, *from the.*	*A.* dá, *from the.*
Plural Number.	*Plural Number.*
N. os, *the.*	*N.* as, *the.*
G. dos, *of the.*	*G.* dás, *of the.*
D. aos, pera os, pellos, *to the.*	*D.* às, pera as, péllas, *to the.*
Ac. os, aos, *the.*	*Ac.* ás, *the.*
V. o, *ô.*	*V.* o, *ô.*
A. dós, *from the.*	*A.* dás, *from the.*

When the *Portuguese* would express the *English* Article *it*, they make use of the Article *o*, and say *eu não o vi*, I have not seen it; and therefore, we justly ascribe also a neuter Gender to this Article;

ticle; which has only a Singular Number, and is declined in the Manner following:

Sing.	
N. o, *it.*	*Ac.* o, *it.*
G. dó, *of it.*	*V.* caret.
D. ao, *to it*	*A.* dó, *from it.*

The Article *a* in *English*, is expressed by the *Portuguese hum*, *huma*, and declined as follows:

Sing.	*Plur.*
N. hum, ma, *a.*	*N.* huns, mas, *some.*
G. de hum, ma, *of a.*	*G.* de huns, mas, *of some.*
D. a hum, ma, *to a.*	*D.* a huns, mas, *to some.*
Ac. a hum, ma, *a.*	*Ac.* a huns, mas, *some.*
V. caret.	*V.* caret.
A. de hum, ma, *from a.*	*A.* de huns, mas, *from some.*

Observe, the *English* Article *à* has no Plural, but borrows another Word to express the Plural Signification.

Of the Article indefinite.

This Article has no Distinction of Genders, and only four Cases (in the *Spanish* and *Portuguese*, and but three in *French* and *Italian*) which serve both in the Singular and Plural Number, *viz.*

Gen. de, *of.*
Dat. á & pera. *to.*
Acc. á & pera.
Abl. de *or* por, *from.*

By the following Example you may see, that the Words which are declined with the *Article indefinite*, have no Article in the Nominative, and Vocative Case.

N. Roma, *Rome.*
G. de Roma, *of Rome.*
D. á & pera Roma, *to Rome.*
Ac. á Roma, *Rome.*
V. Roma, *Rome.*
A. de Roma, *from Rome.*

The Article Indefinite serves to decline the Names of Angels, Men, Towns, the Names of the Months, and the Pronouns.

This Article is also put with any other Noun, when two Nouns meet together, the last being in the Genitive Case, and having no determinate Signification assign'd to it; as *huma duzia de meyas*, a Dozen of Stockings; *hum número de cazas*, a Number of Houses; *humel arrat de carne*, a Pound of Flesh. Here 'tis not determined what Stockings, Houses, or Flesh you speak of; and when you employ the indefinite Article *of* in *English*, the *Portuguese* do so likewise.

When the Article indefinite *de* precedes a Word which begins with a Vowel, the *e* is often cast away, and the next following Letter mark'd with an Acute Accent; as *algum délles*, some one of them; and some leave a little Space betwixt the *d* and the next following Letter, with an Apostrophe on the Top; as *algum d'elles*; but the first Way is most practised at present, as we have said above.

☞ Of the Use, Application, and Distinction of these two Articles, see the *Syntax*.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Declensions of the Nouns Substantives, and their Terminations.

THE *Portuguese* have but one Sort of Declension; and their Cases, which admit of no

no Variety of Termination, as was usual with the *Romans*, are only distinguish'd by prefixing the Articles, and the Plural Number is commonly made by adding an *s* to the Singular.

An Example of the Masculine Gender.

The Singular Number.

N. o Témplo, *a or the Church.*
G. dó Témplo, *of the Church.*
D. ao & perao, péllo Témplo, *to the Church.*
Ac. o, ao Témplo, *the Church.*
V. ô Témplo, *ô Church!*
A. dó Témplo, *from the Church.*

The Plural Number.

N os Témplos, *the Churches.*
G. dós Témplos, *of the Churches.*
D. aos & peraos, pellos Témplos, *to the Churches.*
Ac. os, aos Témplos, *the Churches.*
V. ô Témplos, *ô Churches.*
A. dós Témplos, *from the Churches.*

An Example of the Feminine Gender.

The Singular Number.

N. à Caza, *a or the House.*
G. dá Caza, *of the House.*
D. a & pera a, pella Caza, *to the House.*
Ac. à Caza, *the House.*
V. ô Caza, *ô House!*
A. dá Caza, *from the House.*

The Plural Number.

N. as Cazas, *the Houses.*
G. dás Cazas, *of the Houses.*
D. às & pera as, péllas Cazas, *to the Houses.*
Ac. às Cazas, *the Houses.*
V. ô Cazas, *ô Houses.*
A. dás Cazas, *from the Houses.*

Declensions of the Nouns in *m.*

Singular.	*Plural.*
N. a Adem, *a or the Duck.*	*N.* as Adens, *the Ducks.*
G. dá Adem, *of the Duck.*	*G.* dás Adens *of the Ducks.*
D. à & pera a, pella Adem, *to the Duck.*	*D.* ás & pera as, péllas Adens, *to the Ducks,*
Ac. à Adem, *the Duck.*	*Ac.* ás Adens, *the Ducks.*
V. ô Adem, *ô Duck!*	*V.* ô Adens, *ô Ducks.*
A. dá Adem, *from the Duck.*	*A.* das Adens, *from the Ducks.*

Declension of the Nouns terminating in *az.*

Singular.	*Plural.*
N. o Rapáz, *a or the Boy.*	*N.* os Rapázes, *the Boys.*
G. dó Rapáz, *of the Boy.*	*G.* dós Rapázes, *of the Boys.*
D. ao & pera o, pello Rapáz, *to the Boy.*	*D.* aos & pera os, pellos Rapázes, *to the Boys.*
Ac. o, ao Rapáz, *the Boy.*	*Ac.* os, aos Rapázes, *the Boys.*
V. ô Rapáz, *ô Boy!*	*V.* ô Rapázes, *ô Boys!*
A. dó Rapáz, *from the Boy.*	*A.* dós Rapázes, *from the Boys.*

They have Nouns Substantive of many other Terminations, which it will be necessary to set down here, to shew how they change their Singulars into Plurals.

All *Portuguese* Nouns Substantive end either with the six Vowels *a, e, i, o, u, y,* or these five Consonants, *l, m, r, s, z*; which complicated with the Vowels, make

al

al	*am*	*ar*	*as*	*az*
el	*em*	*er*	*es*	*ez*
il	*im*	*ir*	*is*	*iz*
ol	*om*	*or*	*os*	*oz*
ul	*um*	*ur*	*us*	*uz*

Examples of the several Terminations.

The Singular.	*The Plural.*
A. Maria, *Catherina.*	Marias, *Catherinas.*
a Alma, *a Soul.*	Almas, *Souls.*
a Vida, *Life.*	Vidas, *Lives.*
a Romãa, *a Pomegranate.*	Romãas, *Pomegranates.* *or* Romáens.
a Maçãa, *an Apple.*	Maçãas, *Apples*, *or* Maçáens.
E. o Barrete, *a Cap.*	Barretes, *Caps.*
o Capote, *a Cloak.*	Capotes, *Cloaks.*
I & Y. o Thalí, *a Belt.*	Thalíys, *Belts*, *or* Thalíns.
o Nebrí, *a Hawk.*	Nebríys, *Hawks*, *or* Nebríns.
o Rubi, *a Ruby.*	Rubíys, *Rubies*, *or* Rubíns.
o Pay, *a Father.*	Páys, *Fathers.*
a May, *a Mother.*	Máys, *Mothers.*
a Ley, *a Law.*	Léys, *Laws.*
o Rey, *a King.*	Reys, *Kings.*
O. Antonio, *Anthony.*	Antónios, *Anthony's.*
o Livro, *a Book.*	Lívros, *Books.*
U. o Perú, *a Turkey.*	Perús, *Turkeys.*
o Mú, *a Mule.*	Mus, *Mules.*
o Judéu, *a Jew.*	Judéus, *Jews.*
Al. o Avental, *an Apron.*	Avantáys, *Aprons.*
o Punhál, *a Ponyard.*	Punháys, *Ponyards.*
o Hospital, *an Hospital.*	Hospitàys, *Hospitals.*
El. Daniél, *Daniel.*	Daniéys, *Daniels.*

The Singular.	*The Plural.*
o Granél, *a Granary.*	Granéys, *Granaries.*
o Capitél, *a Head of a Pillar.*	Capitéys, *Heads of Pillars.*
Il. o Barríl, *a Barrel.*	Barríys, *Barrels.*
o Gomíl, *a Leaver.*	Gomíys, *Leavers.*
o Funíl, *a Funnel.*	Funíys, *Funnels.*
Ol. o Sol, *the Sun.*	Soys, *Suns.*
o Caracól, *a Snail.*	Caracoys, *Snails.*
o Lançól, *a Sheet.*	Lançoys, *Sheets.*
Ul. o Sul, *South.*	Suis, *Souths.*
o Tafúl, *a Gamester.*	Tafúys, *Gamesters.*

Words ending in *am* regularly make their Plurals in *óens*; as

o Trovám, *Thunder.*	Trovóens.
o Padrám, *a round Pillar or Post.*	Padróens, *round Pillars or Posts.*
o Féijám, *a French Bean.*	Feijóens, *French or Kidney Beans.*
o Esquadrám, *a Squadron.*	Esquadróens, *Squadrons.*

Except some that make their Plural in *ães*; as

o Cortezám, *a Courtier.*	Cortezães, *Courtiers.*
o Irmám, *a Brother.*	Irmães, *Brothers.*
o Villám, *a Countryman.*	Villães, *Countrymen.*
o Cidadám, *a Citizen.*	Cidadães, *Citizens.*
o Christám, *a Christian.*	Christães, *Christians.*

And except, secondly, such as make their Plurals in *áes*; as

o Cám, *a Dog.*	Cães, *Dogs.*
o Escrivám, *a Clerk or Writer.*	Escrivães, *Clerks.*
o Capitám, *a Captain.*	Capitães, *Captains.*

o Pâm,

	The Singular.	*The Plural.*
	o Pám, *Bread.*	Pães, *Bread, or Loaves of Bread.*
	o Rufiám, *a Ruffian.*	Rufiães, *Ruffians.*
	o Gaviám, *a Sparrow-Hawk.*	Gaviães, *Sparrow-Hawks.*
	o Alemám, *a German.*	Alemães, *Germans.*
Em.	a Adém, *a Duck.*	Adens, *Ducks.*
	o Almazém, *a Warehouse.*	Almazéns, *Warehouses.*
	o Homem, *a Man.*	Hómens, *Men.*
Im.	o Chím, *a Chinese.*	Chins, *Chinese.*
	o Rocím, *a Horse.*	Rocíns, *Horses.*
	o Espadím, *a little Sword.*	Espadíns, *little Swords.*
Om.	o Tom, *a Tone.*	Tons, *Tones.*
	o Dom, *a Gift.*	Dons, *Gifts.*
Um	o Atum, *Tunny-Fish.*	Atúns, *Tunny-Fishes.*
	o Jejúm, *a Fast.*	Jejúns, *Fasts.*
Ar.	Cesár, *Cæsar.*	Cesáres, *Cæsars.*
	o Açucár, *Sugar.*	Açucáres, *Sugars.*
	o Polegar, *a Thumb.*	Polegáres, *Thumbs.*
Er.	o prasér, *Pleasure.*	Prazéres, *Pleasures.*
	o Aluguer, *the Rent of a House.*	Aluguéres, *Rents of Houses.*
Ir & Yr.	o Martyr, *a Martyr.*	Mártyres, *Martyrs.*
Or.	o Açór, *an Hawk.*	Açóres, *Hawks.*
	o Bemfeitór, *a Benefactor.*	Bemfeitóres, *Benefactors.*
	o Caçadór, *a Huntsman.*	Caçadóres, *Huntsmen.*
	o Lavradór, *a Husbandman.*	Lavradóres, *Husbandmen.*

	The Singular.	*The Plural.*
Ur.	Catúr, *a small Vessel at Sea*, in Latin *Liburnum.*	Catúres.
Az.	o Primáz, *a Primate.*	Primázes, *Primates.*
	o Arcáz, *a Trunk-Maker.*	Arcázes, *Trunk-Makers.*
	o Rapáz, *a Boy.*	Rapázes, *Boys.*
Ez.	o Ingléz, *an Englishman.*	Inglézes, *Englishmen.*
	o Méz, *a Month.*	Mézes, *Months.*
	o Marquéz, *a Marquis.*	Marquézes, *Marquisses.*
Iz.	o Apprendíz, *an Apprentice.*	Apprendízes, *Apprentices.*
	a Codorníz, *a Quail.*	Codornízes, *Quails.*
	a Raíz, *a Root.*	Raízes, *Roots.*
Oz.	o Arrioz, *a Globe of Stone.*	Arriózes, *Globes of Stone.*
Uz.	o Abestrúz, *an Ostrich.*	Abestrúzes, *Ostriches.*
	o Archabúz, *a Musket.*	Archabúzes, *Muskets.*

Nouns Substantive Irregular.

Some of them have only a Singular Number; as *Cal*, Lime; *Sal*, Salt; *Pez*, Pitch; *Ar*, Air; *Doença*, Sickness; *Próveito*, Profit.

Others have only a plural Termination, altho' they signify but one single Thing, and have the plural Article prefix'd to them; as *os Láyvos*, the Foulness of the Face; *as Grélhas*, a Gridiron; *as Calças*, Breeches; *as Mígas*, Sops; *as Ceróulas*, Drawers; *Andás*, a Carriage; *Andillas*, a little Litter; *as Cámaras*, a Flux or Loosenes; *as Pareas*, a Tribute; *as Primícias*, the First-fruits; *as Cócegas*, Ticklishness; *as Cústas*, Expence; *os Editos*, Edicts; *as Entránhas*, Bowels; *as Exé-*

quias,

quias, a Funeral; *os Erpes*, mortified; *os Tornéos & as Justas*, Tilts and Tournaments; *resto, ou demazia*, an Overplus.

N. B. I cannot forbear observing one of the Beauties of this Language, which is, that the *Portuguese* have many Nouns Substantive ending in *ada*, which cannot be express'd in other Languages without Circumlocution; as *Pedráda*, a Blow with a Stone; *Pancáda*, a Blow with a Stick or Club; *Cutiláda*, a Cut with a Sword; *Estocáda*,, a Stab with a Sword or Dagger, *&c.*

CHAP. VII.

Of Nouns Adjective, regular and irregular; their Genders, Terminations, Declensions, and Comparisons.

THE Nouns Adjective, like the Substantive, have but two Genders, *viz.* the *Masculine*, which they signify by the Article *o*, and *Feminine* by *a*, and some Words are both Masculine and Feminine.

Their Terminations are,

	Singular.	*Plurat.*
A.	o Virtuóso, *virtuous.*	os Virtuosos, *virtuous.*
	o Linda, *fair.*	os Líndos, *fair.*
E.	o & a Grande, *great.*	os & as Grándes, *great.*
	o & a Forte, *strong.*	os & as Fortés, *strong.*
O.	o Fermóso, *handsome.*	os Fermósos, *handsome.*
	o So & a Só, *alone*, adj.	os Sos & as Sós, *alone or only*,

U. o Nú,

Singular.	*Plural.*
U. o Nú, a nua, *naked.*	os Nús, as nuas, *naked.*
o Crú, a crua, *raw.*	os Crùs, as cruas, *raw.*
o Méu, a minha, *mine.*	os Méus, as minhas, *mine.*
o Téu, a tua, *thine.*	os Téus, as tuas, *thine.*
o Séu, a sua, *his.*	os Séus, as suas, *theirs.*
Al. o & a principál, *chief.*	os & as Principáis, *the chief.*
o & a Géral, *general.*	os & as Geráis, *generals.*
El. o & a Agradável, *agreeable.*	os & as agradáveis, *agreeable.*
Il. o & a Sotil, *subtle.*	os & as Sotíys, *subtle.*
o & a Utíl, *useful.*	os & as Utíys, *useful.*
Ol. o Espanhól, a Espanhóla, *a Spanish Man, or Spanish Woman.*	os Espanhóys, as Espanhólas, *Spanish Men, or Spanish Women.*
Ul. o & a Azúl, *blue.*	os & as Azúys, *blue.*
Om. o Bóm, a bóa, *good.*	os Bóns, & as bóas, *good.*
Um. Nenhúm, nenhuma, *no one.*	Nenhums, nenhúas, *none,*
o Comúm, a comúa, *common.*	os Comúns, as comúas, *common.*
Algúm, algúma, *somebody.*	Algúns, algúmas, *some.*
Ar. o & a Particulár, *particular.*	os & as Particuláres, *particular.*
o & a Singulár, *singular.*	os & as Singuláres, *singular.*
Or. o & a Melhór, *better.*	os & as Melhóres, *better.*
o & a Mayór, *greater.*	os & as Mayóres, *greater.*
Az. o & a Mordáz, *a spiteful Man or Creature.*	os & as Mordázes, *spitefulness.*
o & a Capáz, *capable.*	os & as Capázes, *capable.*
Ez. o & a Ingléz, *English.*	os & as Inglézes, *English.*

o & a Por-

Singular.	*Plural.*
Ez. o & a Portuguéz, *a Portuguese Man, a Portuguese Woman.*	os & as Portuguézes, *Portuguese Men, and Portuguese Women.*
o & a Cortéz, *courteous.*	os & as Cortézes, *courteous.*
Iz. o & a Felíz, *happy.*	os & as Felízes, *happy.*
o & a Bellíz, *sharp.*	os & as Bellízes, *sharp.*
Oz. o & a Feróz, *fierce.*	os & as Ferózes, *fierce.*
Uz. o & a Truz, *cruel.*	os & as Trúzes, *cruel.*

Irregular Adjectives

Are such as admit of no Plural Number; as the numerical Adjectives, *trínta*, thirty; *quárenta*, forty; *cincóenta*, fifty; *sessenta*, sixty; *séttenta*, seventy; *outénta*, eighty; *novénta*, ninety; *cem*, hundred. But *hum*, one; is in the Plural *huns*, some; *cento*, hundred, in Plural, *centos*, hundreds; *conto* & *milhám*, a Million; *contos* & *milhóens*, Millions.

N. B. Some who pretend to be curious in this Language, think it no Impropriety to admit even of Plurals to all or most of the Numeral Adjectives, *e. g. múytos víntes*; *múytos tríntas*; many Twenties, many Thirties. Also in Arithmetick it is usual to say, *nóves fora*, cast away the nines.

Some of these Numerals are esteemed irregular for want of the Singular Number; as *duzéntos*, two hundred; *trezéntos*, three hundred; *&c.* for *duzénto* and *trezénto*, which are not allowed.

The Nouns Adjective are declined like the Substantives; yet to remove all Difficulties, we shall set down here a few Examples of them.

Declension of the Termination in *o* and *a*.

Singular.

N. o Fermóso, a fermósa, *handsome.*
G. do Fermóso, da Fermósa.
D. ao & pera o, pello Fermóso; á & pera, a péllá fermósa.
Ac. o, ao Fermóso, fermósa.
V. o Fermóso, o fermósa.
Ab. dó Fermóso, dá fermósa.

Plural.

N. os Fermósos; as fermósas.
G. dós Fermósos; dás fermósas.
D. aos & pera os, pellos Fermósos; ás pera as pellas fermósas.
Ac. os, aos Fermósos; as fermósas.
V. o Fermósos, o fermósas.
Ab. dós Fermósos, das fermósas.

Declension of the Termination *al* of the Common Gender.

Singular.

N. o & a Principál, Principál.
G. do & dá Principál.
D. ao, péra o, pello; a & pera a, péllá Principal.
Ac. o, ao; á, Principál.
V. o Principál.
Ab. do; dá, Principal.

Plural.

N. os & as Principáis.
G. dos; dás Principáis.
D. aos péra os; péllos; as, & pera as, péllas Principáis.
Ac. os, aos; as, ás Principáis.
V. o Principáis.
Ab. dos; dás Principáis.

All

All Nouns Adjective are declined in this Manner. It would be superfluous to insert more Examples, when I am persuaded that you'll find no Difficulty to decline any of them, by the Help of the foregoing Table of Terminations.

Comparison of Nouns Adjective.

The Adjectives have three different Degrees of increasing or diminishing their Signification, which is called *Comparison.*

1. The *Positive*, which is the positive or simple Signification of the Thing, as *gránde*, great; *pequéno*, little; *máo*, bad.
2. The *Comparative*, which makes a Comparison between Things, and increases the Signification of the Positive, as *mayór*, greater, *menór*, lesser, *peyór*, worse.
3. The *Superlative*, which signifies the Manner of the Thing in the greatest, or least Degree, and with Excess; as *maximo*, the greatest; *mínimo*, the least; *péssimo*, the worst.

But all Adjectives have not this pure Way of Comparisons, for they commonly make their Comparative by adding the Word *máis* or more, or *ménos* less, to the Word, *e. g. perféito*, perfect; in Comparative *mais perféito*, more perfect; in Superlative *perfeitíssimo*, the most perfect. *Poderóso*, powerful; *mais poderóso*, more powerful; *poderosíssimo*, the most powerful. *Excellénte*, excellent; *mais excellénte*, more excellent; *excellentíssimo*, the most excellent.

Thus many *Portuguese* Words, derived from the *Latin*, make their Superlative in *issimo*; but for the Generality their Comparisons are made by the

the Particle *mais*, as *mais grande*, greater, or more great, for the Comparative; and *o mais*, the most, as *o mais grande*, the greatest, for the Superlative.

Positive.	*Comparative.*	*Superlative.*
Fermóso, sa, *handsome*,	máis Fermóso, sa, *handsomer*,	Fermosíssimo, *or* ó máis fermoso, *the handsomest.*
Sotíl c. *subtle*,	máis Sotíl, *more subtle.*	Sotilíssimo, *or* ó máis sotil, *the most subtle.*
Valente, c. *valiant*,	máis Valente, *more valiant*,	o máis Valente, *the most valiant*, &c.

The Comparative is known when you find one compared with many, or with many of a different Kind; *e. g. Hum Européo hé máis valente que múitos Americânos*, one European is more valiant than many Americans. *Os Inglezes sam máis valentes que os Francézes*, the Englishmen are more valiant than the Frenchmen.

The Superlative is when one Thing is compared with many, or with many of the same Kind, *e. g. Este Portuguez he o mais valénte de todos os Portuguézes*, this Portuguese is the most valiant of all the Portuguese. *Os Ingleses sám os mais valéntes de todos os hómens*, the English are the most valiant of all Men. Some, tho' not so elegantly, express the Superlative in this Manner; as, *Este Portuguéz he máis valente que tódos os Portuguézes*, and *Os Inglêses sam máis valentes que todos os homens*, this Portuguese is more valiant that all the Portuguese, and the English are more valiant than all Men.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Pronouns.

Their several Sorts, and how they are declined.

PRonouns are used instead of a Noun to avoid Repetition. They are divided into seven Classes, *viz.* into *Personal*, *Conjunctive*, *Possessive*, *Demonstrative*, *Interrogative*, *Relative* and *Improper*.

Of the Pronoun Personal.

This Pronoun is to mark the first, second and third Person in both Numbers, as in Singular, *Eu*, I, for the first Person; *tu*, thou, the second; *elle*, he, the third. And in Plural, *Nós*, we, the first; *vós*, you, the second; and *elles* they, the third Person; to which Class also belong the Pronouns *se* or *si*, himself.

Declensions of the Pronouns Personal.

Singular.	*Plural.*
N. Eu, *I.*	*N.* Nôs, *we.*
G. de Mim, *of me.*	*G.* de Nôs, *of us.*
D. a Mim, & pera mim & me, *to me.*	*D.* á Nôs & pera nôs, *to us.*
Ac. a Mim & me, *me.*	*Ac.* á Nôs, *us.*
V. caret.	*V.* caret.
Ab. de Mim, *from me.*	*Ab.* de Nôs, *from us.*

Declen-

Declension of the Pronoun of the second Person.

Singular.	*Plural.*
N. Tu, *thou.*	Vôs, *ye or you.*
G. de Ti, *of thee.*	*G.* de Vôs, *of you.*
D. a & pera Ti & Te, *to thee.*	*D.* a & pera Vôs, *to you.*
Ac. a Ti & Te, *thee.*	*Ac.* á Vôs, *you or ye.*
V. o Tu, *ô thou.*	*V.* o Vôs, *ô you or ye!*
A. de Ti, *from thee.*	*A.* de Vôs, *from you.*

Declension of the Pronoun of the third Person.

Elle and *Ella* are declined like Nouns Adjective. The Pronoun *Se*, or *Si*, him or himself, has no Nominative or Vocative, and is only declined in the Singular, which serves also for the Plural Signification.

G. de Si, *of him*; *of her*; *of it (self).*
D. á Si & Se, *to him*; *to her*; *to it (self).*
Ac. a Si & Se, *him*; *her*; *it (self).*
A. de Si, *from him*; *from her*; *from it (self).*

☞ *Me*, *Te*, and *Se* are used both in the Dative and Accusative Case; as for Example in the Dative; *meu pay me da*, *meu pay te da*, my Father gives me or to me, my Father gives thee or to thee; *elle me faz honra*, *elle te faz honra*, he doth me (to me) Honour, he doth thee (to thee) Honour; *não se lhe da díſſo*, he doth not care for it. In the Accusative Case, as *meu pay me*, *te chama*, my Father calls me or thee; *entreterse*, *abrirse*, &c.

Of the Pronoun Conjunctive.

This Pronoun has a very near Resemblance to the Personal, but differs in this, that it is never

the Nominative Case to the Verb; it always precedes as well as the other, but always is the Dative or Accusative of the said Verb.

There are six Pronouns of this Order, *viz.* *me*, me; *te*, thee; *se*, himself; *nós*, us; *vós*, you; *lhe*, and *lhes*, him, her, and them; *e. g. meu pay me falla*, my Father speaks to me; *teu amigo te escréve*, thy Friend writes to thee; *múitos nam se conhecem*, many don't know themselves; *os filosofos nós dizem*, the Philosophers tell us; *o Réy vôs ordena*, the King orders you; *eu lhe*, or *lhes pago*, I pay him, or them.

N. B. The Pronoun *elle*, *ella*, & *isto*, in Dative Case *a elle*, *a ella*, *a isto*, is express'd by *lhe*, which serves in all the Genders; and in Dative Plural *a elles* & *ellas* by *lhes*; *e. g. meu irmão ou minha irmãa me perguntou, mas não quero dizer-lhe*, my Brother or my Sister has ask'd me, but I don't care to tell him or her. Likewise in Plural they say, *dizelhes*, tell them, speaking of Men or Women.

Of the Pronoun Possessive.

The Pronoun Possessive is that which indicates a Property or Possession. There are six of these Pronouns, three Singular and three Plural, *víz.* *meu* & *minha*, mine; *teu* & *tua*, thine; *seu*, *sua*, his, hers; *nósso*, *nóssa*, our; *vósso*, *vóssa*, your; *seus*, *suas*, their: As *meu pay*, my Father; *tua may*, thy Mother; *seu livro*, his Book; *nóssa caza*, our House; *vosso cam*, your Dog; *seus amigos*, their Friends.

Of the Pronoun Demonstrative.

This Pronoun points out either a Person or a Thing, and is both Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter. This is the only Instance, besides the Article, where the *Portuguese*, as well as the *Spaniards*, admit of the Neuter Gender, which reigns only in the Singular, and not in the Plural. Thus you say in Masculine, *elle*, he; in Feminine *ella*, she; and in the Neuter, *isto*, that.

In Masculine *este*, this; in Feminine *esta*, this; in Neuter *isto*, this (Thing); as *este hómem*, this Man; *esta Mulher*, this Woman; *isto não me agrada*, this doth not please me; and in Masculine *esse*, that (Man); Feminine *essa*, that (Woman); Neuter *isso*, that (Thing); as *esse pam*, that Bread; *essa pedra*, that Stone, and *isso he verdade*, that is true. These, as all Pronouns in general, are declined like Nouns Adjective, and therefore 'tis not necessary to decline them here; but the Word *aquelle* being irregular in its Declension, we put it down here at large.

Singular.

Masculine.	*Feminine.*	*Neuter.*
N. aquelle, *this*	aquella, *this.*	aquelle, *that.*
G. d'aquelle, *of this.*	d'aquella, *of this.*	d'aquelle, *of that.*
D. a & pera aquelle, *to this*	a & pera aquella, *to this.*	a & pera aquelle, *to that.*
Ac. a isto & isso, *this.*	a esta, essa, *this.*	a isto, isso, *that.*
V. caret.		
A. d'isto, *from this.*	d'esta, *from this.*	d'isto, *from this.*
d'isso, *from that.*	d'essa, *from that.*	d'isso, *from that.*

Plural.

Plural.

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
N. aquelles.	aquellas *those.*
G. d'aquelles.	d'aquellas, *of those.*
D. a & pera aquelles.	a & pera aquellas, *to those.*
Ac. á aquelles.	a aquellas, *those.*
V. caret.	
A. d'istos, d'issos.	d'istas, d'issas, *from those.*

Pronouns Interrogative.

As the Name sufficiently declares, they serve in the asking a Question; as *que*, what; *que dizes?* what do you say? *quem*, who; *quem he éste?* who is that? *qual*, which; *qual dos dóus?* which of the two? *cujo* and *cuja*, whose; *cujo cavallo he esse?* whose Horse is that? *cuja caza he esta?* whose House is this?

The Pronoun Relative

Points out the Subject without repeating it; as for Example, *Déos, quem eu adoro hé o criador*, &c. God whom I adore, is the Creator, *&c.* where the Relative *whom* refers to God, the Subject of my Adoration, and amounts to the same as if I had said, *God, which God I adore, is the Creator*, &c. Hither belongs also the Word *cújo, cúja*, whose; as *méu amigo cújo honór*, &c. my Friend, whose Honour, *&c.* And thus the Words *quem*, and *cújo, cúja*, which we said before were Interrogatives, are also often used as Relatives, according to the Manner in which they are apply'd; and if you take but Notice of the Sense of the Clause, you'll never fail discerning when those Words are Interrogative, and when Relative.

☞ When they stand in the Beginning of a Phrase they are Interrogatives, when in the Middle Relatives.

The Pronouns Improper.

Some Grammarians bring under this Class the Words *tal*, such; *algum*, *alguma*, somebody; *cada*, every; *quem*, who; *que*, what; *nenhum*, *nenhuma*, none; *certo*, *certa*, certain; *outro*, *outra*, another; *todo*, *toda*, all; *mesmo*, the same.

N. B. The *Latins* treat the Words *nullus*, *certus*, *alter*, and *totus*, as Nouns Adjective.

Before we proceed, we cannot but observe a singular Propriety of this Language, which greatly contributes to the Softness of its Tone, and renders some Words very expressive; which is, that they join the adjunctive Particle *N* (which stands for *em*, in) close to some of their Pronouns in both Numbers and Cases, to intimate an Indication. As for Example, *nélle*, *nélla*; *nélles*, *néllas*; in him or it, in her; in them. In the same Manner you say, *náquelle*, *náquella*, *náquillo*, *náquelles*, *náquellas*; *néste*, *ésta*, *nísto*, *nestos*, *néstas*; *nésse*, *néssa*, *nísso*, *nésses*, *néssas*.

The *Portuguese* likewise join the Word *outro* to the forementioned Pronouns *aquelle*, *este*, *esse*, *e. g.* *aquellóutro*, that other, *estóutro*, *essóutro*, this other.

For the other Remarks concerning Pronouns, we refer the Reader to the *Syntax*.

But observe, that when a Vowel is omitted for the sake of joining two Words together, the first Vowel after that which was omitted, ought to be mark'd with an Accent Acute; as *essóutro*, for *esse outro*; here an Accent is placed on the *o*, to signify that a Letter was left out.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Of the Verb, its Moods, Tenses, and Persons.

THE *Verb* is a Part of Speech which varies its Termination, but not after the same Manner as the Noun doth, which has six Cases, and marks no Time or Mood; whereas the Verb is conjugated with Moods and Tenses, has a Singular and Plural Number, and three Persons.

The Moods determine the Signification of the Verb, as to the Manner and Circumstance of the Affirmation; as *I love*, *love thou*, that *I may love*, and *to love*. Tenses are Distinctions of Time; as *I do love*, and *I did love*; and to conjugate a Verb is to form or vary it according to its several Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons.

There are five Moods: The first is the *Indicative*, from the *Latin* Word *indico*, I shew, which simply denotes the Action; as *eu léyo*, I read; *eu quéro*, I love. The second is the *Imperative*, from *imperare*, *Latin*, to command; as *lé tu*, read thou; *óuve tu*, hear thou. The third is the *Optative*, from *optare*, to wish, to desire, to pray; as *oxala amára eu*, *proveira & queyra Dèos & praza à Déos*, *amára eu & amasse eu*, God grant (that) I did love. The Particles *o* and *assim* also express the Optative Mood; thus you say, *o se fosse eu tal*, O that I were such; *assim Deos me ajude*, so help me God. The fourth is the *Conjunctive*, which is known by the Particle *como*; as *como eu amo*, when I love; *como eu amava*, when I did love; *como estivestes múyto tempo doénte*, since you have been a long Time sick; but as this Mood is nothing but the Indicative conjugated through all the Tenses with the Particle *como* before it, we thought it needless to swell the Conjugations by

inserting it. The fifth is the *Infinitive*, from the *Latin infinitus*, because it is not limited either by Number or Person, as other Moods are; as *lér*, to read.

Verbs have also *Gerunds* and *Participles* in the *Portuguese* as well as in the *Latin*.

The *Gerund* is so call'd from *gero*, I bear, from its bearing a double Signification, *viz.* that of a *Noun* and that of a *Verb*. There are three of these *Gerunds*, as in *Latin*; *amandi*, of loving; *amando*, in loving, and *amandum* to love; for that in *di* the *Portuguese* use the infinitive Mood, with the Preposition *de*; as *de amár*, of loving: The Gerund in *do* follows the *Latin* exactly; thus the *Portuguese* say, *amando*, *léndo*, in loving, in reading; for the Gerund in *dum* they use the Infinitive Mood, and the Preposition *a* and *pèra*; as *á amar*; or *pera ámar*, *á lér*, and *pera lér*, to love, and to read.

A Supine is a Termination of a Verb, and has the same Signification as the present Tense of the Infinitive Mood, either active or passive; *amatum*, in *Latin* to love; *amatu*, to be loved; in *Portuguese à amar*, to love, and *de ser amado*, to be loved.

A Participle derives its Name from *pars* and *capio*, as it partakes both of a Noun and a Verb. There are three Sorts in *Latin*, as

The Participle of the Perfect Tense; as *Latin amatus*, *Portuguese amado*, *amada*, beloved.

The Participle of the Present Tense; as *Latin amans*, *Portuguese amante*; *o que ama*, loving, or he that loves.

And the Participle of the Future Tense in *rus*, in active, and in *dus* in passive; as *Latin amaturus*, *Portuguese o que ha de amar*, he that shall, will, or is about to love; and *Latin*, *amandus*, *Portuguese*, *o que ha de ser amado*, he that shall, will, or is to be loved; this last belongs to the Verb passive.

 This

This Account of the Verb and Moods being sufficient, I now proceed to speak of the Tenses.

There are properly but three *Tenses* or *Times*, *viz.* the Past, the Present, and the Future, or what is to come.

The Preterperfect Tense shews the Action of the Verb either perfectly past; as *Latin amavi*, *Portuguese améy*, or *ténho amado*, I loved or I have loved; or imperfectly past in the Imperfect Tense; as *Latin*, *amabam*, *Portuguese*, *amava*, I did love; which is used when the Action *e. g.* of loving is past, in regard to the Time in which I speak; and present, with respect to some Circumstance; as I did love (when I was young); I did learn (when I was at School;) or, lastly, when an Action is past before some Circumstance happen'd, which is also past, and then it is called the *Preterpluperfect*; as I had supp'd when you came in, *eu tinha ceado quando V M entrava.*

The Preterperfect is again divided into the Definite and Indefinite; the former determines the Time of the Action of the Verb entirely past; as I saw your Uncle Yesterday, *vî a seu Tio ontem.*

The Preterperfect Indefinite is when you mention the Time yet passing; as I have seen your Uncle this Morning, *ténho vísto a seu Tio ésta manham.* In *English* we are not so nice in this Distinction; for we say indifferently, *I saw your Uncle this Morning*, or *I have seen your Uncle this Morning.*

☞ The natural Order of Things requires the Past or Preterperfect Tense to stand before the Present; but as all Grammarians make the Present Tense the first in their Conjugations, to avoid being particular, or breeding Confusion, we have follow'd the same Method.

The Present Tense shews the present Action of the Verb; as *eu leyo*, I read; *eu amo*, *tu amas*, *elle ama*, I love, thou loveſt, he loveth; *nos amamos*, *vos amays*, *elles amam*, we love, ye love, they love.

The Future Tense points out a Time to come; as *Latin*, *amabo*, *amaréy*, I will love. We have in *Engliſh* two Signs to this Tense, which, for want of Obſervation, Foreigners often confound; the one is conditional, as *I ſhall*; the other poſitive, as *I will*. Some don't diſtinguiſh between theſe two Words; and it's common to hear *I ſhall* for *I will*, and *é contra*; as *I will fall* for *I ſhall fall*, and *I ſhall go*, for *I will go*.

The *Portugueſe* have two Futures, the one imperfect or ſimple, the other perfect or compounded; the ſimple *eu amaréy*, I will or ſhall love; the compounded *eu teréy amado*, I ſhall have loved.

There are then ſix (or with the Subdiviſion of the Future and Uncertain Tenſe, eight) Tenſes, *viz.* the Preſent, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect definite, the Preterperfect indefinite, the Preterpluperfect, the Future imperfect and perfect, and the uncertain Tenſe, of which we ſhall ſpeak at large in the *Syntax*.

A Tenſe has two Numbers, *viz.* the Singular and Plural, and three Perſons in the Singular; as *eu*, I; the ſecond *tu*, thou; the third, *elle*, *ella*, he, ſhe; and as many in the Plural; the firſt *nôs*, we; the ſecond *vôs*, ye and you; the third *elles*, they; *e. g. eu amo*, I love; *tu amas*, thou loveſt; *elle ama*, he loves; *nos amamos*, we love; *vos amays*, ye love; *elles amam*, they love.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The Division and Conjugations of the Verbs.

THE Verbs are commonly divided into Active, Passive, Neuter, Reciprocal, and Impersonal.

A Verb Active signifies an Action, and has always a Passion opposed to it; as *I love*, the Passion opposed to it is *I am loved*; *I read*, *I am read*; *I hear*, *I am heard*: Or, to make it yet plainer, join with the Verb the Words *a Person*, or *a Thing*, and if then it makes good Sense, it is an Active; thus you may say, *I see a Person or a Thing*, *I strike a Person or Thing*, *I follow a Person or Thing*.

The *Verb Passive* speaks a Sufferance; as *I am loved*, and is formed of the Verb Substantive; as *I am*, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense; as *eu sou amado*, I am loved; *tu eras amado*, thou wert loved; *elle he amado*, he is loved, *&c.*

The Verb Neuter signifies an Action not convey'd unto another, but remaining within the Person acting, and has no Passion opposed to it; as *I sleep*, *I walk*, *I come in*, *I tremble*, *I fall*, *I grow pale*, cannot make a Passive *I am slept*, *I am walk'd*, &c. neither will they make Sense if join'd to the Words *a Person* or *Thing*; thus you cannot properly say, *I sleep a Thing*, *I walk a Thing* or *Person*, *I fall*, *I grow old*, &c.

Some of the Verbs Neuter make use of the Verb *ey*, I have; and others of *sou*, I am, in the Preterperfect Tense.

The *Verb Reciprocal* has the same Person for its Nominative and Subject; as *me espanto*, I am surprized. This Sort of Verb is hardly known in the

the *English*, tho' very common in the *Italian*, *French*, *Spanish*, and *Portuguese* Languages.

Verbs Impersonal have only the third Person, being called so from their wanting the first and second; as *chóve*, it rains; *géa*, it freezes; *trovéja*, it thunders, *&c.* they are conjugated throughout in the third Person, and in the Singular Number only. *See the Conjugations below.*

Verbs again are divided into

Regular and *Irregular*. The *Regular* are such as are confined to general Rules: The *Irregular* have none, and differ from the former, in the first Preterperfect of the Indicative Mood, and Preterperfect of the Conjunctive.

The Conjugations of Verbs

Of this Language, both regular and irregular, are commonly reduced to three Terminations, and as many Conjugations; the first Conjugation is known by the Termination of the Infinitive Present in *ar*, as *amo*, I love, *amar*, to love; the second terminates in *er* in Infinitive, as *léyo*, I read, *lér*, to read; the third in *ir*, as *ouço*, I hear, *ouvir*, to hear.

☞ The Verb *pónho*, I put, in Infinitive Present, *pór*, to put, with its Compounds, of which we shall speak at the End of the Conjugations, is the only one of the Termination in *or*, and therefore hardly deserving to make a Conjugation by itself.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Of the Auxiliary Verbs aver *and* ter.

AS the auxiliary or helping Verbs *aver* and *tér*, to have, are necessary for the conjugating the Preterperfects of the Verbs, both Active, Passive, Neuter and Reciprocal; and since without the Verb *sóu* and *estóu*, I am, the Passive Verb cannot bē conjugated, I shall begin with these two Verbs, as absolutely necessary to be first learned.

The Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb *Aver.*

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
Eu éy, *I have.*
Tu has, *thou hast.*
Elle ha, *he has.*

Plur.
Nôs hémos, avémos, *we have.*
Vôs éys, avéys, *ye have.*
Elles ham, *they have.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu avía, *I had.*
Tu avias, *thou hadst.*
Elle avía, *he had.*

Plur.
Nôs avíamos, *we had.*
Vôs avíeys, *ye had.*
Elles avíam, *they had.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu óuve, *I have had.*
Tu ouvíste, *thou hast had.*
Elle óuve, *he has had.*

Plur.

Plur. Nôs ouvémos, *we have had.*
Vôs ouvéstes, *ye have had.*
Elles ouvéram, *they have had.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu tenho avido, *I have had.*
Tu tens avido, *thou hast had.*
Elle tem avido, *he has had.*

Plur. Nôs temos avido, *we have had.*
Vôs tendes avido, *ye have had.*
Elles tem avido, *they have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu tinha avido, *I had had.*
Tu tinhas avido, *thou hadst had.*
Elle tinha avido, *he had had.*

Plur. Nôs tínhamos avido, *we had had.*
Vôs tínheys avido, *ye had had.*
Elles tínham avido, *they had had.*

Future Imperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu averéy, *I shall or will have.*
Tu averás, *thou shalt or wilt have.*
Elle averá, *he shall or will have.*

Plur. Nôs averémos, *we shall or will have.*
Vôs averéys, *ye shall or will have.*
Elles averam, *they shall or will have.*

Future Perfect Tense.

Sing. *ja entam* Eu teréy avido, *I shall then have had.*
Tu teras avido, *thou shalt have had.*
Elle terá avido, *he shall have had.*

Plur. *ja entam* Nôs terémos avido, *we shall have had.*
Vôs teréys avido, *ye shall have had.*
Elles terám avido, *they shall have had.*

Imperative.

Imperative. *The first Tense.*

Sing.
Has no first Person.
ájas, ou ha tu, *have thou.*
ája elle, *let him have.*

Plur.
Ajámus nôs, *let us have.*
Ajáys vôs, *have ye* or *you.*
Ajam elles, *let them have.*

The second Tense.

Sing.
Has no first Person.
Averas tu, *thou shalt have.*
Averá elle, *he shall have.*

Plur.
Averémos nôs, *we shall have.*
Averéys vôs, *ye shall have.*
Averám elles, *they shall have.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
x ala aja eu, *God grant I may have.*
Oxala ajas tu, *God grant thou mayst have.*
Oxala aja elle, *God grant he may have.*

Plur.
Oxala ajámos nôs, *God grant we may have.*
Oxala ajáys vôs, *God grant ye may have.*
Oxala ájam elles, *God grant they may have.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Oxala ouvêra, ouvésse eu, *would to God I had or might have.*
Oxala ouvéras, ouvesses tu, *would to God thou hadst, or mightest have.*
Oxala ouvéra, ouvésse elle, *would to God he had, or might have.*

Plur.

Plur.
- Oxala ouvéramos, ouvéssemos nôs, *would to God we had, or might have.*
- Oxala ouvéreys, ouvésseys vôs, *would to God ye had, or might have.*
- Oxala ouvéram ouvéssem elles, *would to God they had, or might have.*

The Uncertain Tense.

Sing.
- Eu avería, *I would or might have.*
- Tu averías, *thou wouldst or mightst have.*
- Elle avería, *he would or might have.*

Plur.
- Nôs averíamos, *we would or might have.*
- Vôs averíays, *ye would or might have.*
- Elles averíam, *they would or might have.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Quéyra Deos que eu tenha avido, *God grant I have had, or might have had.*
- Quéyra Deos que tu tenhas avido, *God grant thou hast had, or mightest have had.*
- Quéyra Deos que elle tenha avido, *God grant he has had, or might have had.*

Plur.
- Quéyra Deos que tu nôs tenhámos avido, *God grant we have had, or might have had.*
- Quéyra Deos que vôs ténhays avido, *God grant ye have had, or might have had.*
- Quéyra Deos que elles ténham avido, *God grant they have had, or might have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Prouvera Deos que eu ouvéra, ou ouvesse avido, *would to God I had had.*
- Prouvera Deos que tu ouvéras, ou ouvesses avido, *would to God thou hadst had.*
- Prouvera Deos que elle ouvéra, ou ouvesse avido, *would to God he had had.*

Plur.

Plur.
Prouvera Deos que nôs ouvéramos, ou ouvéssemos avido, *would to God we had had.*
Prouvera Deos que vôs ouvérys, ou ouvésseis avido, *would to God ye had had.*
Prouvera Deos que elles ouvéram, ou ouvessem avido, *would to God they had had.*

Future Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Quando eu ouvér, *when I shall or will have.*
Quando tu ouvéres, *when thou shalt or wilt have.*
Quando elle ouvér, *when he shall or will have.*

Plur.
Quando nôs ouvérmos, *when we shall or will have.*
Quando vôs ouvérdes, *when ye shall or will have.*
Quando elles ouvérem, *when they shall or will have.*

Future Perfect Tense.

Sing.
Quando eu tivér avido, *when I shall or will have had.*
Quando tu tivéres avido, *when thou shalt or wilt have had.*
Quando elle tivér avido, *when he shall or will have had.*

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos avido, *when we shall or will have had.*
Quando vôs tivérdes avido, *when ye shall or will have had.*
Quando elles tivérem avido, *when they shall or will have had.*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Avér, *to have.*

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter avido, *to have had.*

Future Tense.

Ter de avér *ou* Esperár de avér, *(to have to have, to hope to have) to have hereafter.*

Gerund.

Avéndo, *in having*, & de avér, *of having.*

Participle Present.

Ouvénte, *having*; o que ha, *he that has.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Avído, avída, *having had*; o que ha avido, *he that has had.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de avér & espéra de aver, *he (one) that is to have, or hopes to have.*

It may not be improper to observe here, that the Verb *ey*, *has*, *ha*, I have, thou hast, he has, assist all Sorts of Verbs in their Moods, Tenses, and Persons, both in the Active and Passive Signification. In the Active by adding the Particle *de* to the Present Tense of the Infinitive of the Verbs, *e. g. Ey de amar*, I am about to love, or I shall love; *Ey de ler*, *ouvir*, I am about to hear, or shall read or hear, *&c.* and so in the other Persons and Tenses.

In the Passive Significations are added to the Particle *de* the Present Tense of the Infinitive of *Sér*, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense of any Verb, as *Ey de ser amada*, I shall or will be

be loved; *has de ser ouvido*, thou shalt or wilt be heard; *ha de ser lido*, he or it shall be read.

The Auxiliary Verb, *Ter.*

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
Eu ténho, *I have.*
Tu téns, *thou hast.*
Elle tém, *he has.*

Plur.
Nôs témos, *we have.*
Vôs téndes, *ye have.*
Elles tem, *they have.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu tinha, *I had.*
Tu tinhas, *thou hadst.*
Elle tinha, *he had.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos, *we had.*
Vôs tínheys, *ye had.*
Elles tínham, *they had.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu tive, *I have had.*
Tu tivéste, *thou hast had.*
Elle téve, *he hath had.*

Plur.
Nôs tivémos, *we have had.*
Vôs tivéstes, *ye have had.*
Elles tivéram, *they have had.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu tenho tido, *I have had.*
Tu tens tido, *thou hast had.*
Elle tem tido, *he has had.*

Plur. { Nôs temos tido, *we have had.*
Vôs tendes tido, *ye have had.*
Elles tem tido, *they have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu * tinha tido, *I had had.*
Tu tinhas tido, *thou hadst had.*
Elle tinha tido, *he had had,*

Plur. { Nôs tínhamos tido, *we had had.*
Vôs tínheys tido, *ye had had.*
Elles tínham tido, *they had had.*

Future Imperfect.

Sing. { Eu teréy, *I shall or will have.*
Tu terás, *thou shalt or wilt have.*
Elle terá, *he shall or will have.*

Plur. { Nôs terémos, *we shall or will have.*
Vôs teréys, *ye shall or will have.*
Elles terám, *they shall or will have.*

Future Perfect.

Sing. { Ja entam eu teréy tido, *I shall (then already) have had.*
Ja entam tu téras tido, *thou shalt (then already) have had.*
Ja entam elle terá tido, *he shall (then already) have had.*

Plur. { Ja entam nôs terémos tido, *we shall (then already) have had.*
Ja entam vôs teréys tído, *ye shall (then already) have had.*
Ja entam elles terám tido, *they shall (then already) have had.*

* Some express the Preterpluperfect, tho' improperly, by *tivera, tivéras, tivéra; tivéramos, tivéreys, tivíram.*

Imperative

Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

Sing.
Has no first Person.
Tem ou ténhas tu, *have thou.*
Ténha elle, *let him have.*

Plur.
Ténhamos nôs, *let us have.*
Ténde ou tenháys vôs, *have ye.*
Ténham elles, *let them have.*

Second Tense.

Sing.
Has no first Person.
Terás tu, *thou shalt have.*
Terá elle, *he shall have.*

Plur.
Terémos, nôs, *we shall have.*
Teréys vôs, *ye shall have.*
Terám elles, *they shall have.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
Oxala ténha eu, *would to God I may have.*
Oxala ténhas tu, *would to God thou mayst have.*
Oxala ténha elle, *would to God he may have.*

Plur.
Oxala tenhâmos nôs, *would to God we may have.*
Oxala ténhays vôs, *would to God ye may have.*
Oxala ténhem elles, *would to God they may have*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Oxala tivéra, tivésse eu, *wish to God I had.*
Oxala tivéras, tivésses tu, *wish to God thou hadst.*
Oxala tivéra, tivésse elle, *wish to God he had.*

Plur.
Oxala tivéramos, tivéssemos, nôs, *wish to God we had.*
Oxala tivéreys, tivésseys vôs, *wish to God ye had.*
Oxala tivéram, tivéssem elles, *wish to God they had.*

Uncertain Tense.

Sing.
Eu tería, *I would or might have.*
Tu terías, *thou wouldst or mightst have.*
Elle tería, *he would or might have.*

Plur.
Nôs teríamos, *we would or might have.*
Vôs teríeys, *ye would or might have.*
Elles teríam, *they would or might have.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
Quéyra Deos que eu ténha tido, *God grant that I may have had.*
Quéyra Deos que tu ténhas tido, *God grant that thou mayst have had.*
Quéyra Deos que elle ténha tido, *God grant that he may have had.*

Plur.
Quéyra Deos que nôs ténhamos tido, *God grant that we may have had.*
Quéyra Deos que vôs ténhays tido, *God grant that ye may have had.*
Quéyra Deos que elles ténham tido, *God grant that they may have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivésse eu tido, *would to God I had had.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéras ou tivésses tu tido, *would to God thou hadst had.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéra ou tivésse elle tido, *would to God he had had.*

Plur.
Prouvéra Deos que tivéramos ou tivéssemos nôs tido, *would to God we had had.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéreys, ou tivésseys vôs tido, *would to God ye had had.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéram ou tivessem elles tido, *would to God they had had.*

First

First Future Tense.

Sing.
Quando eu tivér, *when I shall have.*
Quando tu tivéres, *when thou shalt have.*
Quando elle tivér, *when he shall have.*

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos, *when we shall have.*
Quando vós tivérdes, *when ye shall have.*
Quando elles tivérem, *when they shall have.*

Second Future Tense.

Sing.
Quando eu tivér tido, *when I shall have had.*
Quando tu tivéres tido, *when thou shalt have had.*
Quando elle tivér tido, *when he shall have had.*

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos tido, *when we shall have had.*
Quando vôs tivérdes tido, *when ye shall have had.*
Quando elles tivérem tido, *when they shall have had.*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Ter, *to have.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter tido, *to have had.*

Future Tense.

Avêr de ter (*to shall or will have, to be to have*) *to have hereafter.*

Gerund.

Tendo, *in having*; de ter, *of having.*

Participle Present.

Em ter, *having*; o que tém, *he that has.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Tido, tida, *having had*; o que ha tido, *he that has had.*

Participle Future.

o que ha de ter, o que espéra de ter, *he that is to have, or hopes to have.*

Observations on the Verb *Ey* and *Tenho.*

The Verb *Ey* has one Irregularity peculiar to itself, and not to be found in other Verbs, which is, that in all Moods, Tenses, and Persons of the Singular Number, it serves Nouns both Singular and Plural; *e. g. ha hum anno*, it is a Year; *ha múitos annos*, it is many Years; *avia hum anno, & avía múitos annos*, as the *French* say, *il y a un an, & il y a plusieurs années*, which is also a usual Way of expressing themselves in the *Spanish* Language.

This Verb is made use of in all Moods, Tenses, and Persons, with the Addition of the Particle *de*, with the Present and Imperfect of the Verb Substantive *Sou* and *Estóu*; as *ey de ser, amar, ler*, I shall be, love, read; *avía de ser, amar, ler*, and *óuve de ser, amar, ler.* The Verb *Tenho* in this Form is improper, altho' elegant enough in *Spanish*; for the *Portuguese* do not say *tenho de amar, ler, escrever*; but the *Spaniards* say properly enough *tengo de amar, ler, escrivir*, I am to love, read, write, *&c.*

The

The Particle *me* is also sometimes added, and must always be placed before the Particle *de*; as *ha me de custar*, it will cost me; *ha me de dar*, he shall give me; it being improper to say *ha de me dar*, *ha de me custar*, &c.

The Verb *Ey* is also often used with the Particle *de*, and the Infinitive of the Verb *Sou*, that is, *ser*, join'd with the Participle Preterperfect of any Verb in the Passive Voice, *e.g. ey de ser amado*, I am to be loved; *ey de ser lido*, *ouvido*, &c. I am to be read, heard; so *avía de ser amado*, *lido*, *ouvido*, and so thro' all the Numbers and Persons.

The Verb *Ey* in Passive Voice is always put before the Infinitive *ser*; as *ey de ser*, *avía de ser*, &c, but in the Active Voice it is not only put before the Verb to which it is join'd, but sometimes after; as *se me fizerdes a vontáde*, *deyxár vos ey por méu erdéyro*, if you please me, I will make you my Heir; *se fordes obediénte a vossos páys*, *far-vos ha Deos múytas mercés*, if you are obedient to your Parents, God will bestow many Blessings on you.

The Word *ouve*, I had, he had, the first or third Person in Singular of the first Preterperfect Tense of the Verb *Ey*, is the same with *ouve*, the third Person Singular Present Indicative of the Verb *ouço*, I hear, which must be distinguish'd by Experience.

The Verb *Tenho*, I have, is often join'd with Verbs Active and Neuter, not in all the Tenses, only the Preterperfect and Preterpluperfect of the Indicative, Optative, and Subjunctive Moods; as also in the Futures Perfect of the Indicative and Conjunctive. Examples; *tenho amado*, I have loved; *tivera (tinha) amado*, I had lov'd; *prouvera Deos que tivera eu amado*, would to God I had lov'd; *tendo amado*, having lov'd; *ter amado*, to

have loved; *eu terey amado*, I shall have loved; *quando eu tiver amado*, when I shall have loved.

The Verb *Tenho* is auxiliary to other Verbs through all its Moods and Tenses, only in an Active Sense, with the Addition of a Participle Preterperfect Tense of the said Verb; as *tenho amado*, I have loved; *tens*, *tem amado*, *lido*, *ouvido*, loved, read, heard; *tinha*, I had, *tinhas*, *tinha amado*, *lido*, *ouvido*, &c. And note, That the three auxiliary Verbs, *sou*, *ey*, and *tenho*, are often auxiliary to one another; as *ey de ser*, I shall be; *tenho sido*, I have been; *tenho avido*, I have had; and sometimes the same Verb is auxiliary to itself; as *ey de aver*, I shall or am to have; *tenho tido*, I have had, *&c.* but is not well join'd with all Participles of the Active Voice; for it would be improper to say *tenho podido*, I have been able; or *tenho querido*, I have desired; *tenho rido*, I have laugh'd; *tenho abhorrecido*; I have abhorred; for *ey podido*, *querido*, *rido*, *abhorrecido*, because the Verb *tenho* doth not square with the Signification of all Verbs, of which Experience will be the best Informer.

Note, That the Verbs which admit not of the auxiliary Verb *tenho*, are generally of the second or third Conjugation, and those rare; it is join'd with all of the first Conjugation, excepting the Verb *matar*, to kill; for it would be improper to say *tenho matado*, but rather *tenho morto*, I have killed.

☞ The Imperfect Tense of the Verb *tenho*, *tinha*, I had, is exactly express'd as the Word *tinha*, a Scald Head: *Tinha* is also both the first and third Person Singular of the Imperfect Indicative Mood; the third Person Singular of the Indicative Present equivocates with the third in the Plural; thus you write, *ellé tem*, *& elles tem*,

tem, he has and they have. Likewise the Verb *ponho*, I put, is in the third Person Singular *elle poem*; and in the third Person Plural of the Indicative Present you say *elles poem*, they put. The Verb *soy* equivocates also in the first Person Singular of the Imperfect Indicative with the third Person Singular; as *eu era*, & *elle era*, I was and he was; so you say *eu tivera* & *elle tivera*, all which is easily learnt by Experience, and the Sense the Words stand in.

CHAP. XII.

Of the Verbs Sou *and* Estou, *I am.*

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
- Eu sóu, estóu, *I am.*
- Tu es, estás, *thou art.*
- Elle he, está, *he is.*

Plur.
- Nôs sômos, estámos, *we are.*
- Vôs sôys, estáys, *ye are.*
- Elles sám, estám, *they are.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Eu éra, estáva, *I was.*
- Tu éras, estávas, *thou wast.*
- Elle éra, estáva, *he was.*

Plur.
- Nôs erámos, estávamos, *we were.*
- Vôs éreys, estáveys, *ye were.*
- Elles éram, estávam, *they were.*

First Preterperfect Tense

Sing.
- Eu fóy, estíve, *I have been.*
- Tu foste, estivéste, *thou hast been.*
- Elle foy, esteve, *he has been.*

Plur.
- Nôs fomos, estivémos, *we have been.*
- Vôs fostes, estivéstes, *ye have been.*
- Elles fóram, estivéram, *they have been.*

Second

Second Perfect.

Sing.
Eu ténho sido, *ou* estado, *I have been.*
Tu téns sido, *ou* estado, *thou hast been.*
Elle tém sido, *ou* estado, *he has been.*

Plur.
Nôs témos sido, *ou* estado, *we have been.*
Vôs téndes sido, *ou* estado, *ye have been.*
Elles tém sido, *ou* estado, *they have been.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu * tinha sido, estado, *I had been.*
Tu tinhas sido, estado, *thou hadst been.*
Elle tinha sido, estado, *he had been.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos sido, estado, *we had been.*
Vôs tínheys sido, estado, *ye had been.*
Elles tínham sido, estado, *they had been.*

Future Imperfect.

Sing.
Eu seréy, estaréy, *I shall or will be.*
Tu serás, estarás, *thou shalt or wilt be.*
Elle será, estará, *he shall or will be.*

Plur.
Nôs serémos, estarémos, *we shall or will be.*
Vôs seréys, estaréys, *ye shall or will be.*
Elles serám, estarám, *they shall or will be.*

Future Perfect.

Sing.
Ja entám eu teréy sido, ou estado, *I shall then already have been.*
Ja entam tu terás sido, ou estado, *thou shalt then already have been.*
Ja entam elle terá sido, ou estado, *he shall then already have been.*

Plur.
Ja entam nós terémos sido, ou estado, *we shall then already have been*
Ja entam vôs teréys sido, ou estado, *ye shall then already have been.*
Ja entam elles terám sido, ou estado, *they shall then already have been.*

* Some use *fora* & *estivera*, *foras*, *estiveras*, &c. for the Pluperfect *tenho sido*, which however is not so proper.

Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

Has no first Person.

Sing.
- Sé tu, está, *be thou.*
- Seja elle, estéja, *be he, or let him be.*

Plur.
- Sejámos nôs, estejámos, *let us be.*
- Séde vôs, estáy, *be ye.*
- Séjam élles, estejam, *let them be.*

Second Tense.

Has no first Person.

Sing.
- Serás tu, estarás, *thou shalt be, or be thou.*
- Será élle, estará, *he shall be, or be he.*

Plur.
- Serémos nôs, estarémos, *we shall be.*
- Seréys vôs, estaréys, *ye shall be, or be ye.*
- Serám elles, estarám, *they shall be, or be they.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
- Oxala séja eu, ou estéja, *wish to God I may be.*
- Oxala séjas tu, ou estéjas, *wish to God thou mayst be.*
- Oxala séja elle, ou estéja, *wish to God he may be.*

Plur.
- Oxala sejámos nôs, ou estejámos, *wish to God we may be.*
- Oxala séjays vôs, ou estéjays, *wish to God ye may be.*
- Oxala séjam elles, ou estejam, *wish to God they may be.*

Imperfect

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Oxala fóra eu ou fosse, estivéra ou estivesse, *would to God I were.*
- Oxala fóras tu ou fosses, estivéras ou estivesses, *would to God thou wert.*
- Oxala fóra elle ou fosse, estivêra ou estivesse, *would to God he were.*

Plur.
- Oxala fóramos nôs ou fóssemos, estivéramos ou estivéssemos, *would to God we were.*
- Oxala fóreys vôs ou fósseys, estivéreys ou estivésseis, *would to God ye were.*
- Oxala fóram elles ou fóssem, estivéram ou estivéssem, *would to God they were.*

The Uncertain Tense.

Sing.
- Eu seria, estaria, *I might be.*
- Tu serias, estarias, *thou mightst be.*
- Elle seria, estaria, *he might be.*

Plur.
- Nós seríamos, esteríamos, *we might be.*
- Vós seríeys, estaríeys, *ye might be.*
- Elles seriam, estaríam, *they might be.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Queyra Deos que eu tenha sido estado, *God grant I may have been.*
- Queyra Deos que tu tenhas sido estado, *God grant that thou mayst have been.*
- Queyra Deos que elle tenha sido estado, *God grant that he may have been.*

Plur.
- Queyra Deos que nôs ténhamos sido estado, *God grant that we may have been.*
- Queyra Deos que vôs ténheys sido estado, *God grant ye may have been.*
- Queyra Deos que elles ténham sido estado, *God grant that they may have been.*

Pre-

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
Prouvéyra Deos que eu ouvéra, ouvésse sido, *would to God that I had been.*
Prouvéyra Deos que tu ouvéras, ouvesses sido, *would to God that thou hadst been.*
Prouvéyra Deos que elle ouvéra, ouvesse sido, *would to God that he had been.*

Plur.
Prouvéyra Deos que nôs ouvéramos, ouvessemos sido, *would to God that we had been.*
Prouvéyra Deos que vôs ouveréys, ouvessêys sido, *would to God that ye had been.*
Prouvéyra Deos que elles ouvéram, ouvéssem sido, *would to God that they had been.*

First Future Tense.

Sing.
Quando, praza á Deos que eu for, estiver, *when or please God I shall or may be hereafter.*
Quando, praza á Deos que tu fores, estiveres, *when or please God thou shalt or may be hereafter.*
Quando, praza á Deos que elle for, estiver, *when or please God he shall or may be hereafter.*

Plur.
Quando, praza á Deos que nôs formos, estivermos, *when or please God we shall or may be hereafter.*
Quando, praza á Deos que vôs fordes, estiverdes, *when or please God ye shall or may be hereafter.*
Quando, praza á Deos que elles forem, estiverem, *when or please God they shall or may be hereafter.*

Second Future Tense.

Sing.
Quando eu tivér sido, ou estado, *when I shall have been.*
Quando tu tivéres sido, ou estado, *when thou shalt have been.*
Quando elle tivér sido, ou estado, *when he shall have been.*

Plur.

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos sido, ou estado, *when we shall have been.*
Quando vôs tiverdes sido, ou estado, *when ye shall have been.*
Quando elles tivérem sido, ou estado, *when they shall have been.*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Ser, estár, *to be.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Aver sido, estado, *to have been.*

Future.

Aver de ser, estar, *to be hereafter.*

Gerund.

Sendo, estando, *in having*; de ser, estâr, *of having.*

Supine.

á ser, estar, & pera ser, estar, *to be.*

Participle Present.

Em ser, estar, *being*; o que he, está, *one (he) that is.*

Participle Perfect.

Sido, estado, *having been*; o que ha sido, estado, *he (one) that has been.*

Participle Future.

o que ha, ou espera de sér, ou estar, *he (one) that is or hopes to be.*

Obser-

Obſervations on the Verb *Sou*, I am.

The Verb *Sou*, I am, is exactly expreſs'd and pronounced in the Preterperfect Tenſe, like the Verb *vou*, I go, by the Word *eu fuy* in both, for I have been and I went; only with this Diſtinction, that the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Verb *vou*, I go, is always followed by a Subſtantive of Place and Motion: As for Example, *fuy a Roma*, I went to Rome; *fuy a Londres*, I went to London; and ſometimes with an Adjective adjoined; as *fuy a famoſa Roma*, I went to famous Rome. Sometimes follows a Verb of the Infinitive Mood; as *fuy ver*, *fuy ler*, I went to ſee, I went to read; but the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Verb *Sou* hath always a Subſtantive or Adjective following it, and ſignifies no Motion; *e. g. fuy bom eſtudiante*, I have been a good Student; *Liſboa foy fondada por Uliſſes*, Liſbon was founded by Ulyſſes, *&c.* See the Verb *vou*, I go.

Beſides theſe Equivocations, there are alſo many others of the like Nature, *v. g.* the third Perſon of the Preſent Tenſe of the Indicative Mood of the Verb *ſou*, *ſam*, they are, is written and pronounc'd as the Word *ſam*, well or ſound; *era*, I or he was, and *era*, an Ivy-tree; *eras*, thou waſt, and *eras*, Ivy-trees; *ou fora*, I might be, and *fora*, without; *fóram*, they might have been, and *forám*, a Ferret, diſtinguiſh'd only by the Accent; *ſeram*, they ſhall be, and *ſeram*, the Beginning of the Night; *ſe tu*, be thou, and *ſe*, himſelf; *ſede vos*, be ye, and *ſede*, Thirſt; *tu eſtás*, thou art, and *éſtas*, theſe; *eſtá*, he is, and *ésta*, this; which Words are to be diſtinguiſh'd by the Accent, or Connexion of the Diſcourſe.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the Regular Verbs, and their three Conjugations.

The First Conjugation in *ar*.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing. Eu ámo, *I love.*
Tu ámas, *thou loveſt.*
Elle áma, *he loveth.*

Plur. Nôs amámos, *we love.*
Vôs ámays, *ye love.*
Elles ámam, *they love.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu amáva, *I loved or did love.*
Tu amávas, *thou lovedſt or didſt love.*
Elle amáva, *he loved or did love.*

Plur. Nôs amávamos, *we loved or did love.*
Vôs amáys, *ye loved or did love.*
Elles amávam, *they loved or did love.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu amêy, *I have loved.*
Tu amáſte, *thou haſt loved.*
Elle amóu, *he hath loved.*

Plur. Nôs amêmos, *we have loved.*
Vôs amáſtes, *ye have loved.*
Elles amaram, *they have loved.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu tenho amado, *I have loved.*
Tu tens amado, *thou haſt loved.*
Elle tem amado, *he has loved.*

Plur.

Plur.
Nôs temos ámado, *we have loved.*
Vôs tendes amado, *ye have loved.*
Elles tem amado, *they have loved.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu * tínha amado, *I had loved.*
Tu tínhas amado, *thou hadst loved.*
Elle tínha amado, *he had loved.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos amado, *we had loved.*
Vôs tínheys amado, *ye had loved.*
Elles tínham amado, *they had loved.*

Future Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu amarey, *I shall or will love.*
Tu amarás, *thou shalt or wilt love.*
Elle amará, *he shall or will love.*

Plur.
Nôs amarémos, *we shall or will love.*
Vôs amaréys, *ye shall or will love.*
Elles amarám, *they shall or will love.*

Future Perfect Tense.

Sing.
Ja entam eu teréy amado, *I shall then have loved.*
Ja entam tu terás amado, *thou shalt then have loved.*
Ja entam elle terá amado, *he shall then have loved.*

Plur.
Ja entam nôs terémos amado, *we shall then have loved.*
Ja entam vôs teréys amado, *ye shall then have loved.*
Ja entam elles téram amado, *they shall then have loved.*

* Some use *amara, amaras, amara,* &c. for the Preterpluperfect, which by the best Criticks is judged an Impropriety, it being the Imperfect of the Optative Mood.

Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

Sing. *Has no first Person.*
Ama tu, *love thou.*
Ame elle, *let him love.*

Plur. Amémos nôs, *let us love.*
Amáy vôs, *love ye.*
Amem elles, *let them love.*

Second Tense.

Sing. *Has no first Person.*
Amarás tú, *thou shalt love.*
Amara elle, *he shall love.*

Plur. Amarémos, nôs, *we shall love.*
Amaréys vôs, *ye shall love.*
Amaràm elles, *they shall love.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing. Oxala áme eu, *I wish I may love.*
Oxala ámes tu, *I wish thou mayst love.*
Oxala áme elle, *I wish he may love.*

Plur. Oxala amémos nôs, *I wish we may love.*
Oxala ámeys vôs, *I wish ye may love.*
Oxala ámem elles, *I wish they may love.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. Oxala amára, ou amáſſe eu, *would I might or could love.*
Oxala amáras, ou amáſſes tu, *would thou mightest or couldst love.*
Oxala amára, ou amáſſe elle, *would he might or could love.*

Plur.
- Oxala amáramos, ou amáſſemos nôs, *would we might or cou'd love.*
- Oxala amareys, ou amáſſeys vôs, *would ye might or cou'd love.*
- Oxala amáram, ou amáſſem elles, *would they might or cou'd love.*

Uncertain Tenſe.

Sing.
- Eu amaria, *I might love.*
- Tu amarias, *thou mightſt love.*
- Elle amaria, *he might love.*

Plur.
- Nôs amaríamos, *we might love.*
- Vôs amaríeys, *ye might love.*
- Elles amaríam, *they might love.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Queyra Deos que ténha eu amádo, *God grant that I may have loved.*
- Queyra Deos que ténhas tu amado, *God grant that thou mayſt have loved.*
- Queyra Deos que ténha elle amádo, *God grant that he may have loved.*

Plur.
- Queyra Deos que ténhamos nôs amádo, *God grant that we may have loved.*
- Queyra Deos que ténhays vôs amádo, *God grant that ye may have loved.*
- Queyra Deos que ténham elles amádo, *God grant that they may have loved.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Prouvéyra Deos que tivera ou tiveſſe eu amado, *would to God that I had loved.*
- Provéyra Deos que tiveras ou tiveſſes tu amado, *would to God that thou hadſt loved.*
- Prouvéyra Deos que tivera ou tiveſſe elle amado, *would to God he had loved.*

Plur.
- Prouvéyra Deos que tivéramos ou tivessemos nôs amado, *would to God that we had loved.*
- Prouvéyra Deos que tivéreys ou tivésseys vôs amado, *would to God that ye had loved.*
- Prouvéyra Deos que tivéram ou tivessem elles amado, *would to God that they had loved.*

First Future.

Sing.
- Quando eu amar, *when I shall or will love.*
- Quando tu amares, *when thou shalt or wilt love.*
- Quando elle amar, *when he shall or will love.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs amármos, *when we shall or will love.*
- Quando vôs amardes, *when ye shall or will love.*
- Quándo ellesamárem, *when they shall or will love.*

Second Future.

Sing.
- Quando eu tiver amado, *when I shall or will have loved.*
- Quando tu tivéres amado, *when thou shalt or wilt have loved.*
- Quando elle tivér amado, *when he shall or will have loved.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs tivérmos amado, *when we shall or will have loved.*
- Quando vôs tivérdes amado, *when ye shall or will have loved.*
- Quando elles tivérem amado, *when they shall or will have loved.*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Amár, *to love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Tér amado, *to have loved.*

Future

Future Tense.

Tér de amar, ou esperár de amar *(to have to love, to hope to love) to love hereafter.*

Gerund.

Amando, *in loving*; *and* de amar, *of loving.*

Supine.

á amar, ou pera amar, *to love.*

Participle Present.

Amante, *loving*; o que ama, *he (or one) that loves.*

Participle Perfect.

Amado, *having lov'd*; o que ha amado, *he (or one) that has lov'd.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de amar, ou espéra de amár, *he (or one) that is to love, or hopes to love.*

The First Conjugation in the Passive Voice.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
Eu sou amádo, *I am lov'd.*
Tu es amádo, *thou art lov'd.*
Elle he amádo, *he is lov'd.*

Plur.
Nôs sómos amádos, *we are lov'd.*
Vôs soys amádos, *ye are lov'd.*
Elles sam amádos, *they are lov'd.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu éra amádo, *I was loved.*
Tu éras amádo, *thou wert loved.*
Elle éra amado, *he was loved.*

Plur. { Nôs éramos amádos, *we were loved.*
Vôs éreys amádos, *ye were loved.*
Elles éram amádos, *they were loved.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu fúy amádo, *I have been loved.*
Tu foste amádo, *thou hast been loved.*
Elle fóy amádo, *he has been loved.*

Plur. { Nôs fómos amádos, *we have been loved.*
Vôs fóstes amádos, *ye have been loved.*
Elles fóram amádos, *they have been loved.*

These three Tenses may suffice to shew how the Verb Passive is conjugated, which consists in this, that you conjugate the Verb Substantive *Sóu* thro' all the Moods and Tenses, adding the Participle of the Perfect Tense of the Verb to it; as *amado*, *lido*, *ouvido*, which in the Plural Number are put in *os*, or in *as* if of the Feminine Gender; thus you say, *os homens sam amados*, the Men are beloved; *as mulheres sam amadas*, the Women are beloved.

Note, If you speak but to one Person, you put the Verb *sou* in Plural, but the Participle in Singular; as *digo a Vossé que soys amado*, *amada*, *lido*, *lida*, & *ouvido*, *ouvida*, I tell you, Sir, or Madam, that you are beloved, read, and heard; for the Plural, or when you speak to more than one Person, you say, *e. g. digo a Vossés que soys amados*, *amadas*, *lidos*, *lidas*, & *ouvidos*, *ouvidas*, I tell you (to Men or Women) that you are beloved, read, and heard.

Example

Example of the Second Conjugation in *er*.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing. Eu léyo, *I read.*
Tu lés, *thou readest.*
Elle lé, *he reads.*
Plur. Nôs lémos, *we read.*
Vôs lédes, *ye read.*
Elles lém, *they read.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu lía, *I read or did read.*
Tu lías, *thou readest or didst read.*
Elle lía, *he read or did read.*
Plur. Nôs líamos, *we read or did read.*
Vôs líeys, *ye read or did read.*
Elles líam, *they read or did read.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu lí, *I read.*
Tu leste, *thou readest.*
Elle léo, *he read.*
Plur. Nôs lemos, *we read.*
Vôs lestes, *ye read.*
Elles léram, *they read.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu ténho lido, *I have read.*
Tu tens lido, *thou hast read.*
Elle tem lido, *he has read.*
Plur. Nôs témos lido, *we have read.*
Vôs téndes lido, *ye have read.*
Elles tem lido, *they have read.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu * tínha lido, *I had read.*
Tu tínhas lido, *thou hadst read.*
Elle tínha lido, *he had read.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos lido, *we had read.*
Vôs tínheys lido, *ye had read.*
Elles tínham lido, *they had read.*

Future Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu leréy, *I shall or will read.*
Tu lerás, *thou shalt or wilt read.*
Elle léra, *he shall or will read.*

Plur.
Nôs lerémos, *we shall or will read.*
Vós leréys, *ye shall or will read.*
Elles lerám, *they shall or will read.*

Future Perfect Tense.

Sing.
Ja entám eu teréy lido, *I then shall have read.*
Ja entám tu téras lido, *thou then shalt have read.*
Ja entám elle terá lido, *he then shall have read.*

Plur.
Ja entám nôs terémos lido, *we then shall have read.*
Ja entám vôs teréys lido, *ye then shall have read.*
Ja entám elles terám lido, *they then shall have read.*

Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

Sing.
Has no first Person.
Lé tu, *read thou.*
Léya ellé, *let him read, read he.*

Plur.
Leyámos nôs, *let us read.*
Lede vôs, *read ye.*
Léyam elles, *let them read.*

* Some express the Preterpluperfect by *lera, leras, lera,* &c. tho' improperly, it being the Imperfect of the Optative Mood.

Second

Second Tense.

Sing. { *Has no first Person.*
Lerás tu, *thou shalt read.*
Lerá elle, *he shall read.*

Plur. { Lerémos nôs, *we shall read.*
Leréys vôs, *ye shall read.*
Lerám elles, *they shall read.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing. { Oxala léya eu, *would to God I may read.*
Oxala léyas tu, *would to God thou mayst read.*
Oxala léya elle, *would to God he may read.*

Plur. { Oxala léyamos nós, *would to God we may read.*
Oxala léyas vôs, *would to God ye may read.*
Oxala léyam elles, *would to God they may read.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. { Oxala lera, ou lesse eu, *would I might or could read.*
Oxala leras tu, ou lesses tu, *would thou mightst or couldst read.*
Oxala lera elle, ou lesse elle, *would he might or could read.*

Plur. { Oxala léramos nôs, ou léssemos nós, *would we might or could read.*
Oxala léreys vôs, ou léssey vôs, *would ye might or could read.*
Oxala léram elles, ou léssem elles, *would they might or could read.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. { Quéyra Deos que tenha eu lido, *God grant that I have or may have read.*
Quéyra Deos que tenhas tu lido, *God grant that thou hast or mayst have read.*
Quéyra Deos que tenha elle lido, *God grant that he hath or may have read.*

Plur.

Plur.
- Quéyra Deos que ténhamos nôs lido, *God grant that we have or may have read.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténhays vôs lido, *God grant that ye have or may have read.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténham elles lido, *God grant that they have or may have read.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Prouvéra á Déos que tivéra ou tivésse eu lído, *would to God I had read.*
- Prouvéra á Deos que tivéras ou tivésses tu lído, *would to God thou hadst read.*
- Prouvéra á Déos que tivéra ou tivésse elle lído, *would to God he had read.*

Plur.
- Prouvéra á Déos que tivéramos ou tívessemos nôs lído, *would to God we had read.*
- Prouvéra á Deos que tivéreys ou tivésseys vôs lído, *would to God ye had read.*
- Prouvéra á Deos que tivéram ou tivéssem elles lído, *would to God they had read.*

First Future Tense.

Sing.
- Quando eu ler, *when I shall read.*
- Quando tu léres, *when thou shalt read.*
- Quando elle ler, *when he shall read.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs lérmos, *when we shall read.*
- Quando vôs lérdes, *when ye shall read.*
- Quando elles lérem, *when they shall read.*

Second Future Tense.

Sing.
- Quando eu tivér lido, *when or please God I shall have read.*
- Quando tu tivéres lido, *when or please God thou shalt have read.*
- Quando elle tivér lido, *when or please God he shall have read.*

Plur.

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos lido, *when or please God we shall have read.*
Quando vôs tevérdes lido, *when or please God ye shall have read.*
Quando elles tivérem lido, *when or please God they shall have read,*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Ler, *to read.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter lido, *to have read.*

Future.

Aver de lér, ou esperar de ler, *(to be or to have to read) to hope to read, or to read hereafter.*

Gerund.

Lendo, *in reading, and* de lér,, *of reading.*

Supine.

á ler, ou pera ler, *to read.*

Participle Present.

Lénte, *reading*; ou que lé, *he (one) that readeth.*

Participle Perfect.

Lido, *having read*; o que ha lido, *he (one) that has read.*

Participle Future.

O que ha dé lér, ou espera de lér, *he (one) that is to read or hopes to read.*

The

The Passive Voice of the Verb *ler*, to read, is also formed by conjugating the Verb *ser* to be, thro' all its *Moods* and *Tenses*, and adding the Participle *lido*, read, to it; which in the three Persons in Singular remains *lido*, and in Plural is *lidos*; as *eu sou lido*, *tu es lido*, *elle he lido*; *nós somos lidos*, *vós soys lidos*, *elles sam lidos:* Thus in Imperfect, *eu era lido*; in Perfect, *fuy lido*; Preterpluperfect, *fora lido*; and in Future, *seréy lido*; and so thro' all the Moods and Tenses, as we observ'd above of the Verb *amo*.

An Example of the Third Conjugation, in *ir*.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing. Eu ouço, *I hear.*
Tu óuves, *thou hearest.*
Elle óuve, *he heareth.*

Plur. Nôs ouvímos, *we hear.*
Vôs ouvíeys, *ye hear.*
Elles óuvem, *they hear.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu ouvía, *I heard or did hear.*
Tu ouvías, *thou heardst or didst hear.*
Elle ouvía, *he heard or did hear.*

Plur. Nôs ouvíamos, *we heard or did hear.*
Vôs ouvieys, *ye heard or did hear.*
Elles ouvíam, *they heard or did hear.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu ouví, *I have heard.*
Tu ouviste, *thou hast heard.*
Elle ouvío, *he has heard.*

Plur.

Plur. Nôs ouvímos, *we have heard.*
Vós ouvíſtes, *ye have heard.*
Elles ouvíram, *they have heard.*

Second Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing. Eu tenho ouvído, *I have heard.*
Tu tens ouvído, *thou haſt heard.*
Elle tem ouvído, *he has heard.*

Plur. Nôs temos ouvído, *we have heard.*
Vôs tendes ouvído, *ye have heard.*
Elles tem ouvído, *they have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing. Eu * tínha ouvído, *I had heard.*
Tu tínhas ouvído, *thou hadſt heard.*
Elle tínha ouvído, *he had heard.*

Plur. Nôs tínhamos ouvído, *we had heard.*
Vôs tínheys ouvído, *ye had heard.*
Elles tínham ouvído, *they had heard.*

Future Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing. Eu ouviréy, *I ſhall or will hear.*
Tu ouvirás, *thou ſhalt or wilt hear.*
Elle ouvirá, *he ſhall or will hear.*

Plur. Nôs ouvirémos, *we ſhall or will hear.*
Vôs ouvireys, *ye ſhall or will hear.*
Elles ouvirâm, *they ſhall or will hear.*

Future Perfect.

Sing. Ja entam eu térey ouvído, *I ſhall then have heard.*
Ja entam tu teras ouvído, *thou ſhalt then have heard.*
Ja entam elle terá ouvído, *he ſhall then have heard.*

* Some expreſs the Preterpluperfect by *ouvéra, ouvéras, ouvéra, &c.* the Imperfect of the Optative, which the beſt Criticks find fault with.

Plur.

Plur.
- Ja entam nôs terémos ouvído, *we shall then have heard.*
- Ja entam vôs teréys ouvído, *ye shall then have heard.*
- Ja entam elles téram ouvído, *they shall then have heard.*

Imperative Mood. *The First Tense.*

Sing.
- *Has no first Person.*
- Oúve tu, *hear thou.*
- Oúve elle, *let him hear.*

Plur.
- Ouçámos nôs, *let us hear.*
- Ouví vôs, *hear ye.*
- Oúçam elles, *let them hear.*

The Second Tense.

Sing.
- *Has no first Person.*
- Ouvíras tu, *thou shalt hear.*
- Ouvíra elle, *he shall hear.*

Plur.
- Ouvirémos nôs, *we shall hear.*
- Ouviréys vôs, *ye shall hear.*
- Ouvirám elles, *they shall hear.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
- Oxala óuça eu, *would I may hear.*
- Oxala óuças tu, *would thou mayst hear.*
- Oxala óuça elle, *would he may hear.*

Plur.
- Oxala ouçámos nôs, *would we may hear.*
- Oxala óuçays vôs, *would ye may hear.*
- Oxala óuçam elles, *would they may hear.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Oxala ouvíra ou ouvíſſe eu, *would I might or could hear.*
- Oxala ouvíras ou ouvíſſes tu, *would thou mightst or couldst hear.*
- Oxala ouvíra ou ouvîſſe elle, *would he might or could hear.*

Plur.

Plur.
Oxala ouvíramos ou ouvíssemos nôs, *would we might or could hear.*
Oxala ouvíreys ou ouvíssey vôs, *would ye might or could hear.*
Oxala ouvíram ou ouvíssem elles, *would they might or could hear.*

The Uncertain Tense.

Sing.
Eu ouvería, *I might hear.*
Tu ouverías, *thou mightst hear.*
Elle ouvería, *he might hear.*

Plur.
Nôs ouveríamos, *we might hear.*
Vôs ouveríeys, *ye might hear.*
Elles ouveríam, *they might hear.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
Quéyra Deos que ténha eu ouvido, *God grant that I have heard.*
Quéyra Deos que ténhas tu ouvido, *God grant that thou hast heard.*
Quéyra Deos que ténha elle ouvido, *God grant that he hath heard.*

Plur.
Quéyra Deos que ténhamos nôs ouvido, *God grant that we have heard.*
Quéyra Deos que ténhays vôs ouvido, *God grant that ye have heard.*
Quéyra Deos que ténham elles ouvido, *God grant that they have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
Prouvera Deos que tivera ou tivesse eu ouvido, *would to God I had heard.*
Prouvera Deos que tiveras ou tivesses tu ouvido, *would to God thou hadst heard.*
Prouvera Deos que tivera ou tivesse elle ouvido, *would to God he had heard.*

Plur.

Plur.
Prouvera Deos que tivéramos ou tivéssemos nôs ouvido, *would to God we had heard.*
Prouvera Deos que tivéreys ou tivésseys vôs ouvido, *would to God ye had heard.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéram ou tivessem elles ouvido, *would to God they had heard.*

First Future Tense.

Sing.
Quando eu ouvir, *when I shall hear.*
Quando tu ouvires, *when thou shalt hear.*
Quando elle ouvir, *when he shall hear.*

Plur.
Quando nôs ouvirmos, *when we shall hear.*
Quando vôs ouvirdes, *when ye shall hear.*
Quando elles ouvirem, *when they shall hear.*

Second Future Tense.

Sing.
Quando eu tiver ouvido, *when I shall have heard.*
Quando tu tiveres ouvido, *when thou shalt have heard.*
Quando elle tiver ouvido, *when he shall have heard.*

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos ouvido, *when we shall have heard.*
Quando vós tivérdes ouvido, *when ye shall have heard.*
Quando elles tivérem ouvido, *when they shall have heard.*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Ouvir, *to hear.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter ouvído, *to have heard.*

Future

Future Tense.

Aver de ouvír, ou esperar de ouvír, *to be to hear, to hope to hear, or to hear hereafter.*

Gerund.

Ouvindo, *in hearing.*

Supine.

á ouvír, ou pera ouvír, *to hear.*

Participle Present.

Ouvente, o que óuve, o que esta ouvindo, *he (one) that hears, or is hearing.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Ouvido, *having heard*; o que tem ouvido, *he (one) that has heard.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de ouvír, ou espéra de ouvír, *he (one) that is to hear, or hopes to hear.*

Observe,

Some pretend to enrich the *Portuguese* Verbs by Moods not common to other Languages, and therefore, besides the Indicative, Imperative, Optative, and Infinitive Moods, set down a Conjunctive Mood, a Conjunctive peculiar to the *Portuguese* Language, a Potential Mood, and a Permissive Mood. The Conjunctive Mood is nothing else but the Indicative conjugated with the Particle *como*, as, or when.

The Conjunctive peculiar to the *Portuguese* Language is the Subjunctive conjugated with the Words *posto que*, altho', or supposing that.

The Potential Mood in the Present Tense is, *que ame eu*, that I may love; the Imperfect Tense is *amaria eu*, should or could I love; the Preterperfect Tense is *pude eu amar*, I might have lov'd; the Preterpluperfect Tense is *eu pudera ter amado*, I might, could, or would have lov'd; the Future Tense *amarey*, *poderey amar*, I shall or will love, I shall or will be able to love.

The Permissive Mood in the Present Tense is *ame eu*, let me love, *dóulhe que ame*, I grant I may love; the Imperfect Tense *amara*, I did love, *dóulhe que amara*, I grant I did love; the Preterperfect Tense *amasse eu*, I have lov'd, *dóulhe*, *que amasse eu*, I grant I have loved, and *más que tenha amado*, altho' I have loved; the Preterpluperfect Tense *amara eu*, I had loved, *dóulhe que amara*, I grant I had loved; *mas que tivera amado*, altho' I or he had loved; the Future Tense *dóulhe que venha ou chegue eu a amar*, I grant that I may come to love.

It appears then that these Moods have no extraordinary Terminations belonging to them, but that they are only composed of Particles join'd to the Verb in the Mood which those Particles require, and conjugated in the common Manner. I thought it therefore needless to swell and embroil the Conjugations with those Moods, since the Learner, when he comes to be acquainted with the Conjugations, and knows what Moods the several Conjunctions govern, he not only will find the abovementioned Moods very easy to him, but also may make as many more if he pleases, giving them Names according to the Nature of the Conjunction join'd with them, which may be done in any other Language; and therefore I can't see in what Respect those Moods are peculiar only to the *Portuguese*.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Of the Terminations, Formations, and Equivocations of the three regular Conjugations.

THE first Conjugation, as was said above, is known by the Termination of the second Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, and the Present of the Infinitive; as, *amo*, *amas*, and in the Infinitive *amar*, to love; *ensino*, I teach, *ensinas*, thou teachest, *ensinar*, to teach; *lóuvo*, I praise, *louvas*, thou praisest, *louvar*, to praise.

The *first Conjugation* is so regular, that it keeps the same Characters through all its Moods and Tenses, changing only the last Letter into such Letters as the Tenses are terminated in, *e. g.*

Indic. Present.	Imperf. Tense.	Perfect Tense.
Amo,	amava,	améy,
I love.	*I did love.*	*I have lov'd.*
Chamo,	chamáva,	chaméy,
I call.	*I did call.*	*I have call'd.*

Except the Verb *dou*, I give, which in the rest of the Tenses loseth its two last Letters *ou*, *e. g.*

Dou,	Dava,	Déy,
I give.	*I did give.*	*I have given.*

As also such Verbs as end in *co.*

Fico,	Ficava,	Fiquéy,
I remain.	*I did remain.*	*I have remain'd.*
Finco,	Fincava,	Finquéy,
I fasten.	*I did fasten.*	*I have fastened.*

Obſerve here, that in Verbs of the firſt Conjugation in the Preſent Tenſe, the firſt, ſecond, and third Perſons of the ſingular Number are often written and expreſs'd with the very ſame Letters without any Difference, and their Signification is only to be gueſs'd at by the Connexion of the Matter diſcourſed of.

Verbs of the firſt Conjugation equivocate three Ways with Nouns expreſſed in the ſame Form.

Firſt, when the Verb and Noun are expreſſed with the ſame Letters in the Indicative Preſent and the firſt Perſon, as for Example.

Agóuro, *I divine*,	and Agóuro, *Divination.*
Abraço, *I embrace*,	and Abraço, *an Embrace.*
Canto, *I ſing*,	and Canto, *a Song.*
Chóro, *I cry*,	and Chôro, *a Crying.*
Deſprezo, *I deſpiſe*,	and Deſprezo, *a Contempt.*
Dezejo, *I deſire*,	and Dezejo, *a Deſire.*
Enſino, *I teach*,	and Enſino, *a Teaching.*
Furto, *I ſteal*,	and Furto, *a Stealth.*
Livro, *I free*,	and Livro, *a Book.*
Rogo, *I deſire*,	and Rogo, *a Deſire.*
Soluço, *I ſob or ſigh*,	and Soluço, *a Sigh*, &c.

Secondly, Verbs equivalent to, and writ the ſame with Nouns Subſtantive, are very numerous in the ſecond Perſon of the Indicative Preſent; as,

Brigas, *thou fighteſt.*	and Brigas, *Fights and Quarrels.*
Buſcas, *thou ſeekeſt.*	and Buſcas, *Seekings or Searches.*
Culpas, *thou blameſt.*	and Culpas, *Faults*, &c.

Thirdly, alſo of the third Perſon; as,

Briga, *he fighteth*,	and Briga, *a Fight.*
Buſca, *he ſearcheth*,	and Buſca, *a Search.*
Culpa, *he blameth.*	and Culpa, *a Fault*, &c.

There

There are also Verbs of the first Conjugation, which, in the Indicative Present equivocate with Nouns in all three Persons of the Singular, and the third Person Plural, *v. g. amo*, I love, and a Master of a House or Family; *amas*, thou loveſt, the Miſtreſſes (of a Houſe) or Nurſes of Children; *ama*, he loveth, Miſtreſs or Nurſe; *barro*, *barras*, *barra*; *ameaço*, *ameaças*, *ameaça*, &c. So in the third Perſon Plural, *arépellam*, they pull out the Hairs, *arepéllam*, a Pulling out or Cutting off the Hair; and ſo in many other Verbs which Uſe muſt teach you, and I here omit to avoid Tedioufneſs.

The *ſecond Conjugation* is of Verbs that in the ſecond Perſon of the Indicative Preſent end in *es*, and in the Infinitive in *er*, as,

Leyo, *I read.*	les, *thou readeſt.*	lér, *to read.*
Conheço, *I know.*	conhéces, *thou koweſt.*	conhecér, *to know.*
Eſcrevo, *I write.*	eſcréves, *thou writeſt.*	eſcrever, *to write.*

Take Notice, that as there is very little Variety or Difference in the Terminations of Verbs of the firſt Conjugation thro' all its Moods and Tenſes, ſo the ſaid Difference is very conſiderable in the ſecond and third Conjugations, their Verbs not keeping the ſame Letters as in the firſt, but either altogether loſing or changing them. For Example, in the ſecond Conjugation they do not only loſe the laſt Letter *o* of the Preſent Indicative in the other Tenſes, but alſo in the Imperfect and Preterperfect change the Syllable *éy* into *i*, *viz.*

Léyo, *I read.*	lía, *I did read.*	lí, *I have read.*
Créyo, *I believe.*	cría, *I did believe.*	crí, *I have believed.*

The Verb *vejo*, I see, loses the Letter *j* in most Tenses; as *via*, I did see; *vî* and *vîra*, I have and had seen; except the Present of the Optative; as *oxala véja eu*, God grant that I may see; in the third Persons Singular and Plural of the Present Imperative, as *veja elle*, let him see, and *véjam elles*, let them see, and in the Present of the Conjunctive.

Some Verbs that have *c* before *o* in the Present Indicative, change it in the other Tenses in *d*; as *perco*, I lose; *perdía*, I did lose; *perdi*, I have lost; *perdêra*, or *tinha perdido*, I had lost.

The third Conjugation is of Verbs that terminate the second Person Indicative Present in *es*, but the Infinitives end in *ir*, *v. g. ouço*, I hear, *óuves*, thou heareſt, *ouvîr*, to hear; *finjo*, I feign, *finges*, thou feigneſt, *fingir*, to feign; *abro*, I open, *abres*, thou openeſt, *abrir*, to open.

In the Verbs of the *third Conjugation* there is to be obſerved a ſtrange Mutation, even in the Preſent Indicative; as in the Verb *ouço*, *óuves*, *óuve*, *ouvîmos*, *ouvîys*, *óuvem*. The Verb *ouço* changes its *ç* into a *v* in all the Tenses except those mention'd above in *vejo*.

The Verb *meço*, I measure, changes its *ç* into *d* in the reſt of the Tenses; as *meço*, *medes*; in Imperfect *medía*; in Perfect *medî*. So *peço*, I desire, pray, or beg; *pedes*, *pede*, and *pedía*, I did desire; *pedî*, I have desired.

Verbs that have a *j* before *o* in the Present Indicative, change the *j* into *g* in the other Tenses; as *finjo*, I feign; *finges*, *finge*; *fingía*, I did feign; *fingi*, I have feigned; *afflijo*, I afflict; *affliges*, *afflige*; *affligía*, I did afflict; *affligî*, I have afflicted, *&c.* So in the Verb *dirijo*, I direct; *frijo*, I fry; *tinjo*, I dye; *cinjo*, I gird, *&c.*

There

There are other Verbs that do not only lose the last, or change the last Vowel, but also the last but one, or the Penultima, and that in two Kinds. The first change *i* in the Penultima into *e* in the rest of the Persons and Tenses, *v. g. firo*, I strike, *feres*, *fere*, *feria*, I did strike; *ferí*, I have struck; *sigo*, I follow, *segues*, *segue*; *seguía*, I did follow; *seguí*, I have followed; *minto*, I lye, *mentes*, *mentia*, I did lye; *mentí*, I have lyed. Thus *frijo*, *freges*; *cirno*, *cernes*; *sinto*, *sentes*; *persigo*, *persegues*; *sirvo*, *serves*, and the like; but they keep the Letter *i* in the third Persons Singular and Plural Present of the Imperative; as *siga elle*, *sigam elles*, let him follow, let them follow; and in the Present Optative in all the Persons; as *oxala siga eu*, *sigas*, *siga*, &c. Also in the first Persons of the Conjunctive; as *como eu sigo*, when I follow.

The second Kind are such Verbs as have an *u* in the Penultima, and in all the other Tenses and Persons change it into *o*; *v. g. bulo*, I meddle with; *boles*, *bole*; *bolía*, I did meddle with; *bolir*, to meddle with; *durmo*, I sleep, *dormes*, *dorme*; *dormía*, *dormir*; *engulo*, I swallow, *engoles*, *engole*; *engolía*, *engolir*; *sumo*, I sum, *somes*, *some*; *somía*, *somir*; *cubro*, I cover, *cobres*, *cobre*; *cobría*, *cobrir*; *subo*, I come or go up, *sobes*, *sobe*; *sobía*, *sobir*; *tusso*, I cough, *tosses*, *tosse*, *tossia*, *tossir*. And thus they are easily distinguish'd from such as never lose the Vowel *u*, nor change it into *o*; as *concluo*, *conclues*, *concluir*; *grunho*, *grunhes*, *grunhir*; *zuno*, *zunes*, *zunir*. But those Verbs that change *u* into *o*, do not admit of any Change in the third Person Singular and Plural of the Present Imperative; as *bula ou suba elle*, *bulam ou subam elles*, let him or them meddle or come up: So in all Persons of the Present Optative, as *oxala bula*, *suba eu*, *bulas*, *subas tu*, God grant

that I or thou may or mayſtmeddle or come up, *&c.* Alſo in the firſt Perſons of the Conjunctive, as *como ſubo*, when I go up.

The Participle of the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Verb Paſſive of the ſecond and third Conjugation, are alſo ſubject to ſome Variation; for altho' they commonly end in *ido*, as *lido*, *ido*, *vencido*, *corrido*, yet ſeveral end in *to*, as *féyto*, made or done, from the Verb *faço*, I make or do; *viſto*, ſeen, from *vejo*, I ſee; *roto*, torn, from *rompo*; *bento*, bleſſed, from *benzo*, I bleſs; *pòſto*, put, from *ponho*; *cheyo*, full, from *encho*; *eléito*, choſen, from *elejo*; *dito*, ſaid, from *digo*; *abſolto*, abſolved, from *abſolvo*; *reſoluto*, reſolv'd, from *reſolvo*; *eſcrito*, written, from *eſcrevo*. All theſe are of the *ſecond Conjugation*. Of the *third Conjugation* are the following; as *frîto*, fryed, from *frigir*; *ſurto*, riſen, from *ſurgir*; *aberto*, open'd, from *abrir*; *cuberto*, cover'd, from *cobrir*; *corréito*, corrected, from *corrigir*. The Verb *venho* and its Compounds end their Participle in *indo*; as *vindo*, come.

But it is remarkable that but few Verbs of the ſecond and third Conjugation equivocate with Nouns; of the ſecond Conjugation are *corro*, I run; *como*, I eat; *ſorvo*, I ſwallow; and *corro*, a Running, *como*, as if, *ſorvo*, a Soop: And of the third *ſayo*, I go out; *rio*, I laugh; and *ſaya*, a Petticoat, and *rio*, a River, which, tho' they equivocate in the firſt Perſon of the Indicative Mood Preſent, and Singular Number, with Nouns ſo expreſs'd, they are altogether different in other Perſons.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

Of the Irregular Verbs, and their Formation.

IT has been already obſerv'd, that few or no Verbs of the firſt Conjugation are reputed irregular; but of the ſecond and third there are found ſeveral. Of the *ſecond* the Verb *ſou*, *ſer*, is accounted one, the ſecond Preſent Perſon Indicative ending in *es*. So likewiſe are the Verbs *ey* and *tenho*, with all its Compounds; as *atenho*, *contenho*, *detenho*, *mantenho*, *retenho*, *ſoſtenho*, and the following Verbs.

Ind.Pr.	*Imperf.*	*Perf.*	*Infin.*	
Sey,	ſabia,	ſoube,	ſaber,	*to know.*
Poſſo,	podia,	pude,	poder,	*to be able.*
Quero,	queria,	quiz,	querer,	*to deſire, will or love.*
Faço,	fazia,	fiz,	fazer,	*to do, make.*
Digo,	dizia,	dice,	dizer,	*to ſay.*
Trago,	trazia,	trouxe,	trazer,	*to bring.*

Likewiſe the Defective Verb

	Preterp.	*Infin.*
Agradame, *it pleaſeth me*,	agradoume,	agradecer, agradate, agradalhe.

As alſo the Defective Verb

Soes, ſoe, & ſoem, ſoía, ſoias, ſoia, *as* ſoe fazer, *he is acccuſtom'd to do.*

Irregular Verbs belonging to the *third Conjugation.*

Ind.Preſ.	*Imperf.*	*Perf.*	*Infin.*	
Cayo,	cahia,	cahi,	cahir,	*to fall.*
Sayo,	ſahia,	ſahi,	ſahir,	*to go out.*
Poſſuo,	poſſuya,	peſſuy,	poſſuir,	*to poſſeſs.*
Venho,	vinha,	vim,	vir,	*to come.*

As

As also its Compounds, *Avenho*, *antevenho*, *convenho*, *intervenho*, and the Impersonal *convém*, it behoveth; Preterperfect *convéyo*; Infinitive *convir*; it wants a Participle Perfect.

Hitherto is also referr'd the Verb *vóu*, which, as it is a very common Word, and one of the most irregular, we will conjugate it here at large.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
Eu vou, *I go.*
Tu vas, *thou goest.*
Elle vay, *he goeth.*

Plur.
Nôs vamos, *we go.*
Vôs vays, *ye go.*
Elles vam, *they go.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu hia, *I went or did go.*
Tu hias, *thou wentst or didst go.*
Elle hia, *he went or did go.*

Plur.
Nôs híamos, *we went or did go.*
Vôs híeys, *ye went or did go.*
Elles híam, *they went or did go.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu fuy, *I have gone or have been.*
Tu foste, *thou hast gone or hast been.*
Elle foy, *he has gone or hath been.*

Plur.
Nôs fomos, *we have gone or have been.*
Vôs fostes, *ye have gone or have been.*
Elles foram, *they have gone or have been.*

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.
Eu tenho ido, *I have gone or have been.*
Tu tens ido, *thou hast gone or hast been.*
Elle tem ido, *he hath gone or hath been.*

Plur.
Nôs temos ido, *we have gone or have been.*
Vôs tendes ido, *ye have gone or have been.*
Elles tem ido, *they have gone or have been.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu * tinha ido, *I had gone or had been.*
Tu tinhas ido, *thou hadst gone or hadst been.*
Elle tinha ido, *he had gone or had been.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos ido, *we had gone or had been.*
Vôs tínhes ido, *ye had gone or had been.*
Elles tínham ido, *they had gone or had been.*

First Future Tense.

Sing.
Eu irey, *I shall or will go.*
Tu iras, *thou shalt or wilt go.*
Elle irá, *he shall or will go.*

Plur.
Nôs irémos, *we shall or will go.*
Vôs iréys, *ye shall or will go.*
Elles iram, *they shall or will go.*

Second Future Tense.

Sing.
Ja entam eu teréy ido, *I shall then have gone or been.*
Ja entam tu terás ido, *thou shalt then have gone or been.*
Ja entam elle terá ido, *we shall then have gone or been.*

Plur.
Ja entam nôs terémos ido, *we shall then have gone or been.*
Ja entam vôs teréys ido, *ye shall then have gone or been.*
Ja entam elles terám ido, *they shall then have gone or been.*

* Some conjugate the Pluperfect *fora, foras, fora, foramos, fôreys, foram.*

Imperative

Imperative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
Has no first Person.
Va tu, *go thou.*
Va elle, *let him go.*

Plur.
Vamos nôs, *let us go.*
íde vôs, *go ye.*
Váyam elles, *let them go.*

Future Tense.

Sing.
Has no first Person.
Irás tu, *thou shalt go.*
Irá elle, *he shall go.*

Plur.
Irémos nôs, *we shall go.*
Iréys vôs, *ye shall go.*
Irám elles, *they shall go.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
Oxala vaya eu, *would to God I may go.*
Oxala vayas tu, *would to God thou mayst go.*
Oxala vaya elle, *would to God he may go.*

Plur.
Oxala vayámos nôs, *would to God we may go.*
Oxala váyais vôs, *would to God ye may go.*
Oxala váyam elles, *would to God they may go.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Oxala fora & fosse eu, *would I might go.*
Oxala foras & fosses tu, *would thou wightst go.*
Oxala fora & fosse elle, *would he might go.*

Plur.
Oxala fóramos & fóssemos nôs, *would we might go.*
Oxala fóreys & fósseys vôs, *would ye might go.*
Oxala fóram & fóssem elles, *would they might go.*

The

The Uncertain Tense.

Sing.
Eu iria, *I might or would go.*
Tu irias, *thou mightst or wouldst go.*
Elle iria, *he might or would go.*

Plur.
Nôs iríamos, *we might or would go.*
Vôs iríeys, *ye might or would go.*
Elles iríam, *they might or would go.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
Quéyra Deos que eu tenha ído, *God grant that I may have gone or been.*
Quéyra Deos que tu tenhas ído, *God grant that thou mayst have gone or been.*
Quéyra Deos que elle tenha ído, *God grant that he may have gone or been.*

Plur.
Quéyra Deos que nôs ténhamos ído, *God grant that we may have gone or been.*
Quéyra Deos que vôs ténhays ído, *God grant that ye may have gone or been.*
Quéyra Deos que elles ténham ído, *God grant that they may have gone or been.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
Provéra Deos que eu tivéra, ou tivesse ído, *would to God I had gone or been.*
Provéra Deos que tu tivéras, ou tivesses ído, *would to God that thou hadst gone or been.*
Provéra Deos que elle tivéra, ou tivesse ído, *would to God that he had gone or been.*

Plur.
Provéra Deos que nôs tivéramos, ou tivessemos ído, *would to God that we had gone or been.*
Provéra Deos que vôs tivéreys, ou tivésseys ído, *would to God that ye had gone or been.*
Provéra Deos que elles tivéram, ou tivessem ído, *would to God that they had gone or been.*

First

First Future Tense.

Sing.
Quando ou como eu for, *when or as I shall have gone or been.*
Quando ou como tu fóres, *when or as thou shalt have gone or been.*
Quando ou como elle for, *when or as he shall have gone or been.*

Plur.
Quando ou como nôs formos, *when or as we shall have gone or been.*
Quando ou como vôs fordes, *when or as ye shall have gone or been.*
Quando ou como elles forem, *when or as they shall have gone or been.*

Second Future Tense.

Sing.
Como ou quando eu tiver ído, *when or as I shall go or shall have gone or been.*
Como ou quando tu tivéres ído, *when or as thou shalt go or shalt have gone or been.*
Como ou quando elle tiver ído, *when or as he shall go or shall have gone or been.*

Plur.
Como ou quando nôs tivérmos ído, *when or as we shall go or shall have gone or been.*
Como ou quando vôs tiverdes ído, *when or as ye shall go or shall have gone or been.*
Como ou quando elles tivérem ído, *when or as they shall go or shall have gone or been.*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Ir, *to go.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Tér ído, *to have gone.*

Future

Future Tense.

Tér de ir, *to go hereafter (to have, or to be to go.)*

Gerund.

hindo, *going.*

Participle Present.

o que va, *he (or one) that goes.*

Participle Preterperfect.

ido, *gone.*

Participle Future.

O que tem de ir, *he (or one) that is to go.*

We said above that there are but three Conjugations and Terminations of Verbs, in *ar*, *er*, and *ir*, which Rule is so far general, that it has but one Exception, to wit, the Verb *ponho*, in the Infinitive *pór*, with its fourteen Compounds, *anteponho*, *postponho*, *deponho*, *componho*, *disponho*, *exponho*, *imponho*, *interponho*, *opponho*, *preponho*, *reponho*, *supponho*, *tresponho*; but as it is not worth while to make a fourth Conjugation for the sake of one Verb, we let it pass among the Irregulars, and because it is very frequently used, we here conjugate it at Length.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.
Eu ponho, *I put.*
Tu poens, *thou putteſt.*
Elle poem, *he puts.*

Plur.
Nôs pónhamos, *we put.*
Vôs pônheys, *ye put.*
Elles poem, *they put.*

Imperfect

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu punha, *I did put.*
Tu punhas, *thou didst put.*
Elle punha, *he did put.*

Plur. Nôs púnhamos, *we did put.*
Vôs púnheys, *ye did put.*
Elles púnham, *they did put.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu puz, *I put.*
Tu puzéste, *thou putteſt.*
Elle poz, *he put.*

Plur. Nôs puzémos, *we put.*
Vôs puzéstes, *ye put.*
Elles puzéram, *they put.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu tenho posto, *I have put.*
Tu tens posto, *thou haſt put.*
Elle tem posto, *he hath put.*

Plur. Nôs temos posto, *we have put.*
Vôs tendes posto, *ye have put.*
Elles tem posto, *they have put.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing. Eu * tinha posto, *I had put.*
Tu tinhas posto, *thou hadst put.*
Elle tinha posto, *he had put.*

Plur. Nôs tínhamos posto, *we had put.*
Vôs tínheys posto, *ye had put.*
Elles tinham posto, *they had put.*

First Future.

Sing. Eu póréy, *I ſhall or will put.*
Tu porás, *thou ſhalt or wilt put.*
Elle porá, *he ſhall or will put.*

* Some conjugate the Preterpluperfect *puzéra, puzéras, puzêra, puzéramos, puzéreys, puzéram.*

Plur.

Plur. Nôs porémos, *we shall or will put.*
Vôs poréys, *ye shall or will put.*
Elles porám, *they shall or will put.*

Second Future.

Sing. Eu terey posto, *I shall have put.*
Tu teras posto, *thou shalt have put.*
Elle terá posto, *he shall have put.*

Plur. Nôs terémos posto, *we shall have put.*
Vôs teréys posto, *ye shall have put.*
Elles terám posto, *they shall have put.*

Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

Sing. *Has no first Person.*
Póem tu, *put thou.*
Pónha elle, *let him put.*

Plur. Ponhámos nôs, *let us put.*
Ponháys vôs, *put ye.*
Pónham elles, *let them put.*

Second Tense.

Sing. *Has no first Person.*
Porás tu, *thou shalt put.*
Porá elle, *he shall put.*

Plur. Poremos nôs, *we shall put.*
Poreys vôs, *ye shall put.*
Poram elles, *they shall put.*

Optative *and* Subjunctive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing. Oxala ponha eu, *would to God that I may put.*
Oxala ponhas tu, *would to God that thou mayst put.*
Oxala ponha elle, *would to God that he may put.*

Plur.
- Oxala ponhámos nôs, *would to God that we may put.*
- Oxala pónhays vôs, *would to God that ye may put.*
- Oxala ponham elles, *would to God that they may put.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Oxala puzéra ou puzesse eu, *would to God I did put.*
- Oxala puzéras ou puzesses tu, *would to God thou didst put.*
- Oxala puzéra ou puzesse elle, *would to God he did put.*

Plur.
- Oxala puzéramos ou puzéssemos nôs, *would to God we did put.*
- Oxala puzéreis ou puzésseis vôs, *would to God ye did put.*
- Oxala puzeram ou puzessem elles, *would to God they did put.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Quéyra Deos que tenha eu posto, *God grant I have or may have put.*
- Quéyra Deos que tenhas tu posto, *God grant thou hast or mayst have put.*
- Quéyra Deos que tenha elle posto, *God grant he has or may have put.*

Plur.
- Quéyra Deos que ténhamos nôs posto, *God grant we have or may have put.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténhays vôs posto, *God grant ye have or may have put.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténham elles posto, *God grant they have or may have put.*

Preterpluperfect

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.
- Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivesse eu posto, *would to God I had put.*
- Prouvéra Deos que tiveras ou tivesses tu posto, *would to God thou hadst put.*
- Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivesse elle posto, *would to God he had put.*

Plur.
- Prouvéra Deos que tivéramos ou tivessemos nôs posto, *would to God we had put.*
- Prouvéra Deos que tivéreys ou tivésseis vôs posto, *would to God ye had put.*
- Prouvéra Deos que tivéram ou tivéssem elles posto, *would to God they had put.*

First Future Tense.

Sing.
- Quando eu puzer, *when I shall put.*
- Quando tu puzeres, *when thou shalt put.*
- Quando elle puzer, *when he shall put.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs puzermos, *when we shall put.*
- Quando vôs puzerdes, *when ye shall put.*
- Quando elles puzerem, *when they shall put.*

Second Future Tense.

Sing.
- Quando eu tivér posto, *when I shall have put.*
- Quando tu tivéres posto, *when thou shalt have put.*
- Quando elle tivér posto, *when he shall have put.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs tivérmos posto, *when we shall have put.*
- Quando vôs tivérdes posto, *when ye shall have put.*
- Quando elles tivérem posto, *when they shall have put.*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Pór, *to put.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter posto, *to have put.*

Future Tense.

Ter de pór, *to (be to put) put hereafter.*

Gerund.

Pondo, *in putting.*

Participle Present.

O que poem, *one (he) that puts.*

Participle Preterperfect.

posto, *put.*

Participle Future.

O que tem de pór, *one (he) that is to put.*

CHAP. XVI.

Of the Reciprocal Verbs.

RECIPROCAL Verbs are called those that have in all their Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons, join'd to them the Pronouns *me, te, se, nôs, vôs, se,* me, thee, him or herself, us, you and themselves; as *eu me queixo,* I complain; *tu te queixavas,* thou didst complain; *elle se queixou,* he complained; *nôs nôs tínhamos queixado,* we did complain; *vós vôs queixaréys,* you will complain; *elles se queixáram,* they shall or will complain.

Of

Of the same Kind are the Verbs *irárse* and *agastárse*, to grow angry; *deitárse*, to lie down, *desconfiarse*, to mistrust; *lembrarse*, to remember; *arrependerse*, to repent; *acentar se*, to sit down; *&c.* which are also reciprocal in the *Italian*, *French*, and *Spanish* Languages, except *irarse*, to grow angry, which is in the *Italian andar in colera*, and *acentarse*, in *Italian sedere.*

The Pronoun stands before these Verbs in the Indicative and Subjunctive Moods, but in the Imperative and Infinitive behind them.

As these Verbs do not differ from the others in their Conjugations, we shall only set down here one Example to shew how they are handled.

Indicative Mood *Present Tense.*

Sing.
Eu me acento, *I sit down.*
Tu te acentas, *thou sittest down.*
Elle se acenta, *he sits down.*

Plur.
Nôs nôs acéntamos, *we sit down.*
Vôs vôs acéntays, *ye sit down.*
Elles se acéntam, *they sit down.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.
Eu me acentava, *I did sit down.*
Tu te acentavas, *thou didst sit down.*
Elle se acentava, *he did sit down.*

Plur.
Nôs nôs acentávamos, *we did sit down.*
Vôs vôs acentáveys, *ye did sit down.*
Elles se acentávam, *they did sit down.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

Eu me acentéy, *I sat down.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Eu me tenho acentado, *I have sat down.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Eu me acentára ou tinha acentado, *I had sat down.*

First Future.

Eu me acenterey, *I will sit down.*

Second Future.

Ja entam eu me terey acentado, *I shall then have sat down.*

Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

Sing. { *Has no first Person.*
Acéntate, *sit thou down.*
Acénte se elle, *let him sit down.*

Plur. { Acentémos nôs, *let us sit down.*
Acentáyvôs, *sit ye down.*
Acéntem se elles, *let them sit down.*

Second Tense.

Sing. { *Has no first Person.*
Acentaraste, *thou shalt sit down.*
Acentarase elle, *he shall sit down.*

Plur. { Acentarémos nôs, *we shall sit down.*
Acentaréys vôs, *ye shall sit down.*
Acentarámse elles, *they shall sit down.*

Optative *or* Subjunctive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Oxala eu me acente, *would I may sit down.*

Imperfect Tense.

Oxala eu me acentára ou assentasse, *would I might sit down.*

Uncertain Tense.

Eu me acentaria, *I might or could sit down.*

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Quera Deos eu me tenha acentado, *please God I may have sat down.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Praça a Deos eu me tivera ou tivesse acentado, *please God or wish to God I had sat down.*

First Future Tense.

Como ou quando eu me acentar, *as or when I shall sit down.*

Second Future Tense.

Quando eu me tiver acentado, *when I shall have sat down.*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Acentarse, *to sit down.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Terse acentado, *to have sat down.*

Gerund.

Acentando se, ou em acentar se, *in sitting down.*

Participle Present.

O que se acenta, *he (or one) that sits down.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Acentado, *sat down.*

Participle Future.

O que ha ou tem dâcentarse, *one (or he) that is to sit down.*

☞ Observe, that all Verbs Active may be made reciprocal.

As for Example, you may say,

Sing. { Eu me amo, *I love myself.*
Tu te amas, *thou lovest thyself.*
Elle se ama, *he loveth himself.*

Plur. { Nôs nôs amamos, *we love ourselves.*
Vôs vôs amays, *ye love yourselves.*
Elles se amam, *they love themselves.*

And so in all the other Tenses.

Of the Impersonal Verbs.

There are three Sorts of Impersonal Verbs that have but the third Person in Singular.

The first are those that are properly impersonal of themselves, and require no Pronoun with 'em; as,

He mester, *it is necessary.*
Chove, *it rains.*
Trovoa, *it thunders.*
Pedrisca, *it hails.*
Neva, *it snows.*

The second come from the Verbs Active, and are accompanied by the Particle *se*, which renders them impersonal, and gives them a Passive Signification, as *se diz*, it is said; *se cré*, it is believed; *se escreve*, it is wrote, which answers to the *French* Expression, *on dit*, *on croit*, *on ecrit:* This Way of expressing themselves is very common to the *Portuguese* and *Spaniards*.

The third Sort resemble the Reciprocal Verbs, and are conjugated with the Pronouns, *me*, *te*, *se*, *lhe*, *nôs*, *vôs*, *se*, and *lhes*. Such are *a mim me sucede*, it happens to me; *a mim me basta*, it is enough for me; *a mim me parece*, it seems to me.

Note, These are also often used like those of the first Order.

The

☞The Verb *da*, he or it gives, is also often used as an Impersonal of this Class; for when they would say, I do not fancy this, or this doth not please me, they express it *nam se me da dîsto*, or he doth not fancy it, *nam se lhe da dîsto.*

The first is conjugated thro' all or most of the Tenses and Moods, but only in the third Person, and can never have any Person join'd to it; as,

Indic. Pres. Trovoa, *it thunders.*
Imperfect. Trovoava, *it did thunder.*
Preterperfect. Trovoau, *it has thunder'd.*

The Word *he mester*, it is necessary, is conjugated by changing the Verb *ey*, or third Person *he*, through all the Tenses and Moods, the Word *mester* remaining inflexible; as,

Indic. Pres. He mester, *it is necessary.*
Imperfect. Avia mester, *it was necessary.*
Preterperfect. Ouve mester, *it has been necessary.*

The second Sort, which are accompanied by the Particle *se*, are also sometimes express'd by the third Person in Plural, without the Pronoun *se*; as *dizem*, *escrevem*, *lêm*, they say, they write, they read, which is the same Sense as it is said, it is wrote, it is read; as *se diz que este homém he muito rico*, it is said that this Man is very rich; and *dizem que este homem he muito rico*, they say that this Man is very rich.

The third Sort of the Impersonal Verbs are those which are conjugated with the Pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, *lhe*, *nôs*, *vôs*, *se lhes*. Example,

Indicative

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing. A mim me parece, *it seems to me.*
A ti te parece, *it seems to thee.*
A elle lhe parece, *it seems to him.*

Plur. A nôs nôs parece, *it seems to us.*
A vôs vôs parece, *it seems to you.*
A elles lhes parece, *it seems to them*

Imperfect Tense.

A mim me parecía, *it did seem to me.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

A mim me pareceo, *it seem'd to me.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

A mim me ha parecido, *it has seem'd to me.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

A mim me avia parecido, *it had seem'd to me.*

First Future.

A mim me parecerá, *it will seem to me.*

Second Future.

A mim me avera parecido, *it will have seem'd to me.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Oxala a mim me paresa, *would it may seem to me.*

Imperfect Tense.

Oxala a mim me parecera ou parecesse, *would it might seem to me.*

Uncertain Tense.

A mim me pareceria, *it would, could, or might seem to me.*

Preterperfect

Preterperfect Tense.

Oxala a mim me aja parecido, *would it may have seemed to me.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Oxala ou prouvera a Deos a mim me ouvera ou ouvesse parecido, *would or please God it had seemed to me.*

First Future.

Quando ou como a mim me parecer, *when or as to me it shall seem.*

Second Future.

Como ou quando a mim me ouvéra parecido, *as or when to me it shall have seem'd.*

Infinitive Mood: *Present Tense.*

Parecer, *to seem.*

Participle Present.

Parecido, *seemed, &c.*

Verbs of this Order are also, *a mim me sucede*, it happens to me; *a mim me descontenta*, it displeases me; *a mim me agrada*, and *a mim me contenta*, it pleases me; *a mim me pesa*, I am sorry; and many others, which the Reader, by the Help of the above Observations, will easily discover.

The Verb *ha*, he, she, or it has, in the third Person Singular of the Indicative Present serves likewise often for an impersonal Verb, and is joined with Nouns both in the Singular or Plural Number, in the same Manner as the *French* use their *il y a*; and as they say, *il y a un homme*, and *il y a plusieurs hommes*, so the *Portuguese* say likewise, *ha hum homem*, and *ha múitos homens*, there

is

is one Man, and there are many Men; and *avera hum homem*, & *avera múitos homens*, there will be one Man, and there will be many Men; which Way of expressing themselves is also usual in the *Spanish* Language.

☞ Observe, that the *Portuguese*, both for Elegancy of Sound, and Conciseness of Expression, join to their Verbs the following Particles, *me*, *te*, *se*, *lhe*, me, thee, him; *nôs*, *vôs*, *lhes*, us, you, them: Also *mó*, *tó*, *lhó*, contracted from *me o*, *te o*, *lhe o*, it to me, it to thee, it to him or her; also *má*, *tá*, *lhá*, her to me, her to thee, her to him; and in Plural *mós*, *tós lhós*, *más*, *tás*, *lhás*, them to me, them to thee, them to them.

Also *nôlo*, *vôlo*, from *nôs o*, *vôs o*, it to us, it to you, and *nôla*, *vôla*; *nôlos*, *vôlos*, *nôlas*, *vôlas*, her to us, her to you, them to us, them to you.

The Articles *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, are likewise joined to the End of Verbs, as in the Gerund *sendoo*, *sendoa*, he or it being, she being; and in Plural *sendoos*, *sendoas*, they being; *amandoo*, *amandoa*, *lendoo*, *lendoa*, *amandoos*, *amandoas*, *lendoos*, *lendoas*, &c. But when the Articles *o*, *a* are joined to a Verb in the Infinitive Present, the *r* is changed into a *ll*; as *amallo*, *amalla*, to love him, it, or her; *dallo*, *dalla*, &c.

The following Example may serve to illustrate these Difficulties.

A presente he para referirlhe, que tenho comprado o relogio de prata, por 8 *libras Estarlinas. Eu vi dous outros dóuro, bem condicionados, mas não podrey procurarlhos pollo preço que aponta; sem embargo disto offreceomos por* 20 *Guineos cada hum*, &c. The Present is to advise you that I have bought the Silver

Silver Watch for 8 *l.* Sterling. I have seen two others of Gold, well condition'd, but I shall not be able to procure 'em you for the Price you appoint; however, he has offer'd 'em to me for 20 Guineas each.

Elle não quer dárnolo, dárvolo, dárnola, dárvola, dárnolos, dárvolos, dárvolas, por esse dinheiro, he will not give it us, give it you, give them to us, give them to you, for that Money.

THE

THE SYNTAX.

Some General Remarks.

THE Word *Syntax* comes from the *Greek* συντάσσω, I put in order, and therefore whatever Obſervations or Rules contribute towards a juſt Uſe and Diſpoſition of all the Parts of Speech, belong properly under this Head.

The Conſtruction or Compoſition of Words into Sentences, is divided into Common and Figurative. The Common is that which we uſe in common Diſcourſe. By converſing with Men who ſpeak a Language correctly, we may learn to ſpeak Grammatically true, and arrive to ſuch a Nicety that the Ear ſhall be ſhock'd to hear any one ſpeak againſt the Rules of Grammar, tho' we cannot give any Reaſon for our Diſlike: For Example, if one was to ſay *many People has been*, &c. or *Yeſterday will be a fine Day*, there is hardly a Peaſant who would not find fault with it, tho' he were not able to ſhew the Soleciſm. The Figurative deviates ſomewhat from the common way of expreſſing one's Thoughts, and is uſed by Authors for Conciſeneſs or Elegancy.

Three Things are chiefly to be obſerved in the *Syntax*; the firſt, that the Adjective, Pronoun, and Participle are never applied in Speech without a Noun Subſtantive expreſs'd or underſtood, with which it muſt agree in Gender, Number, and Caſe. Thus when the Noun Subſtantive is

of

of the Masculine Gender, and in Nominative Singular, the Noun Adjective and Pronoun must be joined to it in the same Order, as *este homem he muy caritativo*, this Man is very charitable; and in Plural, *estes homens sam muy caritativos*: Example of the Feminine, *essa moça he fermosa*, that young Woman is handsome, *essas moças sam fermosas*, those young Women are handsome.

The second, that the Verb may be placed in the due Tense, and always fitted in Person and Number to the Nominative or Person it speaks of; as *estes homens*, these Men, the Pronoun standing in Plural, and being of the third Person, the Verb to be joined with it must also be of the third Person Plural, and therefore you are to say, *estes homens sam*, these Men they are; and not *estes homens soys*, these Men ye are, or *estes homens he*, these Men is.

Thirdly, the Relative ought always to correspond with the Antecedent Noun in Gender and Number, as *o livro, nó qual tenho lido*, the Book in which I have read; and not *o livro ná qual*, &c. *livro* the Noun to which *nó qual* refers being Masculine. As *cidades as quáys sam destroídas*, the Cities which are destroyed; and not *as cidades os quays*, nor *cidades a qual*; *cidades* being of the Feminine Gender and in Plural Number, with which the Relative *as quays* ought to agree.

These three are the fundamental Rules of the *Syntax*, which being well fixed in the Learner's Mind, the rest will seem very easy to him.

CHAP. I.

Of the Genders.

THE Genders of all Nouns in this Language are reputed only to be two, as Masculine and Feminine, which are known by the Articles

o & *a*, *dó* & *dá*. There is also a Neuter Gender used sometimes in the Article *o*, and the Pronouns *isso* and *aquillo*, as may be seen in the Beginning of this Grammar; and some Words partaking both of the Masculine and Feminine Gender are said to be of the Common Gender.

The Particles *o* & *ao*, or *os* and *aos* preceding any Noun, it is a certain Sign of its being of the Masculine Gender; and *a*, *á*, & *as* & *ás*, denote the Feminine.

Observe, the Letter *a* is sometimes found before *e* Masculine, as *convem á pedro*, it behoveth *Peter*; *elle matóu a seu irmão*, he has kill'd his Brother; of which *see the Article Indefinite.*

The following Rules may serve to distinguish the Genders of the Nouns Substantive by their Signification.

It is a general Rule, tho' not without Exceptions, that those which end in *o* are of the Masculine, and those in *a* of the Feminine Gender.

All proper Names of Men are of the Masculine Gender; also all Names of Angels, all the heathen Gods, the Names of the Winds; all Titles, as *Emperador*, *Rey*, *Principe*, &c. the Names of Trades, as *alfayáte*, a Taylor; *çapatéyro*, a Shoemaker; *tavernéyro*, a Vintner, or Tavern-keeper; all the Names of the Months. Of the Feminine Gender are all Women's Names, as *Maria*, *Anna*, *Catherina*, &c. all heathen Goddesses; also the Names of Nymphs, and Names of Dignity, as *Emperatrîz*, and whatsoever other Nouns concern the Feminine Sex. All the Names of Islands, Provinces, Cities, Villages, Ships, *&c.* ending in *a* are of the Feminine Gender; also all Names of Fruits, Trees, and Flowers, terminating in *a*. Those that are not comprehended in these Rules, are best learnt from Observation; too many Rules commonly serving rather to embroil than to instruct a Beginner.

Ob-

Obſervations how to know the Genders of Nouns Subſtantive by their Terminations.

1. Nouns ending in *a* or *ãa* are Feminine, whether Proper or Common, as *Maria*, *Roma*, *França*, &c. *Poesia*, *Villa*, *Musica*, *Romãa*, *Maãa*, *Avellãa*, Mary, Rome, France, Poetry, a Town, Muſic, a Pomegranate, an Apple, a Small-nut. Except ſuch Names as denote a manly Office; as *mariôla*, a Porter, *meſtréſcola*, a School-maſter, and Sirnames, and the Word *dia*, a Day; alſo ſeveral Words deriv'd from the *Greek* and *Latin*, as *clima*, *fantaſma*, *poema*, *epigramma*, *enigma*, *diadema*, *dilemma*, *eſtratagema*, *cometa*, *planeta*; which are all of the Maſculine Gender. The Word *cada*, every, is adapted to both Genders; as *cada homem*, *cada mulher*, every Man, every Woman.

2. Nouns ending in *é* are Maſculine, as the proper, *Dunquerque*, *Albuquerque*; common, as *barrete*, a Cap; *ſinete*, a Seal; *capote*, a Cloak; *vinagre*, Vinegar; *azéite*, Oil, *&c.* But this Rule has the following Exceptions; firſt, all Names of Virtues, Vices, Faculties and Paſſions of the Mind are of the Feminine Gender, as *virtúde*, *ſantidade*, *bondade*, *fé*, Virtue, Holineſs, Goodneſs, Faith; *inimizade*, *ocioſidade*, *vaidade*, *menenice*, *moroſidade*, *borachiſſe*, *vontade*, &c. Enmity, Idleneſs, Vanity, Childiſhneſs, Moroſeneſs, Drunkenneſs, Will, *&c.* Secondly, the following are alſo of the Feminine kind, as *idade*, Age; *velhice*, old Age; *ruſticidade*, Ruſticity; *capacidade*, Capacity; *felicidade*, Felicity; *ſorte*, fortune; *morte*, Death; *arte*, Art; *parte*, Part; *árvore*, a Tree; *ave*, a Bird; *carne*, Fleſh; *fertilidade*, Fertility; *ſede*, Thirſt; *ſebe*, a Hedge; *cóuve*, Cabbage; *erdâde*, Inheritance; *trindade*, Trinity; *chaminé*, Chimney; *parede*, a Wall; *ſaúde*, Health; *rede*, a Net; *maré*, the

Tide; *chave*, a Key; *trempe*, a Trivet; *lebre*, a Hare; *febre*, Fever; *serpente*, a Serpent; *galé*, a Galley.

3. All Words ending in *i* are Masculine; as *nebrí*, a Hawk; *biberiquí*, a Gimlet, *&c.*

4. Words ending in *o* are Masculine; except some few, as *náo*, a Ship; *filhó*, a thin Cake, a Pancake; *eyro*, an Eel; *mó*, a Mill, *&c.*

5. All Words ending in *u* are Masculine; as *bambú*, *perú*, *mú*, *groú*, a Cane, a Turkey, a Mule, a Crane.

6. All Words ending in *al*, *el*, *il*, *ol*, *ul*, are Masculine.

7. All Words ending in *am* are Masculine; as *pam*, *melam*, *roupam*, *trovam*, &c. except *mam* and *cozam*, and some Words derived from the *Latin*, denoting an Action, *viz. perseyçám*, *exaggeraçám*, *composiçám*, *declaraçám*, *recreaçâm*, *&c.*

8. Words in *em* are Masculine; as *péntem*, *bodém*, *armazem*, *homem*, &c. except *órdem*, *ádem*, *virgem*; and Words ending in *agem*, which are Feminine, as *ervagem*, *imagem*, *viagem*, &c.

Note, The Word *Salvagem* is of both Genders; thus you say, *varám salvagem*, and *mulher salvagem*, a wild Man, a wild Woman.

9. All Words ending in *im*, *om*, *um*, are Masculine, as *fim*, *espadím*, *tom*, *som*, *attúm*, *dobrúm*, &c.

10. Words in *ar*, *er*, *ir*, *or*, *ur*, are Masculine; as *néctar*, *polegár*, *alvanér*, *prazer*, *ophir*, *mártyr*, *açór*, *caçadór*, *catur*; except *colhér*, *mulher*, *flor*, *dor*, *cor*.

11. All Words ending in *as* are Feminine, *e.g. ándas*, a Litter; *cálças*, Breeches; *álças*, a Fee or Advance in Rent; *cócegas*, tickling, *&c.* all which Words are writ in the Plural, but have a singular Signification.

12. All

12. All Words in *es*, *is*, *os*, *us*, whether Singular or Plural, are Masculine, *v. g.* *alféres*, *dátiles*, *gis*, *calçóes*, *óculos*, an Ensign, Dates, Chalk, Breeches, Spectacles, *&c.*

13. Words in *az*, *ez*, *iz*, *oz*, *uz*, are Masculine, except *paz*, *torquez*, *rez*, *tez*, *fez*, *vez*; *aboiz*, *perdiz*, *codorníz*, *raíz*, *matríz*; *noz*, *foz*, *voz*; *luz*, *cruz*, which are Feminine; the Word *apprendiz*, an Apprentice, is common to both Genders.

Note, Words ending in *i* are more or less as many Masculines as Feminines; as *réy*, *páy*, *bóy*, Masculine, and *máy*, *léy*, *gréy*, *&c.* Feminine.

Observe also, that the Epicene Gender, expressing both Sexes at once, is not wanting here; as *pulga*, *piolho*, *mosca*, *mosquito*, *minhoca*, &c.

The Nouns Adjective ending in *o* are of the Masculine, and those in *a* of the Feminine Gender; of the Masculine Gender are also those terminating in *u*; as *cru*, *crúa*, crude, raw; *nú*, *núa*, naked; and in *um*, as *hum*, *huma*; *comum*, *comúa*, &c.

Those that terminate in *al*, *el*, *il*, *az*, *iz*, *oz*, *es*, and in *e*, are both of the Masculine and Feminine Gender.

The Pronouns Adjective have three Genders, as we observed above, *viz.* Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter; as *aquelle*, *aquella*, and *aquillo*, that Man or Woman, and that Thing; so *este*, *esse*, *esta*, *essa*, *isto*, *isso*, this, that; where note, the *e* in the Neuter is turn'd into *i*; as *aquelle*, *aquillo*; *este*, *isto*; *esse*, *isso*.

But the Genders of the Pronouns appear plain enough in the Chapter of Pronouns, to which I refer the Reader.

CHAP. II.

Of the Definite and Indefinite Articles.

THERE are two Sorts of Articles, the Definite and Indefinite. The Definite marks the Gender, Number, and Case of the Noun it goes before; as *o homem*, *dó homem*, *ao homem*, *os homens*, *dós homens*, *aos homens*; *a mulher*, *dá mulher*, *à mulher*; *as mulheres*, *dás mulheres*, *às mulheres*; the Articles *o*, *dó*, *ao*, *os*, *dós*, *aos*; *a*, *dá*, *à*, *as*, *dás*, *às*, are here the Definite Articles, because they point out the Masculine or Feminine Gender, and the Singular or Plural Numbers.

The Definite Article has six Cases, *viz. Nominative*, *Genitive*, *Dative*, *Accusative*, *Vocative*, *Ablative*, and is declined as may be seen in the Beginning of this Grammar.

This Article is made use of, 1*st*, to specify a particular Person; as *o Rey manda aos subditos*, the King commands the Subjects.

2. It is applicable to a whole Species; as *os homens sam fortes*, Men are strong; *o leam he feroz*, the Lion is fierce.

3. It is always put before God when the Word *Déos* has any Attribute join'd to it; as *o Déos de misericordia*, the God of Mercy.

4. It is join'd with a Title to distinguish a Person; as *minha senhora a Princessa de*, *&c.* my Lady the Princess of, *&c.*

5. All Nouns Substantive common demand this Article; as *a casa*, *a terra*, *a mesa*, *o livro*, *o vinho*, *o leyte*, *o fogo*, *a lúa*, *o sol*, &c.

6. It is put before the Names of Countries, Rivers, and the Months; as *a França*, *o Portugal*,

gal, a Ingalaterra, a Tamisa, o Tejo, o mes de Março, o mes de Junho, &c.

7. It is put before any Epithet; as *Judas o traidor*, Judas the Traytor.

8. The Superlative Degree of Adjectives requires also this Article; as *o principe Eugenio he o melhor general de todos*, Prince Eugene is the best General of all.

9. The Pronouns Possessive, *meu, teu, seu, nosso* and *vosso*, and the Relatives *hum, outro, qual*, require the Definite Article; as *elle he teu inimigo e o meu tambem*, he is thy Enemy and mine likewise; *o hum he mais sabio dó que o outro*, one is more learned than the other; *meu livro o qual*, my Book which, *&c.* All the other Pronouns are join'd with the Indefinite Article.

☞ Observe here that the Indefinite Article is also join'd with *meu, teu, seu, nosso, vosso*, &c. when they stand between two Nouns Substantive, the latter of which stands in the Genitive Case; as *essa he casa de meu irmão*, that is my Brother's House; *em satisfação de seus pecados*, in Satisfaction of his Sins; *tu não conheces os livros de nosso pay*, thou dost not know the Books of our Father, (our Father's Books.)

10. This Article is join'd to the Infinitive of a Verb when it is taken in the Sense of a Noun; as *o ler nam he difficultoso*, reading is not difficult.

Observe, no Article is required when a Preposition is join'd with the Noun; as *servia com ardór*, to serve with Warmth; *obrar por dinheiro*, to work for Money.

The Indefinite Articles

Are *de* and *a*; *de* may be placed before the Masculine as well as the Feminine Gender; as

hum arratel de pam, a Pound of Bread, and *hum arratel de carne*, a Pound of Flesh.

This Article is also put before the Singular and Plural promiscuously; as *hum arratel de ceréjas*, a Pound of Cherries; *hum numero de mulheres*, a Number of Women.

In the same Manner the Article *a* serves for the Masculine and Feminine Gender, and the Singular and Plural Numbers; as *isto nam se diz á meninos*, that is not said to Children, and *isto se ha de faser á mulheres*, that must be be done to Women.

This Article has but four Cases, *viz. Genitive*, *Dative*, *Accusative*, and *Ablative*, *de*, *a*, *a*, & *de*.

☞ It is necessary here to observe, that the *Portuguese* as well as the *Spaniards* join this Article to the Pronouns and Nouns of an indefinite Signification in the Accusative Case, which Beginners are often perplexed at, especially those who know *French* or *Italian*, which two Languages admit of no Article in that Case. In the following Examples you'll find it join'd with the Accusative Case, *viz. o reo com as mãos atadas fez a sua confissão*, the Guilty with his Hands tied made his Confession; *perguntey a estes homens*, I have asked these Men; *perguntey a estas mulheres*, I have asked those Women; *perguntey a Joam que horas são*, I have asked John what a Clock it is; *os Espanhoys combatéram a Napolis*, the Spaniards have fought against Napolis. (See Chap. V. of the *Articles*, *&c.*)

By the Help of these short Rules I hope it will be easy to distinguish which of the two Sorts of Articles should be apply'd, *viz.* When a particular Person or Thing is spoke of and pointed out, then the Definite Article takes place; but when the Subject spoke of is not pointed out, but left in

in a general Sense, then the Article Indefinite obtains; as when you say, *hum arratel de pam*, a Pound of Bread, you do not determine which or whose Bread it is, therefore the Indefinite Article is apply'd; but when you say *a Pound of my Father's Bread*, then you point out whose Bread it is, and cause the Word Bread to obtain a determined or definite Sense; wherefore the Definite Article must be made use of, and you say *hum arratel dó pam de meu pay*, and not *hum arratel de pam de meu pay*.

To know the Cases by the Particles and Prepositions, we must have regard to the Variety of Cases which these Articles govern. The Article *a* serves sometimes the Nominative, Dative, and Accusative Case; as when we say *a casa he fermosa*, the House is beautiful, which is the Nominative; and *ír à casa*, to go home, which is the Accusative; and *convem à casa*, it is convenient for the House, which is the Dative Case.

When the Particle *de* is join'd with the Pronouns *este*, *esta*, *essa*, *isto*, *isso*, as *déste*, *désta*, *dísto*, *díssо*, it sometimes stands in the Genitive, sometimes in the Ablative Case; but the Particle *n*, as *néste*, *nésta*, *nísto*, *nésse*, *&c.* always denotes the Ablative. See the *Propositions*.

The Particles *lho* and *lha* are often join'd to Verbs to signify the Words *it*, *him*, and is a Contraction of the Article *o*, *a*, and the Pronoun *elle*; thus they say, *doulho de graça*, I give it him freely, and *doulha* (i. e. *couça*) *de graça*, I give it (*i. e.* that Thing) him freely; the Articles *o* and *a* stand here in the Accusative.

The Particles *de* and *da*, and *dó*, sometimes denote the Genitive and sometimes the Ablative Case, *e. g. párte dá casa*, Part of the House, being the Genitive; and *venho de* or *dá casa de Pedro*, I come from *Peter*'s House, which is the Ablative;

tive; as also *venho dó Templo*, I come from the Church, Ablative.

The Particle or Preposition *pera* is sometimes related to the Accusative, and sometimes to the Dative Case, *v. g. vou pera casa*, I go home, Accusative; and *pera minha casa basta isto*, this is sufficient for my House, which is the Dative.

The Particles *em*, *ná*, *nó*, *com*, *sem*, always denote the Ablative Case in both Numbers, *v. g. estou em casa*, or *ná casa de Pedro*, I am in the House of Peter; *estóu com casa*, *& com armaçam ou sem casa*, *sem armaçam de Pedro*, I am with or without the House or Furniture of Peter, Ablative.

The Particle *ao* sometimes serves the Dative, and sometimes the Accusative Case, *e.g.* Dative, *convem ao Templo estar ornado*, it is convenient that a Church be adorned; Accusative, *vóu ao Templo de*, &c. I go to the Church of, *&c. Vid.* the Chapter of the *Prepositions*.

CHAP. III.

Of the Use and Concordance of Nouns.

AS Nouns are reckon'd the first in the Parts of Speech, therefore I shall begin with them, and explain what is necessary to know concerning them.

It is a general Rule, both in the *Portuguese* as well as in the *Latin*, that the Noun Adjective must ever agree with the Substantive in Gender, Number and Case, without Exception; as *hum bom livro*, a good Book; *huma mulher má*, a bad Wife or Woman; *homens discretos*, discreet Men.* And here observe, the Noun Adjective is commonly placed after the Noun Substantive.

Remarks

* See p. 110, 111.

Remarks on the Comparisons of Adjectives.

The Force of the Comparison lies often in the Particle *que*, as indeed it doth in the *Latin*, and the Languages derived from it; the *Latin* has *quam*, the *Italian di*, the *Spanish que*, the *Portuguese que*, the *French que*, the *English than*. As for Example, *o vinho he melhor que a cerveja*, Wine is better *than* Beer; *a peste he peór que a sarna*, the Plague is worse *than* the Itch.

You also make Comparisons with the Adverbs *máis* and *ménos*; as *meu cavallo he mais alto que o teu*, my Horse is higher than yours (thine.)

The Superlative is often formed, as in *Latin*, by adding *issimus*; as *excellens*, *excellentissimus*, *Lat.* So the *Portuguese* say *excellentissimo*, *generosissimo*, *&c.* but it is oftener express'd by putting the Article *o* and *a* before the Sign of the Comparative Degree; as *o Rey d' Ingalaterra he hum principe o mais poderoso*, *&c.* the King of England is the most powerful Prince, *&c. esta Senhora he a mais bella mulher dó mundo*, this Lady is the finest Woman in the World. (*vid. p.* 29.)

Observations on the Nouns of Numbers.

All Numbers are distributed into four Classes; the first is what we call Cardinal or Principal; as *hum*, *dous*, *tres*, *quatro*, *dez*, *vinte*, *trinta*, *quarenta*, *cincoenta*, *cem*, *mil*, *&c.* one, two, three, four, ten, twenty, thirty, forty, fifty, hundred, a thousand.

Those of the second Order are called Ordinals; as *primêiro*, *segundo*, *tercêiro*, *quarto*, *quinto*, *sexto*, *decimo*, *vintêino*, *centesimo*, *milésimo*, *&c.* the first, the second, the third, the fourth, the fifth, the sixth, the tenth, the twentieth, the hundredth, the thousandth, *&c.*

The

The third Class contains the Collectives; as *huma duzia*, *huma vintéina*, *&c.* a Dozen, a Score.

The fourth Class are Numbers which mark an Augmentation; as *o dobro*, the Double, *&c.*

Though all these Nouns of Numbers are Adjectives in their Nature, yet there are some which don't vary their Termination, that is to say, from one, *hum*, *huma*, and in the Plural *huns*, *humas*, some; and *dous*, *duas*, two, to *duzentos*, *duzentas*, two hundred; *trecentos*, *trecentas*, three hundred, *&c.* which again have the Feminine Termination; as *duzentos homens*, *& duzentas mulheres*, two hundred Men and two hundred Women.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Pronouns.

THE Pronouns having the second Place allotted them in the Parts of Speech in all Grammars, I shall treat of them next after the Noun, and first consider the *Pronoun Personal*, of which there are three Sorts, *viz.* of the first, second, and third Person.

☞Some Grammarians distinguish the Pronouns into Substantives and Adjectives. The Pronouns Substantive are *eu* I, *tu* thou, and *si* himself, and all the rest they call Adjectives; but for Method's sake we shall treat of them in the following Order.

The Pronoun Personal of the first Person *eu* I, has no determined Gender, and is joined to either the Masculine or Feminine, and declined with the indefinite Article, as may be seen in the Declensions. There is but one Pro-

noun of the first Person, and it always agrees with the Verb in Number and Person; as *eu sou*, I am; *nôs somos*, we are; and it is sometimes suppress'd by Way of Elegancy, and in Imitation of the *Latin*; as *amo a essas raparigas*, I love those Girls; *leyo a méos livros*, I read my Books; tho' in *English* it cannot be left out.

The Pronoun *me* me, is joined with the Particles *o* and *a* in the following Manner; *mó* and *má* in the Singular, and *mós* and *más* in the Plural Number are made use of, *v. g. muy caro vendeomo*, i. e. *livro*, he sold it me very dear, *i. e.* the Book; *muy cara vendeoma*, i. e. *cousa*, he sold it me very dear, *i. e.* the Thing; *vendeomos muy caros*, i. e. *os livros*, he sold 'em me very dear, *i. e.* the Books; *vendeomas muy caras*, i. e. *as sedas*, he sold 'em me very dear, *i. e.* the Silks.

The Rules given for the first Person also serve for the second, without any Exception.

The Pronun *tu* is also with the Article *o* and *a*, *os* and *as*, contracted into *to*, *ta*, *tôs*, *tás*, and joined to the End of Verbs, which makes this Language very concise and expressive; thus they say, *douto de graça*, i. e. *o livro*, I give it thee freely, *i. e.* the Book; for *doute o*, &c. *douta de graça*, i. e. *a seda*, I give it thee freely, *i. e.* the Silk; for *doute a*. So in the Plural Masculine, *doutós de graça*, i. e. *os livros*, I give 'em you freely, *i. e.* the Books, for *doute os*; and *doutás de graça*, i. e. *as sedas*, I give 'em you freely, *i. e.* the Silks, for *doute as*.

The Plural *vôs* is also often joined to *o*, *a*, *os*, and *as*, by changing the Letter into an *l*. Example, *eu vôla dou*, I give it you, for *eu vôs a dou*; and *eu vólas dou*, I give them you, for *eu vôs as dou*. Likewise the Infinitive of Verbs is joined with *o*, *os*, *a* and *as*, by changing the *r* into *l* as *quero vélo* I will see him or it, for *quero ver o*; and *quero*

vélos

vêlos, I will see them, for *quero ver os*. See the Chapter of the Verb.

The Pronoun of the third Person, *si* or *se* himself, which is the common Gender, both Masculine and Feminine, and has no Plural Number, is declined with the indefinite Article, as may be seen in the Beginning of this Grammar.

Elle is commonly expres'd by the Particle *lhe* in the Singular, and *lhes* in the Plural, and the Dative Case is comprehended therein; as *á elle* and *á elles*; as *nam se lhe dá déſſo*, and *nam se lhe da a elle díſſo*, he cares not for it. So in the Plural *nam se lhes da díſſo*, or *nam se lhes dá á elles d'iſſo*, they care not for it, or they value it not. (See *p.* 33)

Pronouns Poſſeſſive.

There are three Pronouns poſſeſſive; as *meu teu*, *ſeu*, mine, thine, his, in Singular; *meus*, *teus*, *ſeus*, in Plural. They are joined with a Noun Subſtantive both in Singular and Plural, and have two Genders, *viz.* Maſculine and Feminine; thus *meu* mine, is *minha* in Feminine; *teu*, *tua*, *Vid.* the Declenſion of the Pronouns; *meu livro*, my Book; *minha caſa*, my Houſe; *meu olho*, my Eye; *minhas palavras*, my Words, *&c.*

Theſe Pronouns have the Article before them when the Conjunction Copulative comes between, *e. g. teu irmão e o meu*, thy Brother and mine, *minha irmãa e a ſua*, my Siſter and his; *teus cavallos e os meus*, thy Horſes and mine; *tuas caſas e as minhas*, thy Houſes and mine.

Pronouns Demonſtrative.

Such are *elle*, *ella*, *eſte*, *eſſe*, *aquelle*; the Words *elle*, *ella*, anſwer the *Engliſh he* and *ſhe*; *eſte* is uſed when

when we say in *English this*; *Essa* answers the *English that*; and *aquelle that there* or *yonder*, which is almost out of sight, is remote, or not in sight at all; *e. g. este homem he muy honrado*, this is a Man of Honour; *essa mulher he fermosa*, that Woman is handsome; and *fuy dez annos em aquella cidade*, I have been ten Years in that City.

Pronouns Interrogative.

Que, *quem*, *qual*, *cujo*, and *cuja*. The Pronoun *que* is indeclinable; as *qué homem he este?* what Man is that? *qué mulheres sam essas?* what Women are those? When *que* is an Interrogagative it ought to be writ with an Accent, otherwise not.

When you speak of inanimate Things you may use indifferently the Word *qual*, or *quem*; as *qual déstes retratos he o melhor?* which of these Pictures is the best? or *quem déstes retratos*, *&c.* But when you speak of Things having Life you must make use of *quem* only, except you put the Article before *qual*, *e. g. quem dás duas mulheres he a mais fermosa?* which of the two Women is the handsomest? or *a qual dás*, *&c.* which however is not so polite a Way of Expression as the first.

Pronouns Relative. See the Chapter of *Pronouns*.

Pronouns Improper.

These Pronouns are divided into two Classes; the first is of Personals, the other Mix'd, which has Regard to both Persons and Things.

The Personal only is *quem*, who and which.

The Mix'd are *nehum*, *cadahum*, *outro*, *cada*, *certo*, *mesmo*, *algum*, *todo*, *tal*, *qualquer*, noboby, every

every one, another, every, a certain, the same, somebody, every, such, which, or whosoever.

Some of these Pronouns have but one only Termination; as *quem*, *cada*, *qualquer*, *tal*, which are of the Masculine and Feminine Gender both; *quem* and *cada* are indeclinable, but *qual* is in the plural *quays*, and *tal tays*; thus you say *quaysqueres homens*, *ou quaysqueres mulheres*. All the others have a Masculine and Feminine Termination, and are declinable; as *nenhum*, *nenhuma*, *nenhums*, *nenhumas*, *cadahum*, *cadahuma*, *cadahuns*, *cadahumas*; *outro*, *outra*, *outros*, *outras*; *certo*, *certa*, *certos*, *certas*, &c.

One of them is only negative, as *nenhum*, *nenhuma*; all the rest are Affirmatives.

Note, The Pronouns *meu*, *teu*, *seu*, *nosso*, *vosso*, *hum*, *outro*, and *qual*, mine, thine, his, ours, yours, one (or a) another, or which, are declined with the Definite; but all the rest with the Indefinite Article.

CHAP. V.

Of the Verbs.

TO know how to conjugate the Verbs, and to apply them well, is a very material Thing to speak a Language in Perfection. The Conjugations have been shewn above, and here we shall compile a few Rules how they are to be applied in their proper Moods, and Tenses, Numbers, and Persons.

All the Tenses of Verbs (except the Infinitive) should have before them a Nominative, either express'd or understood, with which they should agree in Number and Person.

Express'd; as *eu amo* I love; *tu ouves*, thou heareſt; *Pedro canta*, *Peter* sings.

Under-

Underſtood; as *amo* I love; *ouvimos*, we hear; *cantam*, they ſing.

☞ The *Portugueſe* as well as *Spaniards*, when they ſpeak to a Perſon whom they reſpect, they put the Verb in the third Perſon Singular; as *V M tem rezão*, you are in the right (your Worſhip is in the right.) When they ſpeak to one whom they have leſs Regard for, they ſay, *Voſſé*, (inſtead of *Voſſa mercé*) *tem rezão*. When they would expreſs ſtill leſs Regard, they ſpeak in the ſecond Perſon Plural, without *V M*, or *Voſſé*, and ſay *tendes rezão*, you are in the right, or you have Reaſon; and the moſt familiar Way of all, as from a Father to a Son, or a Maſter to his Servant, is when they ſpeak in the ſecond Perſon Singular, *tems rezão*, thou haſt right (Reaſon)

The Verb Active governs the Accuſative; as *amo a meu irmão*, I love my Brother; *digo a verdade* I ſay the Truth.

The Verb Paſſive is preceded by a Nominative, and follow'd by an Ablative Caſe; as *os juezes ſão amados dós Principes*, Judges are loved by Princes; *os juezes* ſtanding in the Nominative, and *dós principes* in the Ablative Caſe.

When the Particle *to* follows a Verb the *Portugueſe* as well as the *Engliſh* put the next following Noun in the Dative Caſe; as *dóu a minha irmãa*, I give to my Siſter; *dezia ao principe*, he ſaid to the Prince, which has been ſufficiently explain'd, *p.* 15.

The Conjunctions which are between two Verbs oblige the laſt of the two Verbs to be of the ſame Number, Perſon, and Tenſe with the firſt: Example, the King wills and commands, *o Rey quer e manda*, he ſings and dances very well, *elle*

canta

canta e dansa muito bem; we saw and heard, *vimos e ouvimos*, *&c.*

Of the Moods.

The Indicative has properly no Conjunction belonging to it, tho' sometimes the following are join'd with it, *viz. que*, *se*, *quando*, and *como*, e. g. *o Senhor A. B. escreve, que téndes seu livro*, Mr. A. B. writes that you have his Book; *faz isso se me amas*, do that if you love me? *quando queréys vir*, when will you come? *como tu amas a elles*, *elles te amarám*, as thou loveſt them they will love thee.

The Imperative Mood

Requires neither Preposition nor Conjunction, except only in the third Person Singular and Plural, when it is preceded by another Verb, otherwise not; as *manda que fallem*, order them to speak.

Note, It is a Point of Controversy among the Grammarians whether there is any Difference of Tenses in the Imperative Mood. Some of the *Portuguese* Grammars have two Tenses, *viz.* the Present and Future, whereas in Reality no Command can regard any other than a Future; for the Action must be subsequent to the Command. The second, which they call the Future, is entirely borrow'd from the Future of the Indicative Mood, only with this Alteration, that no first Person is allowed in the Singular, and the Pronoun is put after the Verb. The *Spaniards* have but one Tense in the Imperative, which they call Future, and corresponds with the first Tense of our Imperative; and indeed if two Tenses are to be allowed, the only Difference I can perceive is, that what is commanded by the first is to be executed immediately, but the second at a greater, and not a limited, Distance of Time; for which

Reason

Reason I, not being willing to reject the second entirely, have kept them, and call'd one the first, and the other the second Tense.

The Optative and Conjunctive

Require some Particle before each Tense, tho' the Present is sometimes used without any; as *praça a Deos*, please God; *Deos o fassa*, God grant it. When no Certainty of Action is mark'd, and the Particle *que* is join'd with the Verb, it must always be put in the Optative; as *ha mester que tenha eu*, 'tis necessary I should have. The Conjunctive is very elegantly used on several Occasions, and express'd by the Particle *como*; as *cómo vosso páy vos ama tanto, sente múyto vossa ausência*, as your Father loves you so much, he is much troubled at your Absence; *como vosso páy vos amava, amóu, amára tanto, &c.* and in short the Particle *como* prefix'd to any of the Tenses of the Indicative expresses the Conjunctive Mood.

The *Portuguese* also not inelegantly make use of the Gerund to express the Conjunctive Mood, *e.g. nam vôs coréys de fazer tays cousas, sendo nobre*, for *como soys nobre*, don't you blush (colour) to do such Things, being a Person of Quality; *fugíys, fugístes de vosso pay amando vôs elle tanto*, did you, have you run away from your Father, he loving you so well?

The Conjunctive also is very elegantly (nay more elegantly than by the Particle *como*, or the Gerund) express'd by the Particles *poys* and *depóys*, v. g. *nam me espanto fallardes tam audasmente, poys soys soldado*, I wonder not that thou talkest so boldly since thou art a Soldier; *morréo ao priméiro de Setembro depóys de ser Réy sete annos, óu avendo sete annos que tinha estado Rey*, he died the Seventh of September, after he had been King seven

ven Years, or it being seven Years that he had been King.

The Optative is also join'd with the Particles *posto que*, *se*, *que*, *quenám*, *peraque*, *nám*, *aindaque*, *comtantoque*, altho', if, that, that not, why, why not, altho', whilst or as long as; as, *rogo te que sejas liberal*, I desire thee to be liberal; *pera que sejas liberal*, *&c.*

All Verbs which signify *Will*, *Command*, *Doubt*, *Desire*, *Admiration*, *Supplication*, or *Pretension*, when follow'd by the Conjunction *que*, govern the Subjunctive Mood; as *rogolhe que venha pera minha casa*, I desire him to come to my House; *desejo múito que prospere em seus negocios*, I desire very much that he may prosper in his Business; *quera Deos (praça a Deos) que seja*, God grant he may be.

The Conjunction *aindaque*, altho', always demands the Subjunctive Mood; as, *aindaque seja tempo não quero hir ainda*, altho' it be Time, I do not care to go yet; *aindaque elle o diga não o creyo*, altho' he says it, I do not believe it.

The Infinitive

Has an indeterminate Signification, and can be employ'd neither absolutely nor determinately, except in speaking in general, *e. g. podér vivér*, *e saber viver*, *he a verdadéyra filosofia*, to be able to live, and to know to live is the true Philosophy. Sometimes the Infinitive is elegantly, in Imitation of the *Latin*, made a Substantive, and has the Article *o* prefix'd to it; as *o viver e o morrér sam as cóusas mais certas que témos*, to live and to die are the most certain Things we have; and in this Manner the Particles or Prepositions *nó* and *dó* are often joined with it; as *nó correr nembum o excede*, in Running no one exceeds him; *não se falla do lér agora*, we don't speak now of Reading.

They

They also very elegantly make use of this Mood with the Particle *que*, when we place the Words something or nothing before the Infinitive in *English*; as *tenho que fazer*, I have something to do, *não tenho que escrevér*, I have nothing to write.

The Pronouns *me*, *te*, *se* are often joined with the Infinitive Mood, *v.g. assanharse*, to be exasperated; *entreterse*, to entertain one's self.

When two Verbs are put together, the second commonly is in the Infinitive; as *devo amar*, I must love; *quéro vér*, I desire to see.

Sometimes the Particles *por*, *sem*, *á*, *de*, *pera*, and *em* precede the Infinitive; as *por ser virtuoso me persiguem os máos*, for being virtuous, or because I am virtuous, the Wicked persecute me; *sem ser letrado dóu a minha opinião*, without being a Lawyer, I give my Opinion; *á fallar a verdade*, to speak the Truth, *&c. sey que avéys de ser homem douto*, I know you are to be a learned Man; *prometo de ser fiel*, *jurava de ser fiel*, I promise to be faithful, he swore to be faithful.

When the Verb is in the Infinitive Mood and Future Tense, then the auxiliary Verb *ey* is added; as, *amaturus sum illum*, Latin, *amalo ey*; *laudaturus sum illum*, Latin, *ouvilo ey*, I will love him, I will praise him; *accordarlhe ey*, I will wake him; *agastarse ha*, he will be angry.

When the Particles *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, him, it, her, and them are joined with the Infinitive, the Verb loses the Letter *r*; as *quero louválo*, *louvála*, *louvalos*, *louvalas*, I will praise him and praise it, praise her, praise them; *quero ouvilo*, *ouvila*, I will hear him or it, hear her. But when the Particles *lhe* and *lhes* stand instead of the forementioned Diminutives, the Letter *r* remains in its Place; as, *quero agradecerlhe*, *e agradecerlhes*, I will thank him, her, and thank them; *quero fallarlhe*, *fallarlhes*, I will speak to him, her, speak to them.

When they use the Infinitive to accompany a third Person in the Plural, it is common with the *Portuguese* to add *em*, and to make use of *ser*, *serem*, *amar*, *amarem*. Thus they say, *fico queixoso da minha desdita de faltarem as occasiões de desempemharme*, I remain complaining of my Misfortune to want Opportunities (that Opportunities are wanting) to acquit myself; *não quero os libros por serem elles prohibidos*, I don't care for the Books because they are prohibited: *não quiz accompanhallos por amarem elles a beber tanto*, I did not care to accompany them because they love to drink so much, *&c.*

Remarks on the Tenses.

To avoid Repetition, I refer the Reader to what has been said in the Beginning of this Grammar on this Head.

Since the Preterperfects definite and indefinite are often confounded one with the other, we'll lay down here some Rules to distinguish 'em by. The Preterperfect definite, or second, is employ'd when we speak of a Time perfectly past; and the indefinite or first when the Time is not totally, but past in part, and in part present or passing: For example, in speaking of the last Year, you may not say *tenho escrito huma carta nó anno passado*, I have wrote a Letter last Year, because the Time or Year is entirely past. But to speak properly, we must say *escrevi huma carta nó anno passado*, I wrote a Letter last Year, which Difference is also observ'd in the *English* Tongue; for it would be as improper in *English* to say *I have wrote a Letter last Year*, for *I wrote a Letter last Year*, as it is shocking to a nice Ear in the *Portuguese* to say *tenho escrito*, &c. In speaking of the present Year, which being but in part past, it won't be allow'd me to say *compusey hum livro este anno*,

I composed a Book this Year; but I must say *tenho composto hum livro este anno*, I have composed a Book this Year, which is also more proper in *English*. This Distinction may be acquired by the Ear, but as this is not done but by long Conversation with those who speak the Language in Perfection, I would advise the Beginner not to trust to Practice only in this Article, but to fix well these Remarks in his Mind, since otherwise he may chance to get an ill Habit of confounding these two Tenses, which afterwards is not easily discarded.

The Preterpluperfect and the two Futures are easily distinguish'd by what we have said in the Beginning of this Grammar.

Of the Uncertain Tense.

This Tense is by the Ignorant often put for the Preterimperfect of the Optative Mood. Its Termination is in *ria*, and ought not to be used indifferently for the Preterimperfect but when we speak either conditionally (but then the Condition must follow) or with some Doubt; but it can never take *se*, if, and *aindaque*, altho', before or after it, if you'll speak correctly; and the Preterimperfect must always be preceded by *se*, if, and *aindaque*. By the following Examples you'll perceive how much the Sense of a Period is alter'd by the Difference of these Tenses. To begin with the Uncertain, *daria á Vossa merce dez cruzados se fora homem honrado*, I would give you ten Crusadoes were he an honest Man; *fallaria a verdade se nam recedra o castigo*, I would or should speak the Truth did I not fear the Punishment; and it would be false and contrary to the Idiom of the Language to say *dasse* or *dara dez dobroens*, and *fallara* ou *fallasse a verdade*, *&c.* Example of the

Preterimperfect, *aindaque fallara ou fallasse a verdade, nembum me créra*, tho' I should speak the Truth, no Body will believe me. *Note*, When they use the Imperfect instead of the Uncertain Tense, it is the Termination in *ara*, and not that in *asse*.

Of the Verb Passive.

The Passive Verb or Voice, as we have said at the Conjugations, is made by conjugating the Verbs *sou* and *estou* with the Participle of the past Tense; but the *Portuguese* (as well as the *Spaniards*) commonly express the Passive Voice by joining the Pronoun *se* with the Verb Active in the following Manner. Example,

Pello que o Senhor tem dito se vê o contrario, for *he ou esta visto o contrario*, by what this Gentleman has said, the contrary *sees itself*, for *the contrary is seen or appears.*

As circumstantias se contam, e se deve fazer poco caso de muitas dellas pello odio que se tem a esta gente, Circumstances count themselves, (are counted) and it must make itself little in Case of (and little Regard ought to be had to) many of them, (by the Hatred that holds itself to this People,) or by reason of their Hatred towards this People; *que se diz de novo?* What News says itself, or is said? *que se escreve de novo de Paris?* what News writes itself from Paris, or is wrote from Paris?

The Passive Voice is also sometimes express'd by the third Person in Plural of the Active Verb. Example, *dizem (se diz) que avera guerra*, they say (it is said) there will be a War; *escrevem (se escreve) de Paris que o Rey está com saude*, they write (it is wrote) from Paris that the King is in Health, *&c.*

Of the Gerunds.

The Gerunds in this Language end in *do*; as *amando*, *léndo*, *&c.* in loving, in reading, *&c.* and govern the same Cases as the Verbs of which they are Part, tho' some compose Gerunds by putting the Particles *em*, *pera* and *de*, with the Infinitive Present; as *em dar*, *pera dar*, *de dar*, in giving, of giving; as *escrevéndo essa carta*, in writing that Letter; *fallando á meu pay*, speaking to my Father; by which it appears they govern the same Cases as the Verbs they are derived from; for *carta* stands here in the Accusative, and *a meu pay*, in the Dative.

The Gerunds have neither Tense, Number, or Persons, but agree with all. Example of the Present, *trabalhándo bem nam ha que temer*, in working well he need fear no Body; of the Perfect, *foy feíto escrevendo elle a carta*, it was done when he wrote the Letter. Example for the Number and Person, *eu o veréy*, *vôs o veréys*, *elle os vera passando polla rúa*, I shall see him, you shall see him, he shall see them passing thro' the Street.

Sometimes two Gerunds are join'd together; as *estando escrevendo esta carta recebí a vossa*, whilst I was writing this Letter I received yours; *morréo de repente*, *estando disputando dá morte*, he died suddenly whilst he was disputing about Death.

The Verb and Gerund are also sometimes Companions; as *espiróu avendo quatro annos intéiros que jazía entrevado*, he died (expired) having lain four whole Years bedridden.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Participles.

THE Participles are of three Sorts, *viz.* of the *Past*, *Present*, and *Future Tense*; as *amado*, beloved; *amante*, *(o que ama)* loving, or he that loves, and *o que tem de amar*, he that shall or will, or is to love.

When that of the Past Tense is composed with the Verb *ser*, to be, then the Participle ought to agree with the foregoing Noun Substantive in Gender and Number. Example, the Captain is beloved, *o capitam he amado*; Virtue is esteemed, *a virtude he estimado*; the Lazy will be blamed, *os preguiçosos seram culpados*; those Houses will be sold, *essas casas seram vendidas.*

The Participle of the Past Tense, strictly taken, infers a Passive Signification; as *lido*, read, *amado*, loved, *ouvido*, heard; but the *Portuguese* (and *Spaniards)* often use it also in the Active Sense; as *como vôs tenho escrita muitas cartas, e não ey recebido nenhuma reposta*, as I have wrote you many Letters, and have not received any Answer.

☞ The *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* very elegantly make use of this Participle with the Ablative absolute, to imitate their Mother Tongue, the *Latin*; thus they say *acabada a céa se foy á dormir*, Supper being ended, he went to sleep, *(finita cœna ivit cubitum)*; *tirada a causa cessa o efféito*, the Cause being taken away, the Effect ceases *(ablata causa cessat effectus)*; *partido vosso pay chegóu vôssa irmãa*, when your Father was departed, your Sister arrived; in this Case the Gerunds *sendo* and *avendo* are understood; as *a cea senda acabada, se foy a dormir, a causa sendo,*

sendo, tirada cessa o effeito; o vosso pay sendo partido chegou vossa irmãa.

The Participles of the Present Tense, *amante*, loving, *ouvente*, hearing, *&c.* are of the common Gender, and are declined like Nouns Adjective, and must agree with the Noun or Pronoun they are joined with in Number and Case; as, *os ouvintes (homens) & as ouvintes (mulheres) isto por certo não dizem, que tendes rezão*, these (Men or Women) who are hearing it, for certain do not say that you have right; but the *Portuguese* commonly express this Participle by the Indicative Present, join'd with the Particles *o* or *a*, which they decline, and the Pronoun *que*. Example, *os (homens) & as (mulheres) que ouvem isto, por certo, não dizem que tendes rezão*, the (Men and Women) which hear that, for certain, do not say that you have right.

The Participle of the Future Tense is of two Voices, *viz.* the Active and Passive. That of the Active *o que tem de amar, ler, ouvir*, he that is to love, read, or hear, is likewise adapted to the Gender and Number of the Noun it is join'd with, by declining the Article *o* and *a*, and putting the Verb *tenho* in the Number and Person agreeable thereunto; as *os homens & as mulheres que tem de amar, ler, ouvir*, the Men or Women that are to love.

The Participle of the Future Tense in the Passive Voice is *o & a que ha ou tem de ser amado, amada; os & as que ham ou tem de ser amados, amadas*, he or she that is to be loved; they (both Masculine and Feminine) that are to be loved: Which is also regulated by the Article and Verb in the Masculine Gender or Plural Number, as the Noun demands in it; Example, *o livro que ha de ser escrito*, the Book that is to be writ; *as cartas*

que

que ham de ser lidas, the Letters that are to be read.

CHAP. VII.

Of the Adverbs.

THE Grammarians differ about these Words, *déntro*, *fora*, *emcíma*, *embaixo*, *antes*, and *diante*, some putting them in the Rank of Adverbs, and others placing them among the Prepositions; and they are both Adverbs and Prepositions. When they are follow'd by nothing they are Adverbs; as *esta dentro*, he is within; *vay fora*, he goes out or abroad; *esta encima*, he is on the Top; *esta debaixo*, he is below; *vay antes*, he goes before; *vay diante*, he goes before, because they here maintain the Character of Adverbs, which is, they are join'd with Verbs to declare or explain the Manner of their Signification. They are Prepositions when they are follow'd by some Case of a Noun; as *esta dentro ná casa*, he is in the House; *esta fora da casa*, he is out of the House, *&c.*

The Adverb is always put before the Adjective and Participle, but follows the Verb; as *este hómem he muito barbaro*; this Man is very barbarous; *estóu bem persuadido*, I am well persuaded.

The Adverbs in their Order are as follow.

Adverbs of Time.

Agora, *now.*
Ja, *already.*
Ja entám, *then already.*
Jamáys, *never.*
Jagora, *just now.*
Tarde, *late.*
Sedo, *soon, early.*
Entám, entonces, *then.*
Sempre, *ever.*
Nunca, *never.*
Ao presente, *at present.*
Algumahóra, *sometimes.*
Aínda, *yet.*
Antesque, *before.*
Supitamente, *suddenly.*

Cada

Cada dia, *daily.*
Hoje, *to-day.*
Amenhám, *to-morrow.*
Depóis, *afterwards.*
Ontem, *yesterday.*
Desde, *since then.*
Dáqui adiante, *hence-forward.*
Entretanto, *mean while.*

Adverbs of Place.

Aqui, *here.*
Allí, *there.*
Acolá, *in this or that Place.*
Daquí, *hence.*
Pera alli, *hither.*
Atelí, *hitherto.*
Cá, *hither.*
La onde, *there, where.*
Onde, *where.*
Ondequer, *wherever.*
Dentro, *within.*
Fora, *without.*
Alem, *on the other Side.*
Acima, *above.*
Debáixo, *below.*

Adverbs of Quantity.

Múyto, *much.*
Póuco, *little.*
Assas, bastantemente, *enough.*
Demasiado, *too much.*
Abundantemente, *abundantly.*
Muyto máis, *much more.*
Pouco máis, *a little more.*
Pouco mais ou menos, *little more or less.*

Adverbs of Quality.

Prudenteménte, *prudently.*
Atrevidaménte, *boldly.*
Eleganteménte, *elegantly*
Adréde, *dextrously.*
Suavamente, *sweetly.*
Discretamente, *discreetly*
Engenhosamente, *ingeniously.*
Galantemente, *gallantly.*
Legeyramente, *neatly.*
Gentilmente, *genteely.*
Facilmente, *easily.*

Adverbs of Number.

As vezes, *sometimes.*
Vez, vézes, *Time, Times.*
Muitas vézes, *oftentimes.*
Huma vez, *once.*
Quatro vézes, *four times.*
Cem mil vézes, *hundred thousand times.*

Adverbs Negative.

Nam, *not.*
Ainda nam, *not yet.*
Nomáys, *no more.*
Nãada, *nothing.*
Tam póuco, *neither.*
Nunca, jamais, *never.*
Reparay vos, *look ye.*

Adverbs

Adverbs demonstrating.

Eisaqui, *behold.*
Além disto, *moreover, besides.*
Finalmente, *finally.*
Em fin, *at last.*
Dedesque, *since.*
Eylo aqui, *look here.*

Adverbs of Doubt.

Por ventura, *perhaps.*
A caso, *perchance.*

Adverbs Interrogatory.

Como, *how.*
Por que rezám, *wherefore.*
A que proposito, *to what Purpose.*
Para que, *why.*
Que, *what.*

Adverbs of Uniting.

Apar, juntamente, *together.*
Entreambos, *between both.*

Adverbs of Separation.

Aparte, *singly.*
Seperadamente, *separately.*
Espalhadamente, *scatteringly.*
Apartadamente, *distinctly.*

Adverbs of Intention.

Fortissimamente, *strongly.*
Intensissimamente, *most intensely.*
Com grande cuydado, *most studiously.*

Adverbs of Remitting.

Póuco á póuco, *little by little.*
Passo á passo, *step by step.*
Preguisosamente, *idly.*
Froxamente, *remisly.*

Adverbs of Hastening.

Depressa, *quickly.*
Apressadamente, *hastily.*
Arrebadamente, *furiously.*
Em hum instante, *instantly.*
Logo, *presently.*

Adverbs of Comparison.

Assim como, *so as.*
Quasi, *almost.*
Como, *as.*
Máys, *more.*
Menos, *less.*

Adverbs of Choice.

Antes, *rather.*
Dóutra manéyra, *otherwise.*

Debalde,

Debalde, envám, *in vain.*
Atravéz, *transversly.*
Ao contrario, *on the contrary.*
A olhos vistos, *openly.*
A longe, *afar off.*
De perto, *near.*
Ao menos, *at least.*
á pe de letra, *by prescription.*
Ao redor, *about.*
Ao vivo, *to the life.*
Aos cóuces, *by the heels.*
A outro propósito, *for another End.*
De corrida, *nimbly.*
Diariamente, *daily.*
As escondidas, *privately.*
De dia em dia, *from day to day.*
De gatinhas, *creeping.*
De galope, *leaping.*
De giolhos, *kneeling.*
Davesso, *tranversly.*
Debilmente, *weakly.*

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Conjunctions.

THE several Sorts of Conjunctions are Copulatives, Disjunctives, Causals, Illatives, of Opposition, Exception, Conditionals of Doubting, of Declaration, of Interrogation, of Comparison, of Augmentation, of Diminution, *&c.*

The chief Conjunction Copulative is *e*, and, which is used as in all other Languages; *tambem*, *tanto*, *quanto*, *como*, *nem*, and *tampoco*, are of the same Order.

Tambem, also, or as well, is always placed at the End of the Phrase; as *vossé o quer*, *e eu tambem*, you desire it (will have it) and I also.

Tanto, *quanto*, *como*, always speak with a Relation to other Things.

Nem disjoins the Parts of the Period as to the Sense, but unites them in the Period; as *não he nem homem nem mulher*, it is neither, Man nor Woman; *tampoco*, neither, is used after the same Manner.

Ou is a Disjunctive, and is used in the same Sense as *vel* in *Latin*, and *or* in *English*.

Porém, entretanto, com todo isso, sem embargo, but, mean while, for all that, notwithstanding, are of Opposition, and are employ'd in Discourse as the *English* Words that signify them.

Senam, and *amenos que*, if not, and unless that, are of the excepting kind; *senam* stands sometimes for but; as *não quero senam isso*, I desire but that.

Se, if, *posto que*, and *supposto que*, supposing that, are of the conditional Order, and are join'd with the Subjunctive Mood; as *se não ouvera lido*, if I had not read; *posto que eu venha, &c.* suppose I come. *Quando*, when, is sometimes used for a Conjunction of this Sort, and in such Case 'tis always joined with the Subjunctive; as *se* or *quando fallára bem, entonces, &c.* if he would speak well, then, *&c.*

Declaratives are, *he de saber*, to wit, and *como*, as, which govern neither Mood nor Tense of any Verb.

Paraque, áque, sobre que, porque, wherefore, for what, upon what, for why, are Interrogatives; as *não sey porque, nem paraque*, I don't know for what nor wherefore; *por que rezão*, for what reason; *á que proposito*, to (for) what purpose.

Augmentatives and Diminutives are, *o demas, aindaque, ao menos*, for the rest, altho', at least, *&c.*

Causal Conjunctions are such as mark the Reason of Things done; they answer the *Latin*, *quia, ergo, enim*. Such are *pois, porque, como, emquanto, logo, á fim que*, then, because, as, inasmuch, presently, to the End that.

The Particle *que* is the most frequent of all Conjunctions, and of the most Importance to be taken notice of; it is both a Pronoun and a Conjunction, but the latter is what we speak of here.

When

When it is not preceded by any Verb, it is a kind of Exclamation; as *que me exponha á fazer isso he impossibel*, that I should expose me to do what is impossible. When *que* is preceded by a Verb, that Verb must be in the Indicative, and the Verb following *que* in Subjunctive; as *duvido que o Réy aja chegado á, &c.* I doubt that the King is not arrived, *&c.*

☞ Observe here, that the *Portuguese* as well as the *Spaniards*, *French*, and *Italians*, join no Negative with the Verb *I doubt*, as the *English* do. Thus the *Portuguese* say, *duvido que o Rey aja chegado*, and not *que o Rey não aja chegado.*

But when *que* answers the *Latin quam*, how, it governs the Indicative Mood; as *o que fermosa he esta mulher!* O how handsome is that Woman! I need say nothing more about this Particle, for if the Student observes these Rules, and is careful in distinguishing when it stands for the Pronoun *what*, or for the Conjunction *that* and the Adverb *how*, he will find no Difficulty in using it correctly.

CHAP. IX.

Of the Preposition.

THE Prepositions, as has been said in the Chapter of the Parts of Speech, are indeclinable Particles join'd with *Nouns*, *Pronouns*, and *Verbs*, to declare their Signification.

As the *a* is not only a Preposition, but also a Particle used in a very different Manner, I shall, by the following Explanation, shew how you may discern when it is a Preposition and when a Particle.

1. It is indeclinable when it is in Composition, as it often is both with Nouns, Pronouns, Verbs, and Adverbs, and sometimes augments or diminishes the Signification; as *adinhéirado*, to be full of Money, compounded of *a* and *dinheiro*; it is the Participle of *adinhéirar*, to heap up Money; *ajoelhárse*, to kneel, is a Verb Neuter reciprocal, compounded of *a* and *joelho*, a Knee; *adiante* is an Adverb, compounded of *a* and *diante*.

2. It is a Particle when it stands between two Infinitives; as *começar à jurar*, to begin to swear.

3. It is a Particle when it follows a Participle or Adjective, and is follow'd by an Infinitive Mood; as *estóu prompto à obedecér*, I am ready to obey.

4. It is a Particle when it is between two Nouns of Number, or more properly between a Noun of Number and its Repetition; as *ir dous à dous*, to go two and two; *quatro à quatro*, four and four; *viéram duzia à duzia*, they came by Dozens.

5. When it marks a Distance of Time or Place, it is a Particle; as *vive vinte milhas de Londres*, he lives twenty Miles from London.

6. The *a* is a Preposition marking the Dative Case in the Declension of a Noun proper, whether Masculine or Feminine; as *escrever a Pedro*, to write to Peter; *á Juão*, *á Maria*, *&c.* I say it marks the Dative in Nouns proper; for in the declining of Substantives of the common Order it takes to itself an *o*; as *escrever ao Rey*, to write to the King; but when the Noun is of the Feminine Gender, the Particle cannot be distinguish'd from the Article, except that some who are nice in their Orthography put the Accent Grave upon the *à* when a Particle, and an Acute (*á*) when a Preposition.

7. The *a* marks the Accusative after a Verb Active; as *amar a Deos*, to love God; *imitar aos Santos*, to follow the Example of Saints.

It

It may be objected that there is no Dfference between *escrever á Pedro*, to write to *Peter*, and *amar a Deos*, to love God; for if the *a* before *Pedro* signifies the Dative, it ought also to do the same before *Deos*; to which I answer, that to make the Distinction you must observe, that when it comes after a Verb Neuter it marks a Dative, and after a Verb Active an Accusative Case, and besides, that it is the Sign of the Dative Case to Nouns proper only. These Rules, I doubt not, with some Application, will soon render the Learner Master of this nice Distinction.

De sometimes signifies a Preposition, and sometimes a Particle; when it marks the Quality, Cause, or Manner of doing a Thing, or answers to the Sign of the Genitive in *English*, it is no Preposition, but a Particle; as *he hum homem de mãa vida*, he is a Man of an ill Life.

When *de* answers the *English from*, or *out of*, it is a Preposition; as *não tirye isso de mim*, you shall not take that from me.

De is also a Preposition when it stands before Adverbs of Place or Time; as *de aqui nó diante*, from henceforward; also when found before Verbs in the Infinitive Mood; as *he tempo de partir*, it is Time to depart.

Em, in, whence, *nó* and *ná*, in, and *dentro*, within, are also Prepositions; and to apply them justly, you are to observe, that when you speak of the Time past, the Preposition *em* is required; and for the Time to come you are to use the Word *dentro*, and not *em*, *nó*, or *ná*; as *lí as obras de Tasso em quinze dias*, and not *dentro de quinze dias*, I have read the Works of Tasso in a Fortnight; *chegárey a Londres dentro de tres dias*, I will be at London within (in) three Days; *nó* and *ná*, and *nós* and *nas*, are a Contraction of *em o* and *em a*, *em os*, *em as*; they are put before the Nouns

to signify the Preposition *em*, and the Article belonging to the Word at the same Time; as *não ha nó mundo*, there is not in the World, for *não ha em o mundo*; and *não ha ná casa*, for *não ha em a casa*; thus *de o* and *de a* are contracted into *dó* and *dá*, and *de os*, *de as*, into *dós*, *dás*; which has been observed above.

Antes signifies a Priority in Time; as *Deos creó á Adam antes dó diluvio*, God created *Adam* before the Flood.

Diante is a Preposition both of Place and Order, and often answers to the *Latin coram*, before; as *tenho minha casa diante o paço*, my House is before the Palace; *póem essa camisa diante dó fogo*, put this Shirt before the Fire; *estávamos diante dó Réy*, we were before the King; *vossé va diante de mim*, you go before me.

Ante sometimes signifies Priority, and sometimes it has the Force of the *Latin coram*; as *ante todas cóusas he mester lér*, before all Things it is necessary to read, *&c. ante nós secretarios*, before us Secretaries, which however is better express'd by *diante*.

Perto, about, marks a Nearness of Time, Things, and Place, and requires the Genitive Case of Nouns, and the Infinitive of Verbs, with the Particle *de*; as *perto dá huma*, *perto dás tres*, about One, about Three a-Clock; *está perto de perecer*, he is near perishing.

Depois, since or after, is both of Time and Place; when 'tis of Time it answers the *English since*; as *depois dó diluvio*, since the Deluge; and *depois de aver escrito esta carta*, after I had writ this Letter. When it denotes a Place, it answers the *English after*, and will in that Sense also have the Genitive; *vossé deve ir depóis de Pedro*, you ought to go after *Peter*.

Detraz is also of Place, and answers the *English behind*.

Con

Com is the same with, and is used exactly like the *English with*; for like that it marks Union, the Instrument and the Manner; as *con migo*, with me.

Entre is both of Place and Time, and answers to the *English between* and *betwixt*; as *entre a creação dó mundo e o diluvio*, between the Creation of the World and the Deluge; *entre o dia dó nacimento e a Pascoa sam múytos dias*, between Christmas-Day and Passover are many Days. In these Examples 'tis plain that Preposition signifies Time; but in the following it denotes Place, as *o ar está entre o céo e a terra*, the Air is betwixt Heaven and Earth; *entre Londres e Lisbóa*, betwixt London and Lisbon.

Fora answers to the *English out*, except when it is used for an Exceptive; *está fora dá casa*, he is out of the House; *fora dó reyno*, out of the Kingdom. It is Exceptive in the following Examples, *eu consento, fora dó ir á Roma*, I consent, except of the going to Rome; *todos se fóram fora menos tres óu quatro*, all went away except three or four. The Words *salvo* and *senão*, except, are often with more Elegance apply'd than *fora*, particularly when it happens to fall in with a Word which resembles it in Sound, as here it doth with *fóram*, where the Jingle takes off the Smoothness of the Sound; therefore you say more elegantly *todos se fóram salvo tres óu quatro*.

The Preposition *para* is put before an Infinitive Mood, or between two Infinitives; as *para morrer bem*, for to die well; *o que dizes he fallar para fallar*, what thou say'st is talking for talking sake.

This Preposition marks the Motive, Cause, Reason, or End of Things being done; it shews why and for what; as *Deos crió todo o mundo para seu servicio*, God created all the World for his Service; *eu fiz huma casa para os pobres*, I have made a House for the Poor; *este homem he bom*

para hum secretario, this Man is good for a Secretary: It denotes also Conveniency; as *esta casa he muy pequena para mim*, this House is very little for me.

It is also a Preposition of Time, tho' in the Future only; for when we speak in the Present or Perfect Tense, we must use *por*, and not *para*, as we shall observe in speaking of that Preposition; as *agora e para sempre séja o nómem de Déos louvado*, now and for ever let the Name of God be praised.

The Preposition *por* denotes the Cause efficient of a Thing, or the Motive of doing or ordering that Thing. The efficient Cause, as *Deos crio todo por sua omnipotencia*, God created all by his Omnipotence. It marks the Motive of some Action; as *todo o que faz he por vingança*, all what he doth is for (out of) Vengeance; *he féito isto por essóutro*, I have done this for the other.

Por answers to the *Latin pro*, *v. g. eu vos tenho por amigo*, I hold you for a Friend; *a cidade está por o Rey*, the City is for the King; *trocáyme este cavallo por hum óutro*, change me this Horse for another. Sometimes *por* stands for the *Latin propter*, by reason of, *v. g. por aver grande tempestade*, by reason of a great Tempest; and in this Sense the Words *amor*, or *causa*, are sometimes join'd with it; as *por amor dás neves*, and *por causa das neves não passo os Alpes*, by reason of the Snow I don't pass the Alps.

When *por* is join'd to the Article *o* and *a*, the *r* is changed into *l*; as *pólo amor de Deos*, for God's sake; *póla honra*, &c.

Per is apply'd when they design to shew the Medium by which we proceed in any Action; as *eu vôs mostrarèy per rezóens evidentes*, I will shew you by evident Reasons; *este livro fóy composto per Virgilio*, this Book was composed by Virgil.

When

When *per* is join'd to the Articles *o* and *a*, it makes *pélo* and *péla*; as *pélo caminho*, by the way; *péla terra*, thro' the Earth.

Contra, against, denotes Opposition and Place, and in both it is apply'd exactly like the *English*; as *elle váy contra maré e vento*, he goes against Tide and Wind; *contra minha vontade*, against my Will; *contra toda rezão*, against all Reason: It marks a Place in the following Example, *o cam meijó contra á parede*, the Dog piss'd against the Wall.

Além, besides, when join'd with the Infinitive, requires the Particle *de*; as *alem de comer quiz beber*, besides eating he wanted to drink; but when put with the finite Moods, it requires *de que* or *dó que*; as *além dó que tinha féito queria*, *&c.* besides what he had done he wanted, *&c.*

Desde and *até*, from and until, denote both Time and Place; as *désde aquelle tempo até agora*, from that Time to this Time, (till now,) *desde aquella casa*, *até esta casa*, from that House to (till) this House.

Sem, without, answers the *Latin absque* and *sine*, and goes before the Noun and Verb, and governs the Accusative Case; *he homem sem honra*, he is a Man without Honour; *léyo sem applicação*, I read without Application.

Sobre answers in every Thing to the *English upon* and *over*, and therefore 'tis not necessary to say any Thing about it.

Debaixo is a Preposition both of Time and Place; it marks a Time when it marks the Reign of any Prince; as *debáixo dó Império de Leopoldo*, under or in the Reign of Leopold. It denotes a Place; as *méus çapátos estám debáixo dá cama*, my Shoes stand under the Bed. It signifies a Subordination; as *os soldados estam debaixo dá autoridade dó general*, the Soldiers are under the Authority

of the General; and also in the metaphorical Sense it answers to the *English under* and *below*; as *engana seu próximo debáixo dá capa de devoçam*, he cheats his Neighbour under the Cloak of Devotion.

Em cima, above or upon, answers the *English* Sense without Exception; thus you say, *em cima dá mesa*, upon the Table; *se ha posto em cima de todo o mundo*, he has put (set) himself above all the World.

CHAP. X.

Of the Interjections.

THE Interjections we have already observ'd, serve to express the Passions and different Emotions of the Mind, *viz.* Joy, Grief, Desire, Fear, Aversion, and Admiration, and often one and the same Word has different Significations, according to the Tone it is pronounced with; *oh se*, oh if! *oxala*, would to God! *hay me*, ah me! *heu*, alas, for pity! *mofino de mim*, oh miserable me! *animo amigos*, Courage my Friends, *&c.* But as they are very easy, and correspond with the *English* Idiom, and as also they can cause no Difficulty when you meet 'em in Authors, they sufficiently declaring themselves, these Examples may suffice.

Of the ORTHOGRAPHY *of the* Portuguese *Language.*

FIRST, All Proper Names and Sirnames, or Relatives derived from Appellatives, are written with a great Character in the Beginning, *viz. Joam, Pedro, Maria, Costa.* As also all Proper

per Names of Kingdoms, Provinces, Cities, Towns, Mountains, Arms, Rivers, Fountains, Months of the Year, Names of Gods and Goddesses, Nymphs, Furies, *&c.* as *Portugal*, *Andalusia*, *Lisbóa*, *Madrid*, *Olympo*, *Téjo*, *Arethúsa*, *Janéyro*, *Júpiter*, *Venus*, &c. So also of Adjectives; as *Románo*, *Portuguéz*, *Ingréz*, *Francéz*, a Roman, a Portuguese, an Englishman, a Frenchman; and Appellatives of any great Dignity; as of an Emperor, King, Prince, Duke, Lord, Bishop, *&c.* and the Beginning of every Chapter or Section, and after every final Period, which Rules are also observed in other Languages.

2. Abbreviations common in the *Portuguese* Tongue are, *V. Mag. Vossa Magestade*; *V. A. Vossa Alteza*; *V. E. Vossa Excellencia*; *V S. Vossa Senhoria*; *V. M. Vossa Mercé*; *O R. N S. O Rey Nosso Senhor*; all which are written with great Characters; of which see the Letters.

3. No *Portuguese* Word either begins or ends with a double Consonant; as *rr* or *ss*; thus it would be superfluous to write *quall* with two *ll*, because the Sound of the last Consonant is entirely lost.

4. The Letter *m* is always written before *b*, *m*, *p*; as *embravecer*, *immovel*, *impar*. The Letter *n* is always written before *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *t*; e. g. *trónco*, *póndo*, *confissão*, *angústia*, *enleádo*, *anno*, *enregelado*, *insinuado*, *entesado*; except the Compounds of the Adverbs *bem* and *circum*, as *bemestreado*, *bemquisto*, *circumferencia*, *circumflexo*, &c.

5. The Pauses in Writing or Reading are express'd first by a Comma (,) which is used for a Distinction of what we write, and in Discourse to give a little Ease for Respiration. The chief Use of it is after a Verb, with its Cases, at the End of every little Clause, *v. g. quem ama a Deos, ama o proximo*, he that loves God, loves his Neighbour.

bour. It is also placed after a Conjunction before a Relative, *viz. aquelle he verdadeyraménte prudente, e sabio, que com todo, &c.* he (or that Man) is truly prudent, and wise, who with all, *&c.* It has also its Place before Adjectives, when many occur in the same Case, *v.g. quem quizér, ser, nobre, bom, prudente, liberal, &c.* he that desires to be noble, good, prudent, liberal, *&c.* Also before Substantives, as, *as virtudes moráys sam quatro, prudencia, justicia, temperancia, fortaleza,* the moral Virtues are four, Prudence, Justice, Temperance, and Fortitude. It is also used after simple Verbs, without any Case; as *pequéy, fallando, obrando, &c.* I have sinned in speaking, working, *&c.*

But it is difficult to explain the Difference there is betwixt a Colon (:) and a Semicolon (;). The Colon is a compleat Sentence, but the Sense of the Period is not quite finished. A Semicolon is a Sentence, but something is wanting to make it perfect; and as the Colon is a Division of the Period; so the Semicolon is a Subdivision of a Colon. This last Period may serve for an Example; but this nice Distinction must chiefly be learnt by Practice. The Colon is used when we quote the Words of any Author, *e. g. dizía Salamão: nenhúma cóusa he de todo perféita,* Solomon said: nothing is perfect in every Part. In the same manner, when we promise to say something, as *diréy ao que me maldiçoár: húyva como lobo, más mam me mordes como cam,* I shall say to him that shall speak ill of me: howl like a Wolf, but bite me not like a Dog.

A single Point is used when the Sense of a Sentence is compleatly consummated; of which Observation will easily inform you.

The Interrogative Sign is made thus (?) and is used upon all Questions, *v g. porque a timesmo nam conheces?* why dost thou not know thyself?

porque

porque nam conservas o téu? why dost thou not preserve thy own? After the Sign of Interrogation the next following Word should begin with a great Letter.

The Sign of an Interjection is (!) which likewise requires a great Character after it.

A Parenthesis is known by two Half-Moons or Half-Circles, which inclose some Words, and exempt them from the rest of the Sentence, *v. g. o pecadór (se se nam emendár) sem dúvida sera punido*, the Sinner (if he doth not mend) without doubt will be punish'd. So likewise when an Author is quoted; as *bem aventurada sera a Republica (dizia Platam) ná qual os filósofos réynem*, happy will be the Republick (said *Plato*) in which Philosophers govern.

The *&c.* is an Abbreviation of the *Latin* Words *et cætera*, and the rest, and is made use of to express that the Sentence is not perfectly finish'd, and that something which is not very material, or obvious to every one, is left for the Reader (or Hearer) to imagine.

The *v. g. verbi gratia*, in *English* to say, and *e. g. exempli gratia*, for Example, are apply'd when something is to be alledg'd to illustrate what has been said before.

The Asterisks and other Signs we omit for Brevity's sake, as being what Custom in Reading and Writing will introduce of course.

The ETYMOLOGY. *Observations on the Nature of the Language itself.*

THE *Spaniards* pretend the *Portuguese* is a Bastard of their Language, and endeavour to prove it from History, and the Idiom of the Lan-

Language itself, and many Words which appear to be a Contraction of the *Spanish* in some measure, seem to confirm it; as *pó*, *só*, *cor*, *dino*, *leóa*, *voár*, *ter*, *pór*, *soar*, *cear*, *suar*, *ler*, *&c.* in *Spanish* *polvo*, *solo*, *color*, *digno*, *leona*, *volar*, *tener*, *poner*, *sonar*, *cenar*, *sudar*, Dust, alone, Colour, worthy, a Lioness, to fly, to hold, to put, to sound, to sup, to sweat, *&c.* But as these Words all proceed from the *Latin*, the *Portuguese* have perhaps as good a Right to say the *Spaniards* have borrow'd 'em from them, and made them longer, as that they should have had 'em from the *Spaniards*, and made them shorter. 'Tis true, the *Spaniards* were Masters of *Portugal* for a considerable Time, and probably introduced many of their Words into that Nation, as the *French* have done likewise; but, as upon account of a Settlement the *Romans* had in *Portugal* as well as in *Spain*, it is more than probable they had their Language immediately from the *Latin*; I don't therefore see how the *Spaniards* should be allow'd the Honour of fathering this Language, altho' it owes perhaps some Words to them.

The *Portuguese* then derives its Original from the *Latin*, and that it retains a greater Affinity to it than any other Language, is what they much contend for. They can produce whole Sentences which are both good *Latin* and *Portuguese*, and in both Languages express the same Sense; as *durante isto vento tam contrario, tu toleras duras & injustas miserias*, during that so contrary Wind, thou suffereſt hard and unjust Miseries; *supplico vos, o Principes, amantes causas publicas!* I intreat you, O Princes, loving publick Causes! If I had not been scrupulous in these Examples, even to a Letter, and if I had thought the Reader would allow a small Alteration, as from *us* to *o*, or from *nt* to *m*, or some such trifling Changes,

I could have inserted considerable Passages of *Portuguese* all *Latin* Words. And for this Reason the *Portuguese* seem to have retained a greater Affinity to the *Latin* than any other of its Descendants: Besides, that their Construction is very like the *Latin*, and that they endeavour to pronounce as they write, and write as they pronounce, are doubtless also reasonable Arguments for the Purity of their Language. But as we have said somewhat already in the Preface on this Head, we forbear saying any more here, to avoid needless Repetitions, and proceed to make our Observations on the Nature of the Language itself.

Such Words as are naturally and originally *Latin*, ought to be written and express'd in the same Characters; as *terra*, *massa*, *syllaba*, except such Words which in their Pronunciation alter their Sound, *v. g.* the Word *choro* in *Latin* is written with an *h*, and signifies a Choir and Concert of Musick; but in the *Portuguese* with an *h* signifies Lamentation, and *coro* signifies a Concert and Choir. In the same Manner we are not to write *parocho*, but *paroco*; and *caridade*, not *charidade*; *monarca*, not *monarcha*, and the like, because by the *h* the Syllables obtain a quite different Sound.

When the *Latin* Letter is doubled, the *Portuguese* commonly follow their Example; as *aggravar*, *aggravo*; *exaggerar*, *exaggeraçam*.

The *Latin ti* is commonly changed into *ç*, *ci* or *s*; as in *graça*, *presença*, *doença*, *paciência*, *clemência*, *violência*.

The *c* in *Latin* Words adapted to this Language, is often changed into *u* or *y*; as *doutór*, *reytór*, *perfeyto*, *efféito*, from *doctor*, *rector*, *perfectus*, *effectus*, &c.

As for Words where there is any Doubt whether the Letter *s* or *z* is to be used, having both the same Sound, they generally follow the *Latin*; as

as they write *uso*, and not *uzo*; *applauso*, not *applauzo*; *causa*, not *cauza*, and the like.

They generally change the Letters *ph* into *f*; as in *filósofo*, *ortographia*, *Felippe*, &c.

The Words the *Latins* write with a Diphthong the *Portuguese* express with a single Vowel; as *Ethiopia*, *Æthiopia*; *edificio*, *ædificium*; *estio*, *æstas*; *herdeyró*, *hæres*; *pena*, *pœna*; *feno*, *fœnum*.

No *Portuguese* Words end in the following Consonants, *viz.* *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *n*, *p*, *q*, *t*, *x*; but only in *l*, *m*, *r*, *s*, *z*.

Vowels in general are not doubled if they are of the same kind, and belong to the same Word; I say of the same kind, because in the Word *mentíys* *i* and *y* are Vowels of a different kind; and I say belonging to the same Word, because when we say *vendoa* and *amavaa*, for *a vendo* and *a amava*, the two last Vowels are not duplicate, but one Vowel is joined to the other, which is an Article; and in *irmãa*, *maçãa*, &c. the *aa* is not to be consider'd as two distinct Vowels, because they soften themselves into one Syllable.

As for Consonants, it is certain that the Letters *x* and *z* can never be duplicate. The doubling of *r* and *s*, the Ear is the best Judge to distinguish it; for single and double they have two different Sounds; the one soft and weak, as in *amara*; the other harsher and stronger, as in *amarra*, a Cable. The same may be observ'd of the Letter *s*; as in the Words *caso* and *casso*, a Fork or Flesh-Hook; but as to these the distinguishing Ear and Practice of Conversation will give the best Rules. In the Word *accento* we easily perceive a double Consonant, and 'tis not difficult at all to be distinguish'd from the Word *acento*; yet there are some Words in which Use rather than the Ear teach us whether the Consonants are duplicate or no; as for Example, in the Words *afforár*,

forár, *affinár*, *affogár*, to pay Tribute, to refine, to strangle. And it ought to be observ'd (as above) that in all Words derived from the *Latin*, the *Portuguese* love to imitate them in doubling of Consonants, as in the Words *affinidáde*, *aggravár*, *communicár*; so *elle*, *amasse*, *lesse*, *ouvisse*, *fosse*.

The *s* and *c*, before *e* and *i*, have the same Sound in *Portuguese*, and to distinguish them in Writing, there is no other Rule than that the Words deriving from the *Latin* ought to be written with the same Letters; as *cebóla*, *cidáde*, *senádo*, *&c.* and not *sebóla*, *sidade*, *cenado*. The same should be observ'd also about the Letters *s* and *z*, that tho' they have the same Sound they ought not to be used promiscuously; as *mensa* in *Latin* is in *Portuguese mesa*, and not *meza* with a *z*; so they write *casa*, not *caza*.

The *Latin* Words ending in *x* change the *x* for a *z* in the *Portuguese* Language; thus *pax*, *perdix*, *vox*, *lux*, are in *Portuguese paz*, *perdíz*, *voz*, *luz*, &c.

The *ç*, or *c* with its *Plica* at Bottom, is often used for a double *s*; but when the Word is derived from the *Latin*, it is justly deemed a Mistake if you should write *ç* for *ss*; thus you are to write, *passo*, *massa*, *professar*, not *paço*, *maça*, *profeçar*.

Of the Prosodie, *or Accentuation of the Syllables.*

THE Quantity of Syllables is either short or long, tho' some pretend to introduce a sort of a middle Pronunciation, between short and long; which however, to avoid Confusion, we shall take no notice of.

And

And for the sake of observing a regular Method, we shall begin with those that have the Penultima in *a*.

The Words ending in *aba*, *abo*, *aca*, *aco*, *acha*, *acho*, *aça*, *aço*, *ada*, *ado*, *afa*, *afo*, *aga*, *agem*, *agre*, *agro*, *alha*, *alho*, *ala*, and *alo*, have their Penultima's long, except *lévado*, *cágado*, *estómago*, *ámago*, *scándalo*, *bígamo*, *píramo*, &c. and some other Words derived from the *Latin*, which are short. Also the Penultima's in *apo*, *apa*, *aque*, *ara*, *aro*, *arra*, *arro*, *ata*, *ato*, *ava*, *avo*, *axa*, *axo*, *aza*, and *azo*, are long, tho' not without Exception; as *cántaro*, *púcaro*, *lúparo*, *tártaro*, &c. and *cóncavo* and *bísavo*, which are short.

The Penultima in *e*.

The Penultima's in *eba*, *ebo*, *eda*, *edo*, *efa*, *efo*, are marked with an Accent, but are not pronounced quite so long as those terminating in *echa*, *echo*, *eca*, and *eco*. The Penultima's in *eça*, *eço*, *ega*, and *ego*, are also long, tho' not without some few Exceptions; as *córrego*, *cónego*, *sóffrego*, *pécego*, *fóllego*, *bátega*, *cócego*, which are short. Those in *ela*, and *elo*, *ema*, *emo*, *ena*, *eno*, *epa*, *epe*, *epo*, *eque*, *era*, *ero*, *esa*, *eso*, *eta*, *ete*, *eto*, *eva*, *eve*, and *evo*, are long, except *próspero* and *áspero*, which are short.

The Penultima in *i*.

The Words ending in *iba*, *ibe*, *ibo*, *icha*, *iche*, *icho*, *ica*, *ico*, *iça*, *ice*, *iço*, *ida*, *ide*, *ido*, *ifa*, *ife*, *ifo*, *iga*, *igo*, *ija*, *ijo*, *ilha*, *ilho*, *ila*, *ile*, *ilo*, *ima*, *imo*, *inha*, *inho*, *ina*, *ino*, *ipa*, *ipe*, *ipo*, *iqua*, *ique*, *iquo*, *ira*, *ire*, *iro*, *isa*, *ise*, *iso*, *iza*, *izo*, *ita*, *ito*, *iva*, *ivo*, *ixa*, and *ixo*, are long; except *mecánico*, *agárico*, *crítico*, and the like, from the *Latin* or *Greek*, and *húmido*, *pállido*, *tórrido*, *hórrido*, *pródigo*, *ínfimo*, *anónimo*, *íntimo*, *máximo*, *péssimo*, *púlpito*, *vómito*, *decrépito*, *espírito*, which are short. The

The Penultima in *o*.

The Words ending in *oba*, *obe*, *obo*, *obra*, *obre*, *obro*, *ocha*, *ocho*, *oca*, *oco*, *oça*, *oço*, *oda*, *ode*, *odo*, *ofa*, *ofe*, *ofo*, *ofra*, *ofre*, *ofro*, *oga*, *ogue*, *ogo*, *oja*, *ojo*, *ola*, *ole*, *olo*, *oma*, *ome*, *omo*, *ona*, *ono*, *onha*, *onho*, *opa*, *ope*, *opo*, *oplo*, *opra*, *opre*, *opro*, *ora*, *ore*, *oro*, *orra*, *orro*, *osa*, *ose*, *oso*, *oza*, *ozo*, *ota*, *ote*, *oto*, *ova*, *ove*, *ovo*, *oxa*, *oxo*, are long, except *súccobo*, *íncobo*, *pírola*, and *frívolo*, which are short.

Words having their Penultima's in *u*.

Those Words ending in *uba*, *ubo*, *ubra*, *ubro*, *ucha*, *ucho*, *uça*, *uço*, *uca*, *uco*, *uda*, *ude*, *udo*, *ufa*, *ufe*, *ufo*, *uga*, *uge*, *ugo*, *uja*, *ujo*, *ulha*, *ulhe*, *ulho*, *ula*, *ule*, *ulo*, *uma*, *ume*, *umo*, *unha*, *unhe*, *unho*, *una*, *une*, *uno*, *upa*, *upe*, *upo*, *uque*, *ura*, *ure*, *uro*, *usa*, *use*, *uso*, *uza*, *uze*, *uzo*, *uta*, *ute*, *uto*, *utre*, *uxa*, *uxe*, *uxo*, *uva*, *uvo*, are long, except *súccubo*, *íncubo*, *vocábulo*, *vestíbulo*, *ángulo*, *régulo*, *ámbula*, *trémula*, and *cómputo*, and some others derived from the *Latin*.

Observations of Penultima's before Vowels.

a before *e* is long, as *sáe*, *cae*; before *i* short, as *saír*, *caír*; before *o*, and *ya*, *yo*, 'tis long, except when to the third Person Singular of the Indicative Mood the Particle *o* is added, as *cómao*, *béhao*.

e before other Vowels.

e before *a* is long, except in *gâtea*, *bôreas*, and in the third Person of the Imperative, when the Particle is annex'd, as *mátea*; before *o* it sounds long, except *páteo*, and in the said Persons when the Letter *o* is subjoined, as *máteo*, and in *fémea*, *sémeas*, *escórea*, and other Words derived from the *Latin*; but it is long before the *u*, when the two Vowels melt into a Diphthong, giving a distinct Sound of each, as in *coriféu*, *sandéu*.

i be-

i before other Vowels.

i before *a*, *e*, and *o* is long, excepting *espécia*, *féria*, *comédia*, *sciencia*, and other Words from the *Latin*.

o before other Vowels.

o before *a*, *e*, and *u* is long; but before *i* 'tis hardly perceived as to its Sound, and reputed to be short, as in the Words *roim*, *poir*.

u before other Vowels.

u before *a* is long, except in *cápua*, *pápua*, *inseca*; before *e*, *i*, and *o* 'tis long, except in some few Words of the *Latin* Produce.

The Accent or Tone of the last Syllables.

First those ending with a Vowel; and to begin with a regular Method, those ending in *a* are short, excepting *tafetá*, *bofetá*, *maná*, *cá*, *lá*, *acolá*, *oxalá*, *pá*, *pará*, and in the third Persons Singular of the Future Tense of the Indicative Mood, *v. g. amará*, *lerá*, *ouvirá*, *rirá*, *&c.*

Words ending in *e*

Make the last Syllable short, except *galé*, *polé*, *poté*, *maré*, *chaminé*, *loulé*, *pontapé*, *relé*, &c.

Words ending in *i*

Make their last Syllable long; but those that terminate with the Diphthong *ay*, *ey*, *oy*, and *uy*, have their Penultima's long.

Words ending in *o*

Have their last Syllable regularly short, except *avó*, *enxó*, *ichó*, *silhó*, *teyró*, and the third Persons Singular of the Preterperfect Tense Indicative Mood.

Words ending in *u*

Are generally long in the last Syllable, excepting such as have a Vowel precedent to it; for then by forming a Diphthong the Sound is different in the Pronunciation, and the Penultima grows long, as in *amóu*, *levóu*, &c.

Words

Words terminating in *l*, *m*, *r*, *s*, *z*.

All Words ending in *al* are long, except only one, *Setúval*, a Sea-Port Town of that Name in *Portugal*.

Those that end in *el* are long in the last Syllable, except *agradável*, *visível*, *amável*, &c.

Words terminating in *il* are long, except *dócil*, *fácil*, *hábil*, and the like, derived from the *Latin*.

All Words ending in *ol* are long, without Exception.

Likewise those in *ul*, except *cónsul*, a Consul

Words terminating in *m*.

The Nouns that end in *am* are long; but the Verbs in the third Person Plural of the Indicative Present are short; and the third Person Plural of the Future Indicative are long, as *amarám*, *lerám*, *ouvirám*, &c.

Those that end in *em* are short, except some Nouns, *bedém*, *parabém*; also the Verb *tem*, with its Compounds, as *mantém*, *detém*, *retém*, *contém*, with the Words *aquém*, *além*, *porém*, which are long. The Words in *im* are all long. Those in *om* and *um* are also long.

Words terminating in *r*.

Those that terminate in *ar* are long, except *açúcar*, *néctar*, *aljófar*, *ámbar*, &c.

Those in *er* are likewise long, without Exception. In *ir* are long; such are the Infinitives of the Verbs of the second Conjugation; and here the Verb *mártyr* is only excepted.

In *or* are long.

Very few *Portuguese* Words end in *ur*; but those that do, sound long.

Words terminating in *s*.

All Words terminating in *as* being Nouns, in their Pronunciation in the Plural Number imitate the Singular; if short in Singular, they are so in the Plural; as *cása*, *cásas*, *cóusa*, *cóusas*; and if

long in the Singular, they are the same in the Plural; as *tafetá*, *tafetás*; *bofetá*, *bofetás*. The same Rule is also applicable to all Verbs, in what Tense soever; for whatever Letter the first Person ends in, if that be short or long, the second Person will be the same; as *ámo*, *ámas*, *amáva*, *amává*, *amávas*, *amaréy*, *amáras*.

All Words ending in *es* in the Plural Number, which in the Singular have an *e* short, are likewise short in the Plural; as *tígre*, *tígres*, *pádre*, *pádres*; but those that have an *e* long in the Singular, have a long Termination in the Plural; as *maré*, *marés*, *chaminé*, *chaminés*. The Syllable *es* in the second Person of the Indicative Present in the second and third Conjugation is short; as *escréves*, *óuves*, *móves*, *tósses*.

Words ending in *is* or *iz* are long, except some Words that end in *ays*, *eys*, *oys*, *uys*; as *cáys*, *arráys*, *réys*, *léys*, *caracóys*, *róys*, *pánsy*, *azúys*, and the Verbs *amáys*, *ensináys*, *diréys*, *faréys*.

Words ending in *os*, when they derive from a Singular short, the Plurals are short also; when the Singular is long, the Plural is so too. All the first Persons Plural of all Verbs are short in their last Syllables; as *amámos*, *amávamos*, *amémos*, *lémos*, *líamos*, *ouvímos*.

The Nouns ending in *us* are long, except those that have another Vowel before the *u*, and make a Diphthong, as *sandéu*, *sandéus*.

Words terminating in *z*.

Whether in *az*, *ez*, *iz*, *oz*, and *uz*, are long, except *appéndiz*.

This may suffice to instruct the Reader in the general Rules how and in what Manner to place the Accents or Tones upon Words. We might have said much more upon this Subject, but the rest will soon be learned by Reading or Conversation.

A VOCABULARY IN *English* and *Portuguese.*

CHAP. I.

Nouns Substantive.

Of Things, *De Cousas.*

A *Thing*, a cóusa.
Nature, a naturéza.
a Beginning, o principio.
an End, o fim.
an Order, a ordem.
Time, o tempo.
a Number, o número.
a Place, o lugár.
a Space, o espácio.
a Name, o nome.
a Sign, o sinál.
a Mode or Manner, o modo, a manéira.
a Mark, a marca.
a Kind, a sorte, o género.
a Part, a parte.
a Member, o membro.
a broken Piece, o pedaço.
a cut Piece, o fatia.
a little Piece, o pedacinho.
Nothing, nada.
Matter, a matéria.
Form, a forma.
a Figure, a figura.
a Body, o corpo.

Of the World and the Elements, *dó mundo e dós elementos.*

the World, o mundo.
the Sky, o firmamento.
the Sun, o sol.
the Moon, a lúa.

a Star, a eſtrella.
a Planet, o planeta.
a Comet, a cometa.
Light, a luz.
a Sun-beam, o ráyo dó ſol.
Darkneſs, a obſcuridade.
a Shadow, a ſombra.
an eclipſe, a eclipſe.
the New Moon, a lúa nova.
the Full Moon, a lúa chéya.
the Wane of the Moon, o mingóante dá lúa.
the increaſing Moon, a lúa crecente.
an Element, o elemento.
Fire, o fogo.
Air, o ár.
Water, a água.
Earth, a terra.
a Flame, a flama.
a Spark, a faíſca.
Smoke, o fumo.
Soot, a ferrúgem.
a Fire, when a Houſe is on Fire, o incéndio.
a Firebrand, o tiſſam acéſo.
a live or hot Coal, o carvám acéſo
a Coal, o carvám.
Sea-coal, o carvám de pedra.
Embers, or hot Aſhes, a cinza quente, o borralho.
a Cloud, a núvem.
a Fog or Miſt, a névoa.
a Vapour, o vapór.
a Wind, o vento.
a gentle Wind, o Zéfiro, o vento gentíl.
a Whirlwind, o pé de vento.
a Tempeſt, a tempeſtade, a trabuzána.
ſerene Weather, tempo ſereno.
good Weather, bom tempo.
bad Weather, tempo roím.
foggy or dark Weather, tempo nevoádo.
rainy Weather, tempo chuvóſo.
a little Wind, o ventinho.
the Eaſt Wind, o vento d'Eſte.
Eaſt North-Eaſt Wind, o vento d'Eſte Nor d'Eſte.
North-Eaſt Wind, o vento Nor d'Eſte
North North-Eaſt, Nor Nor d'Eſte.
North Wind, o vento de Norte.
North North-Weſt Wind, o vento Nor Nor d'Oéſte.
North-Weſt, Nor Oéſte.
Weſt North-Weſt, Oéſte Nor Oéſte.
Weſt, Oéſte.

Weſt

Weſt South-Weſt, Oéſte Sud Oéſte.
South-Weſt, Sud Oéſte.
South South-Weſt, Sul Sud Oéſte.
South Wind, o vento de Sul.
South South-Eaſt, Sul Sud éſte.
South-Eaſt, Sud eſte.
Eaſt South-Eaſt, Eſte Sud éſte.
a Rainbow, o arco celeſte.
Thunder, o trovâm.
Lightning, o relámpago.
Rain, a chuva.
a Shower, a chuva de trovâm.
Snow, a neve.
Hail, o pedriſco.
Dew, o orvalho, roſío.
hoar or white Froſt, o gelo.
a great Shower, a borraſca.
a Spring or Fountain, a fonte.
a River, a ribéira.
a great River, o río.
a Brook, o torrente.
a Stream, o corrente.
the Sea, o mar.
the Ocean, o océano.
a Wave, a onda.
the Tide, a maré.
the Flowing, o crecente dá maré.
the Ebb, o vazante dá maré.
a Shore, o bordo.
a Haven or Port, o porto.
a Gulf or Bay, o golfo, a bahía.
an Iſland, a ilha.
a Peninſula, a peníſola.
a Bank, a ribancéira.
a Channel, o canál.
a Ford, o vám.
a Well, o poço.
a Ditch, o foſſo.
a Pool or Pond, a lagóa.
a Marſh or Fen, or fenny Ground, terra alagada.
a Lake, o lago.
a Bog, o atoléyro.
a Slough, o lamaçal.
a Fiſh-pond, o viveyro de péixes.
a Drop of Water, a gotta d'agua.
a Bubble, a ampolla d'agua.
Froth, a eſcuma.
Ice, a geáda.
Cold, frio.
Heat, o calór.
the Continent or main Land, o continente, a terra firme.
a Mountain, o monte.
a Hill, o outéiro.
a Rock, a rocha, a penha.
a plain Field, o campo.
a Valley, o valle.
Mud, o limo, o lodo.

Dirt, o eſterco.
Duſt, o pô.
a Clod of Earth, o torrám.
a Turf, torrám com erva.
Clay, o barro.
Red-oker, o almagre.
Marl, or white Earth, barro branco.
Chalk, a greda, o giz.
Fullers Earth, greda bárro.
Heaven, o céo.
Hell, o inferno.
Purgatory, o purgatório.
God, o Déos.
an Angel, o anjo.
Paradiſe, o paraíſo.
a Soul, a alma.
a Devil, o Diabo.

Of Time and the Seaſons, *de tempo e ſezóens.*

Time, o tempo.
a Day, o día.
a Night, a nóite.
Noon, o méyo dia.
Midnight, méya nóite.
Morning, a manhãã.
Evening, a tarde.
a Sun-dial, o relógio de ſol.
a Clock, o relógio.
an Hour-glaſs, o relógio de area.
a Watch, o relógio de algibéira.
a Watchman, o vigidor.
an Hour, a hora.
Half an Hour, a méya hora.
a Quarter of an Hour, o quarto de hora.
three Quarters of an Hour, tres quartos de hora.
To-day, oje.
Yeſterday, óntem.
To-morrow, a menhãã.
before Yeſterday, antóntem.
this Evening, eſta tarda.
this Morning, eſta menhãã.
after Dinner, depóis dô jantar.
after Supper, depóis dó ceár.
a Week, a ſemána.
a Fortnight, quinze dias.
a Month, o mez.
a Year, o anno.
a Minute, o minuto.
a Moment, o momento.
the Spring, o verão.
the Summer, o eſtío.
Autumn, o outono.
the Winter, o inverno.
Day-break, a madrugada.
Sun-ſet, o ſolpoſto.
Sun-riſe, o nacentedó ſol.
Dusk of the Evening, o luſco fuſco.
Monday, a ſecunda féyra.
Tueſday, a terça féyra.
Wedneſday, aquarta féyra
Thurſday,

Thursday, a quinta féyra.
Friday, a festa féyra.
Saturday, o Sábado.
Sunday, o Domingo.
a Holy-day, o dia féstivo.
a Worky-day, o dia do trabalho.
New-year's-day, o anno novo.
Easter-day, a Páscoa.
Whitsunday, a Pentecoste.
St. John's-day, o Sam Joám.
Michaelmas-day, o Sam Miguel.
Christmas-day, o Natal.
January, o Janéiro.
February, o Fevréiro.
March, o Março.
April, o Abril.
May, o Máyo.
June, o Junho.
July, o Julho.
August, o Agosto.
September, o Setembro.
October, o Outúbro.
November, o Novembro.
December, Decembro.

Of Countries and Cities, *de terras e cidades.*

Europe, a Europa.
Asia, a Asia.
Africa, a Africa.
America, a América.
the East-Indies, as Indias Orientaes.
the West-Indies, as Indias Occidentaes.
Great Britain, a Grande Bretanha.
England, a Ingalaterra.
Scotland, a Escocia.
Ireland, a Irlanda.
Denmark, a Dinamarca.
Norway, a Norvega.
Sweden, a Suecia.
Muscovy or Russia, a Moscóvia, a Russia.
Germany, a Alemanha.
France, a França.
Holland, a Ollanda.
the United Provinces, as Provincias Unidas.
Flanders, a Flandes.
Switzerland, a Suissa.
Spain, a Espanha.
Portugal, o Portugal.
Poland, a Polónia.
Italy, a Italia.
Hungary, a Ungaria.
Turkey, a Turquía.
a capital City, a villa capital.
London, Londres.
Edenburg, Edimburgo.
Dublin, Dublin.
Copenhagen, Copenaga.
Drontheim, Drontheim.
Stockholm, Estocolmo.
Moscow, Mosco.
Vienna, Viena.
Paris, Paris.

Amſterdam, Amſterdám.
Bruſſels, Bruſſelas.
Baſil, Baſla.
Madrid, Madrid.
Lisbon, Lisbóa.
Cracow, Cracóvia.
Rome, Roma.
Venice, Veneza.
Belgrade, Belgrada.
Conſtantinople, Conſtantinopola.

Of Minerals and precious Stones, *De mineras e pedras precioſas.*

a Mine, a mina.
a Mineral, o mineral.
a Metal, o metál.
Gold, o óura.
Silver, a práta.
Braſs, o latám.
Copper, o cobre.
Iron, o ferro.
Steel, o aço.
Lead, o chumbo.
Tin, o eſtanho.
Quickſilver, o azógue.
white Lead, o alvayáde.
Vermilion, or red Lead, o vermelhám.
Verdigreaſe, o ferrógem do cobre.
Ruſt, a ferrúgem.
Salt, o ſal.
Alom, o alume.
Brimſtone. o enxófre.
Amber, o ambar.
Salt Petre, o Salitre.
a Stone, a pedra.
a Flint-Stone, a pedra de fogo.
a Whetſtone, a pedra de ſevár.
a Touchſtone, a pedra de toque.
Plaiſter, o geſſo.
Lime, a cal.
Sand, a aréa.
Gravel, o caſcalho.
Marble, o mármore.
a precious Stone, a pedra precioſa.
a Jewel, a jóya.
a Diamond, a diamente.
a Brilliant, o brilhante.
a Roſe, a roſa.
a Saphire, a zafíra.
a Chryſolite, a criſolita.
an Emerald, a eſmeralda.
a Jaſper, o jaſpe.
an Agate, a agatha.
an Amethiſt, a matiſta.
a Ruby, o rubím.
a Turkeiſe, a turqueſa.
a Cornelian, a Cornelina.
a Glaſs, o vidro.
a Cryſtal, o criſtál.
a Pearl, a pérola.
a Coral, o corál.

Of Herbs and Flowers, *De ervas e flores.*

an Herb, a erva.
a Flower, a flor.
Graſs, a erva.

Flax,

Flax, o linho.
Hemp, a cánhamo.
a Stalk, o talo.
a Plant, a planta.
an Artichoke, a alcachofra.
Bean, a fava.
French-Beans, os féyjoins.
a Carrot, a cenóyra.
a Cucumber, o pepino.
a Cabbage, a cóuve.
a Colliflower, a cóuve de flor.
eatable Herbs, as ortaliſas.
Garlick, o alho.
a Gourd, a calabaça.
Lettice, a alface.
a Leek, o porro.
a Melon, o melám.
Muſtard, a Moſtarda.
a Muſhroom, o cugúmelo, o fungo.
an Onion, a cebola,
a Radiſh, o rabo.
Horſe-radiſh, a Marréca.
Turnip, o nabo.
Anis, a erva doce.
Baulm, a erva cidréira.
Baſil, a baſilica.
Borrage, as borrágems.
Burnet, a pimpinela.
Camomile, a camomila.
Caraways, a caravéa.
Chichory, chicoréa.
Creſſes, o maſtruço.
Endive, a ſcaróla.
Fennel, o fenolho.
Hop, o pé de gallo, lúpulos.
Hyſſop, o iſopo.
Jeſſamin, o jaſmin.
Lavender, a lavéndo.
a Lily, o lirio.
Marjoram, a manjorona.
Mint, a ortelãa.
a Nettle, a ortiga.
a Poppy, a dormadeira.
Roſemary, o alecrim.
Rue, a ruda.
a Roſe, a roſa.
Saffron, o aſafram.
Sage, a ſalva.
Sorrel, a azeda.
Spinage, as eſpinafres.
a Thiſtle, o cardo.
Thyme, o tumilho.
Trefoil, o trefolho.
a Tulip, a túlipa.
Tobacco, o tobaco.
a Violet, a viola.
Wormwood, a lozna.
Corn, o gram.
Barley, a cevâda.
Millet, o milho.
Rye, o ſentéyo.
Oat, a avéa.
Rice, o arroz.
Wheat, o trigo.
Meal or Flower, a farinha.
Bran, o farelho.
Pulſe, o legumem.
a Lentil, a lentilha.

a Pea,

a Pea, a ervilha.
a Beard (of Corn) a areſta.
an Ear, a eſpiga.
a Grain or ſingle Corn, hum gram.
Straw, a palha.
Seed, a ſemente.

Of Trees, Shrubs, and Fruits, *De árvores, matas e frúitos.*

a Bramble, a mata.
a Roſe-buſh, a rozéira.
a Vineyard, a vinha.
a Vine, a vide.
a Bunch of Grapes, o cacho de uvas.
a Grape, a uva.
a Tree, a árvore.
a Bough, o ramo.
a Leaf, a folha.
the Stick of a Tree, o tronco.
the Bark, a cortiça.
a Twig, a verga.
the Root, a raiz.
the Juice, o çumo.
Fruit, o frúito.
an Apple-tree, a macéira.
an Apple, a maçãã.
a Pear-tree, a peréira.
a Pear, a pera.
a Cherry-tree, a cerejéyra.
a Cherry, a cereja.
a Plumb-tree, a ameixéira.
a Plumb, a améixa.
a Fig-tree, a figuéyra.
a Fig, o figo.
an Olive-tree, a olivéyra.
an Olive, a azeitóna.
an Aſh-tree, o fréixo.
a Beech-tree, a fáya.
a Poplar-tree, o alemo.
an Elm, o olmo.
an Oak, o carvalho.
a Fir-tree, o pinhéiro.
a Willow, o ſalguéiro.
a Nut-ſhell, a caſca dá noz.
a Kernel, o miolo.
a Wall-nut, a noz.
a Small-nut, a avelãã.
a Cheſnut, a caſtanha.
a Medlar, a néſpera.
an Almond-tree, a amendoéira.
an almond, a améndoa.
a Berry, a baga.
a Date, a támara.
a Quince, o marmélo.
an Orange, a laranja.
a Citron, a cidra.
a Lemon, o limám.
an Apricot, o damaſco.
a Peach, o péſſego.
a Strawberry, o morángam.
a Blackberry, a amora bráva.
a Mulberry, o amora.
Currants, as paſſas de coryntha.
a Pomegranate, a romãã.
a Nectarin, o durázio.

a Raſ-

a Rasberry, a amóra do mato.
Wood, o páo.
a Faggot, a fé ze.
a Wood, o boſque.
a Foreſt, a brenha.
a Grove, o arvoredo.
Spice, as eſpécias.
Cinnamon, á canela.
Cloves, os cravos da India.
Ginger, o gingibre.
Mace, a macia.
a Nutmeg, a noz moſcada.
Pepper, a pimenta.
Vinegar, a vinagre.
Frankincenſe, o encenſo.
Myrrh, a mirra.
Muſk, o almiſcár.
Roſin, a reſina.
Turpentine, a termentina.
Pitch, o pez.
Gum, a gomma.

Of Animals in general, *Dos animays em géral.*

a Creature, a criatura.
an Animal, o animál.
Life, a vida.
Senſe, o ſentido.
Sex, o ſexo.
the Sight, a viſta.
the Hearing, ouvido.
the Smell, o cheirár.
the Taſte, o goſto.
the Feeling, o tacto.
a Colour, a cor.
a Sound, o ſom.
a Smell, o chéiro.
a Voice, a voz.
a Taſte, o ſabor.
common Senſe, o ſenſú comum.
the Fancy, a fanteſía.
the Memory, a memoria,
Imagination, a imaginaçam.
a Male, o macho.
a Female, a fémea.
an Inſect, o inſecto.
a Bird, o páſſaro.
a Fiſh, a peixe.
a Beaſt or Brute, a beſta, o bruto.
a Man, o homem.

Of Inſects, *de inſectos.*

a Worm, o bicho.
an Ant, a formiga.
a Flea, a pulga.
a Louſe, o piolho.
a Moth, a traça.
a Silk-worm, o bicho de ſeda.
a Snail, o caracól.
a Spider, a aranha.
a Bug, o perſovejo.
a Fly, a moſca.
a Bee, a abelha.
a Butterfly, a barboleta.
a Gnat, o moſquito.
a Graſs-hopper, a lagoſta.
a Waſp, o beſpám.

a Viper,

a Viper, a víbora.
an Aſp, o aſpid.
a Snake, a cobra.
a Serpent, o ſerpente.
a Lizard, o lagarto.
a Frog, a ram.
a Toad, o ſapo.
a Scorpion, o eſcorpiám.
a Bee-hive, a colméa.
Honey, o mel.
a Honey-comb, o favo.
Wax, a cera.
a Swarm of Bees, o enxame de abelhas.
a Sting, o agulhám.

Of Birds, *de páſſaros.*

a Bird's Bill, o rico da ave.
a Wing, a aſa.
a Feather, a péna.
Down, a penúgem.
a Spur, a eſpora.
a Claw, a unha.
a Neſt, o ninho.
a Cage, a gayóla.
an Egg, o ovo.
a Shell, a caſca.
a Fowler, o caçador de aves.
Birdlime, o viſco.
a Bat, o morcégo.
a Blackbird, a mélroa.
a Capon, o capám.
a Cock, o gallo.
a Chicken, o pintám.
a Crane, o gróu.
a Crow, a gralha.
a Cuckow, o cuco.
a Didapper, omergulhám
a Pigeon, a pomba.
a Turtle-dove, a rola.
a Ring-dove, o pombo torcaz.
a Pigeon-houſe, o pombal.
a Duck, a adem.
an Eagle, a águia.
a Falcon, o falcám.
a Goldfinch, o pintaſilgo.
a Gooſe, o pato.
a Gall, a gaivóta.
an Hawk, o açór.
a Hen, a galinha.
a Heron, a garça.
a Jackdaw, a gralhinda.
a King's-fiſher, a picapéize.
a Kite, o minhoto.
a Lark, a cotovía.
a Nightingal, o rouxinól.
an Owl, a curúja.
a Screech-owl, o búfo.
an Oſtrich, o aveſtrúz.
a Parrot, o papagáyo.
a Partridge, a perdiz.
a Peacock, o pavám.
a Pelican, o pelicano.
a Pheaſant, o faiſão.
a Pye, a pega.
a Quail, o codorniz.
a Raven, o corvo.
a Snipe, o narcéjo, francolim.
a Sparrow, o pardál.

a Star-

a Starling, o eſtorminho.
a Stork, a cegonha.
a Swallow, a andorinha.
a Swan, o cirne, ciſne.
a Teal, o marreco.
a Thruſh, o tordo.
a Turkey, o perú.
a Turkey-hen, a perúa.
a Vulture, o abutre.
a Wagtail, a pezpita.
a Wood-cock, a galinhóla.

Of Fiſhes, *de péixes.*

a Fiſh, a péixe.
the Gills, as guelras da péixe.
the Fins, as barbatanas.
the Scale, a eſcama.
a Shell-fiſh, o mariſco de concha.
a Shell, a concha.
a Fiſherman, o peſcador.
a Net, a rede.
an Angle-rod, a cana de peſcar.
a Line, a ſedela.
a Hook, o anzól.
a Bait, a iſca.
a Plummet, o prumo.
a Fiſhmonger, o peſcadéiro.
Salt-fiſh, o badejo.
a Barbel, o barbo.
a Cockle, a améijoa.
a Cod-fiſh, a peſcada.
a Creviſe, o caranguéjo.
a Dolphin, o golfinho.
an Eel, a enguía, o eyro.
a Gudgeon, o cadoz.
a Herring, o arenque.
a Lamprey, a lampréa.
a Mackrel, a ſarda.
a Mullet, a teínha.
Muſcles, os meixilhóens.
an Otter, a lontra.
an Oyſter, a oſtra.
a Salmon, o ſalmám.
a Shrimp, o camaram.
a Sole, a ſolha.
a Sturgeon, a péixe ſolho.
a Thornback, a raya,
a Tortoiſe, a tartaruga, o cágado.
a Trout, a trúita.
a Whale, a baléa.
a Whiting, o fanéco.

Of Beaſts, *de feras ou beſtas.*

a Beaſt, a fera, beſta.
a labouring Beaſt, o jumento.
Cattle, o gado.
an Herd, a manada de gado.
a Hide, o cóuro.
a Horn, o corno.
a Hoof, a unha.
a Mane, a coma.
a Briſtle, a ſeda de porco.
a Tail, o rabo, a cáuda.
an Ape, o bugío.

An

an Aſs, o aſno.
a Badger, o texúgo.
a Bear, o urſo.
a Beaver, o caſtór.
a Bull, o tóuro.
a Camel, o camélo.
a Calf, a vitela.
a Cat, o gato.
a Coney, o coélho.
a Cow, a vaca.
a Crocodile, o crocodilo.
a Deer, o corço, a corça.
a Fawn, o filho de corça.
a Hart or Stag, o cervo.
a Heifer, a novilha.
a Hind, a cerva.
a Dog, o cám.
a Bitch, a cadella.
a Whelp, o cachorro.
a Maſtiff, o raféiro.
a Spaniel, o cám de caça das aves.
a Mungrel, o cám meſliço.
a Dog's Collar, o colar do cam.
a Muzzle, o cabreſto.
a Dragon, o dragám.
a Dromedary, o dromedario.
an Elephant, o elefante.
a Ferret, o forám.
a Fox, a rapoſa.
a He-goat, o cabrám bóde.
a She-goat, a cabra.
a Goat-herd, o cabréiro.
a Kid or Lamb, o cabrito.
a Hare, o lebre.
a Hedgehog, o ouriço cachéiro.
a Hog, o porco.
a Hog-fly, o chiquéiro de porcos.
Hogs Dung, o eſterco de porcos.
Hog-herd, o porquéiro.
wild Boar, o porco montez.
a tame Boar, o porco marrám.
a Sow, a porca.
a Pig, o leitám.
a Horſe, o cavallo.
a Mare, a egoa.
a Gelding, o cavallo capado.
a Race-horſe, o cavallo de carreira.
a Nag, a faca.
an ambling Nag, o quartám.
a Hackney-horſe, o cavallo de alluguér.
a Pack-horſe, o cavallo de bagagem.
a Groom, o eſtribéiro.
a Halter, o cabreſto.
a Lion, o leám.
a Lioneſs, a leóa.
a Monkey, o bugío.
a Mouſe, o ratinho,
a Mouſe-trap, a ratoéira.
a Mule, o mú.
an Ox, o boy.
a Panther, a onça.

a Rat,

a Rat, o rato.
a Sheep, a ovelha.
a Ram, o carnéyro.
a Wether, o carnéyro capado.
a Lamb, o cordéyro.
a Sheepfold, o curral de ovelhas.
a Shepherd, o paſtor.
a Sheep-hook, o cajado.
a Flock, a manada, o rebánho.
Wool, a lám.
a Fleece, o vela de lam.
a Squirrel, o ciúro.
a Tiger, a tire.
a Unicorn, o alicorno.
a Weeſel, a doninha.
a Wolf, o lobo.

Of Man, reſpecting his Age and Kindred, *do hómem, ao reſpéito de ſua ydade e parenteſco.*

Age, a ydade.
an Infant, a Babe, or Child, o menino, a menina.
a little Boy, a little Girl, a criança.
a Boy or Lad, o rapaz.
a Girl, a rapariga.
a young Man, o moço.
a young Woman, a moça, donzella.
a Virgin or Maid, a virgem.
a Bachelor or ſingle Perſon, hum (homem) ſoltéyro
a Maid or ſingle Woman, huma (mulher) ſoltéyra.
a Man, o homem, varám.
a Woman, a mulher.
an old Man, o velho.
an old Woman, a velha.
a Lover, o amante, enamorado, amigo.
a Miſtreſs, a amiga.
a Bridegroom, o nóyvo.
a Bride, a nóyva.
a Husband, o marido.
a Wife, a mulher.
a Marriage or Wedding, o caſamento.
a Kin or Kinſman, o parente, aliado.
the Anceſtors, os anteceſſores.
Poſterity, os ſucceſſores.
a Genealogy or Pedigree, a genelozia.
a Grandfather, o avó.
a Grandmother, a avó.
a Father, o páy.
a Mother, a máy, máem.
a great Grandſon, o biſnetto.
a Grandſon, o netto.
a great grand-daughter, a biſnetta.
a Granddaughter, a netta.
a Son, o filho.

a Daughter,

a Daughter, a filha.
a Brother, o irmãm.
a Siſter, a irmãã.
a Father-in-law, o ſogro.
a Mother-in-law, a ſogra.
a Son-in-law, o genro.
a Daughter-in law, a nora.
a Brother-in-law, o cunhado.
a Siſter-in-law, a cunhada.
a Step-father, o padraſto.
a Step-mother, a madraſta.
a Step-ſon, o enteado.
a Step-daughter, a enteada.
an Uncle, o tío.
an Aunt, a tía.
a Nephew, o ſobrinho.
a Neice, a ſobrinha.
a Couſin-german or firſt Couſin, o primo, a prima irmam.
a ſecond Couſin, o primo ſegundo, a prima.
a Widower, o viuvo.
a Widow, a viuva.
an Heir, o heredéiro.
an Heireſs, a heredéira.
an Orphan, o orfám.
a God-father, o padrinho.
a God-mother, a comadre.
a God-ſon, o afilhado.
a God-daughter, a afilhada
a Baſtard, o baſtardo, a baſtarda.
Twins, os gémeos.
a Giant, o gigante.
a Dwarf, o pigméo.
an Acquaintance, *a Friend* o conhecido, o amigo, a conhecida, a amiga.
a Woman in Childbed, a mulher parida.
a Midwiſe, a partêyra.
a Nurſe, a ama de léite, a ama.
a Delivery or Birth, o parto.
a Miſcarriage, o mao parto.
an Eſtate, o eſtado, a fazenda.
the laſt Will, o teſtamento.

Of the Parts of a Man's Body, *dás partes do corpo de hum homem.*

the Head, a cabeça.
the Trunk, o tronco.
a Limb, o membro.
the Hair, o cabello.
the Ear, a orelha.
the Temples, as fontes dá cabeça.
the Face or Countenance, o roſtro, a cara.
the Forehead, a teſta, a fronta.
a Wrinkle, a arruga.
the Eye, o olho.

the Eyelid, a capella dó olho.
the Eyebrow, a sobrancelha.
a Nose, o nariz.
a Mouth, a boca.
a Chin, a barba.
the Nostrils, as ventas dó nariz.
a Lip, o béyço.
a Cheek, o queyxâda.
the Tongue, a lingua.
the Palate, o paladár.
the Throat, o garganta.
the Neck, o pescoço.
the Breast or Chest, o péito.
the Bosom, o céyo.
a Breast, a mama, a tetta, o péito.
the Nipple, o bico do péito.
the Back, as costas.
a Shoulder, o hombro.
the Side, o lado.
the Body, o corpo.
the Belly, a barriga.
the Navel, o embigo.
the Groin, a verilha.
a Loin, o lombo.
the Breech, o cú.
the Buttocks, as nalgas.
an Arm, o braço.
the Elbow, o cotovélo.
a Hand, a mám.
the Fist, o punho.
the Palm of the Hand, a palma du mam.
the Thumb, o polegar.
a Finger, o dedo.
the Right Hand, a mam deréyta.
the Left Hand, a mam esquerda.
a Nail, a unha.
the Hip, a coxa.
the Thigh, a coxa da perna.
the Knee, o joelho.
the Leg, a perna.
the Ancle, o artelho.
the Heel, calcanhar.
the Foot, o pé.
the Sole of the Foot, a planta do pée.
a Toe, o dedo do pée.
Flesh, a carne.
the Skin, a pelle.
Fat, a gordura.
a Bone, o osso.
Marrow, o tutano.
a Gristle, a cartilágem.
the Brain, o cérebro.
a Nerve, o nervo.
the Bowels, as entranhas.
the Heart, o coraçam.
the Lungs, os bofes.
Breath, a respiraçam, o alento.
the Stomach, o estómago.
the Guts, as tripas.
the Liver, o fígado.
the Kidney, o rim.
the Bladder, a bexiga.
a Tooth, o dente.
the Ribs, as costellas.
Blood, o sangue.
Choler, a cóllera.

Gall, o fel.
Milk, o léite.
Spittle, a saliva.
Sweat, o suór.
a Tear, a lágrima.
Piss or Urine, a ourína.
Excrements, os escrementos.

Of Diseases and Remedies, *de doenças e remedios.*

a Disease, a doença.
a Physician, o médico.
Physick, a mezinha.
a Surgeon, o çurgião.
an Apothecary, o boticário.
a Wound, a ferida, chaga.
a Scar, a cecatriz.
Smart or Pain, o dor.
a Blow or Stroke, o açoute.
Death, a morte.
an Ague, a terçám.
a quartan Ague, a quartám.
a Bunch or Hump-back, a córcova.
the Consumption, a tisica.
a Cough, a tosse.
the Colick, a cólica.
the Cramp, a caymbra.
the Dropsy, a hydropezía.
a Cold, o catarro, res friado.
the King's Evil, as alporcas.
a Fever, a febre.
the falling Sickness, a gota coral.
a Fit, o accesso.
the French-pox, as bóubas.
the Gout, a gota.
a Hoarseness, a ronquéyra.
a Hickup, o saluço.
the Itch, a sarna.
an Imposthume, a postema.
a Lethargy, o letargo.
a Looseness, as cámaras.
Madness, o doudíce.
the Measles, o sarampo.
the Plague, a peste.
the Palsy, a parlezía.
the Pleurisy, a pleuris.
a Rupture, a potra.
the Scurvy, o scorbutu.
the Stone, a pedra.
the Small-pox, as bexigas.
an Asthma, a asma.
a Wart, a verruga.
a Medicine, o medicamento.
a Remedy, o remédio.
a Poison, o veneno.
an Ointment, o inguento.
a Plaister, o emprasto.
Blood-letting, a sangría.
Health, a saude.
Strength, a força.
Vigour, o vigór.

Of

Of the Affections of the Mind, and the Actions and Qualifications of Man, *dás affeiçoens dá mente, e dás auçoens e qualidades do homem.*

a Mind, a mente.
an Idea, a ydea.
Memory, a memoria.
Underſtanding, o entendimento.
Reaſon, a razám.
Judgment, o juizo.
a Will, a vontade.
a Fantaſy, a fantaſía.
an Opinion, a opiniám.
Knowledge, a ſciencia.
Prudence, a prudencia.
an Error, o erro.
a Virtue, a vertude.
Patience, a paciéncia.
Conſtancy, a conſtáncia.
Charity, a caridade.
Humility, a humilidade.
Civility, a corteſía.
Temperance, a temperança.
Chaſtity, a caſtidade.
Modeſty, a modéſtia.
Compaſſion, a compaixám.
Friendſhip, a amizade.
Thankfulneſs, a gratidám
Generoſity, a generoſidade.
a Vice, o vicio.
Covetouſneſs, a cobiça.
Pride, a ſoberba, a vaidade.
Deceit, o engano.
Craft, a ſutileza.
Lazineſs, a preguiça.
Malice, a malicia.
Lewdneſs, a lacivia.
Impudence, a deſvergonha.
Cruelty, a crueldade.
Ingratitude, a ingratidám.
a Paſſion, a paixám.
Love, o amor.
Hatred, o odio.
Anger, a cólera.
Envy, a emveja.
Pleaſure, o goſto.
Joy, a alegría.
Grief, a dór.
Sadneſs, a triſteza.
Affliction, a afflicçám.
Faith, a fé.
Hope, a eſperança.
Fear, o temor.
Jealouſy, os ciumes.
Dread, o medo.
Deſpair, a deſperaçam.
Courage, o animo.
Cowardice, a covardía.
Shame, a vergonha.
Power, o poder.
Help, o ſocorro, a ajuda.
a Work, a obra, o trabalho.
Buſineſs, o negócio.
a Charge, o cargo.

an Office, o officio.
a Counsel, o conselho.
an Art, a arte.
Care, o cuidado.
Study, o estudo.
Application, a applicaçaõ.
Delay, a detenza.
Haste, a pressa.
an Action, a acçám.
Fortune, a fortuna.
Prosperity, a prosperidade.
Happiness, a felicidade.
Misfortune, a desgraça.
Honour, a honra.
Infamy, a infámia.
Chance, a sorte.
Riches, a riqueza.
Poverty, a pobreza.
Want, a necessidade.
Abundance, a abundancia.
Loss, a perda.
Gain, o ganho, o provéito.
Weariness, a fatiga.
Rest, o descanço.
Hunger, a fome.
Thirst, a sede.
Sleep, o sono.
a Dream, o sonho.
Loathing, o desgosto, a adverçám.

Of Meat and Drink, *de manjares e de beber.*

Meat, a comida.
Victuals, o alimento.
Drink, a bebida.
Provision, a provisam.
Bread, o pam.
the Crust, a codia.
the Crum, o miolo.
Butter, a mantéiga.
Cheese, o quéijo.
Milk, o léite.
Cream, a natta.
Flesh-meat, a carne.
Bacon, o toucinho.
a Ham, o prezunto.
Broth, o caldo.
Soop, a sopa.
a Cake, o bolo.
Sauce, a salsa.
Minc'd-meat, o picado.
Roast-meat, o assado.
Sweet-meats, as confeituras.
a Sallet, a salada.
the Desert, a sobremesa.
a Tart, a tortilha.
a Pasty or Pie, o pastel.
Boil'd-meat, a carne cozida.
a Sausage, o salchicho.
Beef or Ox-flesh, vaca, a carne de vaca.
Mutton or Sheep's-flesh, cordéiro, ou carne de cordéiro.

Pork

Pork or Hog's-flesh, porco, ou carne de porco.
Veal or Calf's-flesh, vitela, ou carne de vitela.
Venison, carne de veado.
a Cook, o cozinhéiro.
Oil, o azéite.
Vinegar, o vinagre.
a Breakfast, o almoço.
a Dinner, o jantár.
a Supper, a céa.
Beer, a cervéja.
Wine, o vinho.
Cyder, a cidra, o vinho de maçãas.
a Feast, o banquete.
a Guest, o convidado.
a Table, a mesa.
a Table-cloth, a toalha da mesa.
a Napkin, a guardanapo.
a Trencher, a trincha.
a Salt-seller, o saléiro.
Salt, o sal.
a Knife, a faca.
a Fork, o garfo.
a Dish, o prato.
a Pottinger, a tigela.
a Plate, o pratinho.
a Spoon, a colher.
a Bason, a bacia.
a Towel, a toalha.
a Cup, o copo.
a Flaggon, o frasco.
a Jug, o púcaro.
a Bottle, a garrafa, botelha.

Of Cloathing, *de vestido.*

Cloth, o pano.
Silk, a seda.
Cotton, o algodám.
Velvet, o veludo.
Wool, a lãa.
Linen, o lenço.
Lace, a renda.
a Garment, o vestido.
Mourning Cloaths, o vestido de luto.
a Hat, o chapéo.
a Cap, o bonéte.
a Peruke, a peruca.
a Shirt, a camisa.
a Waistcoat, a vestia.
a Pair of Breeches, os calçóens.
a Morning-gown, a róupa de chambre.
Stockings, as méyas.
a Garter, a jaretéira, a fáixa.
a Close-coat, a casaca.
an Upper-coat, o gabinardo.
a Riding-coat, o capote.
a Cloak, a capa.
a Cravat, a garavata.
a Pocket, a algibéira.
a Button, o botam.
a Sleeve, a manga.
a Button-hole, as casas de botóens.
a Shoe, o çapato.
a Slipper, a chinela.
a Boot, a botta.

a Spur, a eſpóra.
a Girdle or Belt, o cingidóuro.
an Apron, o avental.
a Bracelet, as manilhas.
Ear-rings, as arrecadas.
a Fan, o leque, abano.
a Glove, a luva.
a Handkerchief, o lenço.
a Manteau, o manto, capelo.
a Necklace, o colar.
a Mask, a maſcara.
a Neckhandkerchief, o lenço do peſcoſo.
a Petticoat, a ſaya.
a Woman's Gown, o veſtido de mulhér.
a Buckle, a fivella.
a Ring, o annél.
a Hood, a tóuca.
a Chain, a cadéa.

Of Buildings, *de edificios.*

a Building, o edificio.
a Houſe, a caſa.
a Cottage, a choupana.
a Palace, o palacio.
a Caſtle, o caſtelo.
a Bath, o banho.
a Bridge, a ponte.
Common-ſewer, o cano do deſpejo.
a Wall, a parede.
a Corner, o canto.
a Gate, a porta.
a Door, a porta.
the Entry, a entrada.
a Hall, a ſalla.
a Cieling, céo dó apoſento.
a Cloſet, o gabinete.
a Kitchen, a cozinha.
a Floor, o chão.
the Stairs, a eſcada.
a Chamber, o apoſento.
a Chimney, o chimené.
a Hearth, a foguéira.
a Window, a janela.
the Roof of the Houſe, o tecto.
a Pillar, o pilár.
a Vault, a boveda.
a Poſt, o poſtigo.
a Lock, a fechadura.
a Key, a chave.
a Cellar, a adega.
the Stable, a eſtrebaria.
Oven, o forno.
a Wall, o poço.
a Pump, a bomba.
a City, a cidade.
a Town, a villa.
a Suburb, o arrebalde.
a Street, a rúa.
a Fortification, a fortaleza.
a Market, a praça.
an Inn, a pouſada.
a Workman, o obréiro.
a Hatchet, o machado.
a Hammer, o martello.
a Saw, a ſerra.
a File, a lima.
a Wedge, a cunha.

a Ruler,

a Ruler, a regra.
Glue, a grude.
a Nail, o cravo.
a Brick, o ladrilho.
Timber, a madéira.
a Board, a taboínha.
a Tile, o tijolo.

Of Houſhold-ſtuff or Furniture, *de alfáyas*.

a Chair, a cadéyra.
a Stool, a trepeſſa.
a Bench, o banco.
an Arm'd-Chair, a cadéyra de mams.
a Couch, a cama de repóuſo.
a Cradle, o berço.
a Bed, a cama.
Curtains, as curtinas.
a Blanket, o cobertor.
Sheets, os lançóes.
a Carpet, o tapete.
a Picture, a pintura.
a Picture or Reſemblance of any Perſon, o retrato.
a Statue, a ſtátua.
a Looking-glaſs, o eſpelho.
a Broom, a eſcóva.
a Grate, as grelhas.
a Sieve, a panéyra.
a Mortar, o almirez.
a Peſtle, o almofariz.
a Pair of Tongs, as tenãzas.
a Fire-ſhovel, a pãa.
a Lamp, a lámpada.
a Candleſtick, o candiéyro.
a Candle, a candéya.
a Wax-taper, o cirio.
a Box, a caixa.
a Coffer or Cheſt, a arca, o cofre.
a Basket, o ceſto.
a Tun, o tonnél.
a Pitcher, o jarro.
a Veſſel, o vaſo.
a Hogſhead, o quarto.
a Pipe, a pipa.
a Barrel, o barril.
a Tap, o eſpicho.
a Cork, o ſobro.
a Kettle, o caldeirám.
a Spit, o eſpeto.
a Ladle, o golherám.
a Sponge, a eſponja.
a Pair of Bellows, o fóle.
a Chamber-pot, o ourinól.
a Privy, a privada.
a Wheel, a roda.
a Comb, o péntem.
a Needle, a agulha.
a Pin, a alfinete.
a Razor, a navalha.
a Pair of Spectacles, os ócolos.
a Bruſh, a eſcova, baſſóura.

Of the Country, *da campanha.*

a Village, a aldéa.
a Country-house, a quinta.
a Barn, o celéyro.
a Court-yard, o páteo.
a Field, o campo.
a Meadow, o prado.
a Garden, o jardím.
an Orchard, o pomár.
a Hedge, a sebe.
a Gardener, o jardinéiro.
a Farmer, o quintéiro.
a Countryman, o villám.
a Plough, o harado.
Dung, o esterco.
a Fork, a forca.
a Sickle or Scythe, a fóuce.
a Flail, o mangual de debulhar.
a Spade, a emxada.
a Wheel-barrow, o carreto.
a Cart, a charreta.
a Waggon, o carro.
a Highway, a estrada réal.
a Way, o caminho.
a Journey, a jornada
a Joyage, o viágem.
a Coach, o coche.
a Coachman, o cochéiro.
a Carter, o carroéiro.
an Axle-tree, o éixo.
a Pole, o timám.
a Wheel, a roda.
a Bridle, o fréyo.
a Halter, o cabresto.
the Reins, as rédeas.
a Yoke, o jugo.
a Whip, o açoute.
a Spur, a espóra.
a Saddle, a sella.
a Stirrup, o estribo.

Of Societies, Dignities, Handicraftsmen, Musick, and Games, *das sociedades, dignidades, dos artifices, dá musica e dos jogos.*

a Family, a familia.
a Republick, a republica.
a Kingdom, o réyno.
an Empire, o império.
a Master, o amo, o senhóra.
a Mistress, a ama, a senhóra.
a Man-servant, o criado o servo, o lacáyo.
a Maid-servant, a criada,
a Citizen, o cidadám.
a Magistrate, o magestrado.
an Emperor, o emperadór.
an Empress, a emperatriz.
a King, o réy.
a Queen, a raynha.
a Prince, o principe.
a Princess, a princessa,

a Duke,

a Duke, o duque.
a Dutcheſs, a duqueza.
a Marquis, o marquéz.
a Marchioneſs, a marqueſa.
a Count or Earl, o conde.
a Counteſs, a condeza.
a Viſcount, o viſconde.
a Viſcounteſs, a viſcondeſa.
a Baron, o barám.
a Baroneſs, a baroneſa.
a Nobleman, o nobre.
a Knight, o cavalhéyro.
a Gentleman, o fidalgo.
the People, o povo.
a Stranger, o foraſtéiro.
the Mob or Rabble, o vulgo.
a Crowd, a multidám.
a Nation, a naçám.
a Crown, a coróa.
a Scepter, o cetro.
a Throne, o trono.
a Court, a corte.
a Vice-roy, o vice réy.
an Ambaſſador, o embaixador.
an Envoy, o enviado.
a Governor, o governador.
a Reſident, o reſidente.
the Lord Chancellor, o chancelor mór.
the Lord Chamberlain, o camaréiro mór.
the Lord Steward, o mor domo mayór.
the Lord Treaſurer, o teſouréyro mór.
a Privy Counſellor, o conſelheiro do conſelho privado.
a Secretary of State, o Secretario de eſtado.
a Courtier, o corteſám.
a Trade, o officio.
a Handicraftſman, o artifices.
an Armourer, o eſpingardeiro.
a Barber, o barbéyro.
a Bookſeller, o livréyro.
a Blackſmith, o ferréyro.
a Maſon or Bricklayer, o pedréyro.
a Butcher, o carnicéyro.
a Cabinet-maker, o caixinhéyro.
a Carpenter, o carpintéyro.
a Chandler, o candiéyro.
a Cobler, o remendám.
a Collier, o carvoéyro.
a Confectioner, o confeitéyro.
a Cooper, o toneléyro.
a Cutler, o faquéyro.
a Dyer, o tinturéyro.
a Farrier, o ferradór.
a Fruiterer, o frutéiro.
a Girdler, o cinturéyro.
a Glaſier, o vidracéyro.
a Goldſmith, o pratéiro.
a Grocer, eſpecéiro.
a Hatter, o chapeléyro.

a Hoſier, o meéyro.
a Joiner, o mercenéyro.
a Mountebank, o charlatám.
a Laundreſs, a lavandéira.
a Merchant, o mercador.
a Miller, o moléiro.
a Mercer, o merciéyro.
a Painter, o pintor.
a Paſtry-cook, o pafteléyro.
a Packer, o embalador.
a Perfumer, o perfumador.
a Plumber, o chumbéiro.
a Porter, o marriola.
a Potter, o olléyro.
a Poulterer, o galinhéiro.
a Printer, o imprimidor.
a Rope-maker, o cordéyro.
a Taylor, o alfayáte.
a Shoe-maker, o çapatéyro.
a Stage-player, o comediante.
a Stone-cutter, o ſcultor de pedras.
a Sword-cutler, o eſpadéyro.
a Vintner, o tavernéiro.
a Weaver, o teſſedor.
a Workman, o obréyro.
an Apprentice, o apprendiz.
a Muſician, o múſico.
an Inſtrument of Muſick, o inſtrumento múſico.
the Harpſicord, o crávo.
the Harp, a harpa.
the Lute, o aláude.
a Flute, a fláuta.
a Violin, a rebeca, o violim.
a Baſs-Viol, o rebecám.
a String, a corda.
a Bow, o arco.
the Bridge, o ponte.
a Tone or Sound, o ſom.
a Diverſion, a diverſám.
a Play or Game, o jogo.
a Dye, o dado.
a Game of Draughts, o jogo de tablas.
the Game of Cheſs, o jogo de enxadres.
a Game of Charts, o jogo de cartas.
a Ball, a pela.
a Racket, a raqueta.

Of a School and Learning, *dá eſcola, e dô apprender.*

a Maſter or Teacher, o méſtre.
a Scholar, o diſcipulo.
Reading, a lectura, o ler.
Writing, a ſcritura.
a Diſcourſe, o diſcurſo.
a Language, a língoa.
an Oration, a oraçám.

a Ser-

a Sermon, o ſermám.
a Letter, a letra.
a Sentence, a ſentença.
a Syllable, a ſílaba.
a Word, a palávra.
a Letter, a carta.
a Book, o livro.
a Treatiſe, o tratado.
a News-paper, as novas, a gazèta.
an Author, o autor.
a Title, o titulo.
a Leaf, a folha.
a Page, a página.
a Pen, a pena.
Ink, a tinta.
an Inkhorn, o tintéiro.
Paper, o papel.
a Quire of Paper, a mam de papel.
a Sheet of Paper, a folha de papel.
a Parchment, o pergaminho.
a Pen-knife, o canivete.
a Line, a linha.
a Rule, a regra.
a Rod, a vara.
a Study, o eſtudo.
a Science, a ciencia.

Of Eccleſiaſtical Affairs, *das cóuſas eccleſiaſticas.*

a Church, a igréja.
a Chapel, a capella.
a Cathedral Church, a igreja catedral.
an Archbiſhop, o arçobiſpo.
a Biſhop, o biſpo.
a Prieſt or Miniſter, o ſacerdote, miniſtro.
a Curate, o cura.
a Deacon, o decano.
a Reader, o leitor.
a Clerk, o clérigo.
an Elder, o anciám.
a Sexton, o ſacriſtám.
a Chaplain, o capelám.
Religion, a religiám.
an Altar, o altar.
a baptiſing Font, a pia de baptiſmo.
an Organ, o órgam.
a Pulpit, o púlpito.
a Pew, o banco.
the Bible, a biblia.
the Teſtament, o teſtamento.
the Goſpel, o evangelho.
the Steeple, o campanario.
a Bell, o ſino.
a Church-yard, o adro.
a Grave, o ſepulcro.
a Funeral, o enteramento.
a Monument, o moymento.

Of Judicial Affairs, *das cóuſas judiciays.*

a Government, o governo.
a Court of Juſtice, a corte de juſtiça.

a Law,

a Law, a léy.
an Example, o exemplo.
a Mayor, o alcáide.
a Judge, o juiz.
an Advocate, o letrodo, avogado.
a Witness, a testimunha.
a Clerk or Secretary, o escrivám.
a Bailiff, o aguazil.
a Common Crier, o pregoéyro.
Right, o diréito.
Justice, a justiça.
Punishment, o castigo.
a Sentence, a sentença.
a Hangman or Executioner, o algoz.
a Crime, o crimem.
Deceit, o engano.
a Fault, a culpa.
Fraud, a fraude.
Theft, o furto.
Treason, a traisam.
Villany, a maldade.
an Adulterer, o adulterio.
a Cut-throat, o assacino.
a Thief, o ladrám.
a Whore, a puta.
Banishment, o desterro.
Death, a morte.
Infamy, a infámia.
a Fine, a penalidade, a multa.
a Prison or Goal, a prizám.
Pardon, o perdám.
Favour, a graça, a favór.
a Gift or Present, a dávida, o dom.
Reputation, a reputaçám.
Authority, a autoridade.
Honour, a honra.
Money, o dinheiro.
Price, o preço.
Pay, a paga.
Praise, o louvór.
Wages, o salario.
a Recompence, a recompensa.

Of War and Peace, *da guerra e paz.*

a Friend, o amigo.
Friendship, amizade.
an Alliance, a confederaçam.
Leisure, a ociosidade.
Safety, a segurança.
Quiet, o descanço.
Disagreement, a discordia.
Danger, o perigo.
an Enemy, o inimigo.
a Tumult, o tumulto.
a Battle, a batalha.
a Combat, a peleja.
Ruin, a ruina.
a Siege, o cerco.
a Victory, a victória.
a Flight, a fugida.

a Con-

a Conqueror, o vencedor.
a General, o general.
an Admiral, a almirante.
a Colonel, o coronel.
a Major, o sargento mor.
a Captain, o capitám.
a Lieutenant, o tenente.
an Ensign, o alfarés.
a Serjeant, o sargento.
a Corporal, o cabo da esquadra.
a Trumpeter, o trombeteiro.
a Soldier, o soldado.
a Horseman, o cavalheiro.
a Dragoon, o dragám.
a Centinel, a sentinela.
a Guard, a guarda.
a Foot-soldier, o soldado infante.
a Company, a companhia.
a Regiment, o regimento.
an Army, o exercito.
a Camp, o arrayál.
a Tent, a tenda.
a Flag or Colours, a bandéira.
Arms or Weapons, as armas.
a Club, a maça.
a Sword, a espada.
a Sling, a funda.
a Bow, o arco.
an Arrow, a setta.
Fire-arms, armas de fogo.
a Cannon, a peça de artilheria, canám.
a Gun, a espingarda,
a Pistol, a pistolete.
Gunpowder, a pólvora.
Shot, pelóuros miudos.
a Bullet, a balla.
a Cannon-ball, a balla de canám.
a Helmet, o capacete.
a Buckler or Shield, o escudo.
a Trumpet, a trombeta.
a Drum, o tambor.
a Kettle-drum, o atabále.

Of Ships, their Loadings, and mercantile Affairs, *de navios, sus cargaçoens*, &c.

a Man of War, o náo de guerra.
a Merchant-man, o navio de carga.
a Sloop, a balandra.
a Fisher-boat, a barca de pescador.
a Galley, a galé.
a Ferry-boat, o barco de passagem.
a Boat, o batel.
a Cock-boat, a barqueta.
an Oar, o remo.

a Wa-

a Waterman or Rower, o reméyro.
a Fleet, a frota.
the Fore-deck, a prôa.
the Stern, a popo.
the Keel, a quilha.
the Deck, as cubertas.
a Captain, o capitam.
a Cabin, a camarote.
the Helm, o leme.
the Stem, o eſpóram.
a Maſt, o maſta.
the Main-yard, a verga.
on board, a bordo.
between Deck, o conves.
a Sail, a vela.
the Main-ſail, a vela grande.
a Pulley, o carrilho.
a Rope, a corda.
a Cable, a amarra.
a Jack, os galhardetes.
the Streamer, a bandéira.
an Anchor, a áncora.
the Lanthorn, a linterna.
a Pole, a vara.
the Pump, a bomba.
the Sounding-line, o prúmo.
the Ballaſt, o laſtro.
the Compaſs, o compaſſo de mareár.
the Pilot, o piloto.
the Maſter, o meſtre.
a Mariner, o marinhéiro.
a Paſſenger, o paſſagéiro.
a Shipwright, o architecto de navios.
a Shipwreck, o naufrágio.
Proviſion, o baſtimento.
Loading, a cargaçam.
Unloading, a deſcarga.
a Contract, o contracto.
Freight, o frete.
a Bill of Lading, o conhecimento.
a Bill of Exchange, a letra de cambio.
a Policy, or Writing of Inſurance, a poliça ou eſcritura de ſeguro.
a Correſpondent, o correſpondente.
a Valuer, o valor.
a Partner, o companhéiro.
a Company, companhia.
Cuſtom or Duty, o deréito.
Entry, a entrada,
the Cuſtom-houſe, a alfángeda.
Goods, as fazendas, géneros.
Merchandizes, mercadorias.
Averidge, a avaria.
Money, o dinhéiro.
Ready Money, dinhéiro de cantado.
Current Money, dinhéiro corrente.
a Bank-Note, huma nota de banco.
Money or Coin, a moeda.

Golden

Golden Coin, moeda dóuro.
Silver Coin, moeda de prata.
Copper Coin, moeda de cobre.
Credit, o crédito.
a Debt, a dívida.
a Debtor, o devedor.
a Creditor, o creditor.
a Caſh, a caixa.
a Caſhier, o caixéiro.
a Bankrupt, o quebrado.
a Banker, o cambiador.
the Exchange, o cambio.
the Bank, o banco.
a Counting-houſe, o contor.
a Book-keeper, o caixeiro.
a Man of Buſineſs, o homem de negocio.
a Merchant, o mercador.
a Deſk, o almario.
the Caſh-book, o livro de caixa.
the Clod-Book, o borrador.
the Journal, o jurnal.
the Ledger, o livro grande
an Account-currant, a conta corrente.
an Account-ſale, a conta de venda.
the Poſt, o corréo.
Advice, o aviſo.
Order, a ordem.
a Letter, a carta.
an Anſwer, a repoſta.
a Bale, a bala.
a Packet, o paquete.
Effects, efféitos.
an Agent, o agente.
a Warehouſe, o almazém.
a Pattern, a moſtra.
Commiſſion, a commiſſão.
a Broker, o corredor.
Brokerage, o corretágem.
a Factor, o negociador.
Intereſt, o interes.
a Letter of Attorney, hum inſtrumento de procuração.
a Charter-party of a Freightment, carto ou inſtrumento de frettamento.
a Letter of Recommendation, huma letra de recommendação.
a Letter of Credit, a letra de credito.
Letters Patent, alvaras do Rey.
a Letter-carrier, o meſſagéiro.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Nouns Adjective.

☞The Words mark'd with *c.* are of the common Gender, both Masculine and Feminine.

ABLE, *skilful*, capáz, *c.*
agreeable, agradável, *c.*
all, todo, da.
alone, so, *c.*
alive, vivo, va.
antient, antíquo, qua.
another, óutro, tra.
any, qualquer, *c.*
bad, máo, mãa.
barbarous, bárbaro, ra.
barren, esteril, *c.*
base, *low*, baixo, xa.
beautiful, bello, la.
big with Child, prenhe, *c.*
bitter, amargo, ga.
blind, cego, ga.
both, ambos, bas.
brisk, *active*, vivaz, *c.*
broad, largo, ga.
captive, captivo, va.
certain, certo, ta.
chaste, casto, ta.
chearful, *gay*, alegre, *c.*
charitable, caritativo, va.
cheap, baráto, ta.
chief, prinipal, *c.*
clean, limpo, pa.
cold, frio, a.
common, comum, múa.
couragious, animóso, sa.
covetous, cobiçosa, sa.
crafty, *cunning*, astuto, ta. sotil, *c.*
contented, contento, ta.
crooked, curvo, va.
convenient, conveniente, *c.*
cruel, cruel, *c.*
courteous, cortes, civil, *c.*
dainty, delicado, da,
deaf, surdo, da.
dead, morto, ta.
dear, caro, ra.
deep, profundo, da.
delightful, deleitóso, gustoso, sa.
dextrous, destro, tra.
different, differente, *c.*
difficult, difficultoso, sa.
diligent, diligente, *c.*
diverse, diverso, sa.
doubtful, duvidoso, sa.
drunk, bébado, da.
dry, seco, ca.
dirty, sujo, ja.
each, cada hum, cada húa.
easy, facil, *c.*
elegant, elegante, *c.*

empty,

empty, vazio, zia.
equal, igual, *c.*
every one, qualquer, *c.*
faint, *feeble*, fraco, ca.
fair, branco, ca, rúivo, va.
falſe, falſo, ſa.
faithful, fiel, *c.*
famous, famoſo, ſa.
fat, gordo, da.
few, póuco, ca.
firm, firme, *c.*
fit, apto, ta.
fooliſh, parvo, va, tonto, ta.
former, precedente, *c.*
fortunate, fortunado, da.
free, libre, *c.*
frequent, frequente, *c.*
freſh, freſco, ca.
full, chéyo, yá.
generous, generoſo, ſa.
genteel, gentil, *c.*
glad, alegre, *c.*
godly, *pious*, *devout*, piadoſo, ſa, devoto, ta.
good, bom, bóa.
great, grande, *c.*
greedy, avarente, *c.*
guilty, culpado, da.
half, méyo, ya.
handſome, fermoſo, ſa.
happy, ditoſo, ſa, felíz, *c.*
hard, duró, ra.
hard, *difficult*, díſficultoſo, ſa.
high, alto, ta.
hollow, cóncavo, va.
holy, ſanto, ta.
honeſt, honeſto, ta.
honourable, honorado, da.
how many, quantos?
how great, quanto? quam grande?
jealous, cióſo, ſa.
imperfect, imperféito, ta.
induſtrious, induſtrioſo, ſa
intire, intéiro, ra.
joyful, jocundo, da.
juſt, juſto, ta.
kind, favorável, *c.*
knowing, ſabido, da.
lame, coxo, xa.
large, largo, ga.
lazy, preguizoſo, ſa.
lean, magro, gra, fraco, ca.
learned, docto, ta.
left-handed, eſquerdo, da.
liberal, liberal, *c.*
like, ſemelhante, *c.*
little, piqueno, na.
little or few, póuco, ca.
lonely, sô zinho, ha.
long, longo, ga.
low, baixo, xa.
maimed, mocho, cha, aleijado, da.
manifeſt, manifeſto, ta, evidente, *c.*
many, muíto, ta.
mean, baixo, xa.
merciful, miſericordioſo, ſa.
merry, alegre, *c.*
middle, méyo, ya.
miſerable, miſerável, *c.*

modeſt, modeſto, ta.
moderate, moderado, da.
more, máis, *c.*
too much, demaſiado.
naked, nú, núa.
narrow, eſtréito, ta.
neat, *pretty*, lindo, da.
neceſſary, neceſſário, ria.
neither, nenhum nem óutro.
new, novo, va.
noble, nobre, *c.*
none, nenhum, hua.
old, velho, ha.
odious, *tireſome*, odioſo, emfadoſo, ſa.
pale, palido, da.
pleaſant, agradavel, *c.*
plentiful, copioſo, ſa.
powerful, poderoſo, ſa.
poor, pobre, *c.*
preſent, preſente, *c.*
pretty, lindo, da.
private, oculto, ta.
prodigal, pródigo, ga.
profane, profano, na.
profitable, proveitave, *c.*
proper (one's own) próprio, pria.
proſperous, próſpero, ra.
proud, ſoberbo, ba.
publick, público, ca.
pure, puro, ra.
quick or ſwift, promto, ta, acelerado, da.
rare, raro, ra.
raſh, temerário, ria.
raw, crú, crúa.
ready, promto, ta.
reſolute, determinado, da.
rich, rico, ca.
right, diréito, ta.
ripe, maduro, ra.
roaſted, aſſado, da.
rough, áſpero, ra.
round, redondo, da.
rude, *uncivil*, ruſtico, ca, deſcortez, *c.*
ſacred, ſagrado, da.
ſad, triſte, *c.*
ſafe, ſalvo, va.
ſalted, ſalgado, da.
ſame, meſmo, ma.
ſavage, bravo, va.
ſecret, ſecreto, ta.
ſecure, ſeguro, ra.
ſevere, ſevero, ra.
ſhort, *brief*, curto, ta, breve, *c.*
ſick, enfermo, ma, doente, *c.*
ſlow, vagaroſo, ſa.
ſmooth, lizo, za.
ſober, ſóbrio, bria.
ſoft, brando, da, mole, *c.*
ſound, ſão, ſãa.
ſour, azedo, da, agro, gra.
ſpreading, *extended*, eſtendido, da.
ſtill, *quiet*, aſſoſegado, da.
ſtinking, fedorento, ta.
ſtraight, eſtréito, ta.
ſtranger, eſtrangéiro, ra.
ſtrong, forte, *c.*
ſubtle, *crafty*, ſotil, ſagaz, *c.* aſtuto, ta.

ſuch

ſuch, tal, *c.*
ſure, ſeguro, ra.
ſweet, doce, *c.*
ſwift, ligéiro, ra.
tall, alto, ta.
tender, tenro, ra.
terrible, *cruel*, terríbel, cruél, *c.*
thankful, agradecido, da.
thick, groſſo, ſa.
thin, delgado, da.
tired, canſado, da.
torn, raſgado, da.
troubleſome, emfadoſo, ſa.
true, verdadéiro, ra.
vain, vam, vãa.
valiant, *ſtrong*, magnánimo, ma, forte, *c.*
ugly, féyo, ya.
unable, incapaz, *c.*
unmarried, *ſingle*, ſoltéyro, ra.
uncivil, deſcortes, *c.*
unſavoury, *inſipid*, deſſaboróſo, ſa, inſavido, da.
utmoſt, extremo, ma.
wandring, vagabundo, da.
wanton, *laſcivious*, laſcívo, va.
weak, fraco, ca, debíl, *c.*
weary, *tired*, fatigado, canſado, da.
wet, húmido, molhado, da.
what mauner, que manéyra?
what number, que número?
which, qual, *c.*
whole, *all*, inteiro, ra, todo, da.
whoſoever, qualquer, *c.* quemquer, *c.*
wicked, malvado, da.
wild, bravo, va.
wiſe, prudente, *c.* ſãbio, bia.
witty, *facetious*, ingenhoſo, ſa.
wonderful, milagroſo, ſa.
worſe, peiór, *c.*
worthy, dino, na.
wounded, chagado, da.
young, moço, ça.
zealous, zeloſo, ſa.

CHAP. III.

Of Numbers, *dós números.*

ONE, hum, húa.
two, dóus, duas.
three, tres, *c.*
four, quatro, *c.*
five, cinco, *c.*
ſix, ſéys, *c.*
ſeven, ſete, *c.*
eight, óuto, *c.*

nine, nove.
ten, dez.
eleven, onze.
twelve, doze.
thirteen, treze.
fourteen, catorze.
fifteen, quinze.
ſixteen, dez e ſéys.
ſeventeen, dez e ſete.
eighteen, dez e óuto.
nineteen, dez e nove.
twenty, vinte.
twenty-one, vinte e hum.
twenty-two, vinte e dous.
twenty-three, vinte e tres.
twenty-four, vinte e quatro.
twenty-five, vinte e cinto.
thirty, trinta.
forty, quarenta.
fifty, cincoenta.
ſixty, ſecenta.
ſeventy, ſetenta.
eighty, outenta.
ninety, noventa.
hundred, cem, cento.
two hundred, duzentos, tas.
three hundred, trecentos, tas.
four hundred, quatrocentos, tas.
five hundred, quinhentos, tas.
a thouſand, mil.
hundred thouſand, cem mil.
a million, milhão.

Of Ordinal Numbers,
dós números de ordem.

the firſt, priméyro, priméyra.
the ſecond, ſegundo, da.
the third, tercéiro, ra.
the fourth, quarto, ta.
the fifth, quinto, ta.
the ſixth, ſexto, ta.
the ſeventh, ſeptimo, ma.
the eighth, outavo, va,
the ninth, nono, na.
the tenth, décimo, ma.
the eleventh, onzeno, na.
the twelfth, dozeno, na.
the thirteenth, trezeno, na
the fourteenth, catorzeno, na.
the fifteenth, quinzeno, na.
the ſixteenth, décimo ſexto, ta.
the ſeventeenth, décimo ſeptimo, ma.
the twentieth, vinteino, na.
the twenty-firſt, o vinte hum, a vinte húa.
the twenty-ſecond, o vinte dous.
the thirtieth, trintéino, na
the hundredth, centéſimo, ma.
the thouſandth, milléſimo, ma.
the middlemoſt, méyo, ya.
the laſt, último, ma.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Of Colours, *dás cores.*

Shining, o, a lucente.
clear, claro, ra.
pale, pállido, da.
white, branco, ca.
grey, pardo, da.
pearl grey, cor de perla.
dark grey, pardo eſcuro.
Aſh Colour, cor de cinza.
dark, eſcuro, ra.
black, negro, gra.
brown, moreno, na, fuſgo, ga.
Cheſnut Colour, cor de caſtanha.
yellow, amarello, la.
Citron or Limon Colour, cor de cidram, lemam.
Orange Colour, cor de laranja.
blue, azúl, *c.*
Sky-blue, azúl celeſte.
Violet Colour, morado, da, violeto, ta.
purple, púrpura.
green, verde, *c.*
light green, verde claro.
Olive Colour, cor de azeytona.
dark green, verde eſcuro.
red, corado, vermelho.
Carnation, *Fleſh Colour*, encarnado.
Fire Colour, cor de fogo.
ſcarlet, eſcarlate, grana.
Roſe Colour, cor de roſa.
Cherry Colour, cor de cereija.
crimſon, carmeſi.
Brick Colour, vermelho bucarado.

CHAP. V.

A Collection of the moſt neceſſary and common Verbs, *Huma abreviação dós verbos mais neceſſarios e comums.*

To ſtudy, eſtudar.
to learn, aprender.
to read, lér.
to write, eſcrever.
to correct, corrigir.
to begin, começar.
to continue, continuár.
to end, acabar.
to do, fazer.
to know, conhecer.
to be able, poder.
to deſire or will, querer.

Of Speaking, *dó fallar.*

to ſpeak, fallar.
to ſay, dizer.
to pronounce, pronunciar.
to converſe, converſar.
to be ſilent, callarſe.
to call, chamar.
to anſwer, reſponder.
to aſk, perguntar.

To eat and drink, *de comér e beber.*

to eat, comer.
to drink, beber.
to chew, maſtigar.
to ſwallow, engulir.
to cut cortar.
to taſte, goſtar.
to faſt, jejunar.
to breakfaſt, almoçar.
to dine, jantar.
to ſup, cear.
to be hungry, ter fome.
to be thirſty, ter ſede.

To go to Bed, *de hir a cama.*

to lie down, deitarſe.
to go to bed, hir a cama.
to ſleep, dormir.
to watch, velar, vigiar.
to dream, ſonhar.
to wake, eſpertar, acordar do ſono.
to riſe, alevantarſe.

To dreſs one's ſelf, *de veſtirſe.*

to dreſs, veſtirſe.
to undreſs, quitar, déitar os veſtidos.
to put on the Hat, pór o chapéo.
to cover one's ſelf, cubrirſe.
to put on the Shoes, por os çapatos.
to put on the Stockings, por as méyás.
to waſh one's ſelf, lavarſe.

The Actions of Man, *as acçóens dó homem.*

to laugh, rir.
to cry, chorar.
to ſigh, ſuſpirar.
to ſneeze, eſpirar.
to blow, aſſoprar.
to whiſtle, aſſoviar.
to ſing, cantar.
to command, ordenar.
to obey, obedecer.
to hear, ouvir.
to ſmell, cheirar.
to ſpit, cuſpir.
to ſee, ver.
to ſweat, ſuar.
to feel, tocar.
to tremble, tremer.
to cough, tuſſir.
to look, olhar.

to pinch, belliſcar,
to ſcratch, aranhar.
to ſtrike, ferir.
to wound, chagar.
to give, dar.
to take, tomar.
to kill, matar.
to pay, pagar.
to owe, dever.
to ſwear, jurar.

Actions of Love, *acçóens de amor.*

to love, amar.
to careſs, acariciar.
to flatter, liſongear.
to embrace, abraçar.
to kiſs, beijar.
to ſalute, ſaudar.
to teach, enſinar.
to nouriſh, nutrir.
to correct, corregir.
to puniſh, punir.
to chaſtiſe, caſtigar.
to touch, tocar.
to whip, açoutar.
to deny, negar.
to defend, defender.
to beat, bater.
to hate, aborrecer.
to pardon, perdoar.
to diſpute, diſputar.
to quarrel, brigar, litigar.
to protect, emparar.
to abandon, deſamparar.
to bleſs, bendizer.
to curſe, maldizer.
to grant, conceder.

For the Sick, *pólos doentes.*

to dreſs, affeitar.
to cure, ſarar, curar.
to be better, ſe achar melhor.
to bleed, ſangrar.
to take Phyſick, tomar mezinha.
to purge, purgar.
to cut, cortar.
to prick, picar.
to examine, examinar.
to break, quebrar.
to heal, ſarar.

To buy, *por comprar.*

to buy, comprar.
to ſell, vender.
to cheapen, regatear.
to value, avaliar, eſtimar.
to meaſure, medir.
to pay, pagar.
to offer, offerecer.
to lend, empreſtar.
to borrow, pedir preſtado.
to engage, empenhar.
to cheat, enganar.
to gain, ganhar.
to loſe, perder.

For the Church, *póla igreija.*

to pray, rezar.
to preach, pregar.
to baptize, bautizar.
to ring the Bells, repicar os ſinos.

Actions of Motion, *acçoens de mover.*

to go, hir.
to walk, pacear.
to come, vir.
to return, tornar.
to ſtop, parar.
to march, marchar.
to run, correr.
to follow, ſeguir.
to flee, fugir.
to eſcape, eſcapar.
to depart, partir.
to advance, adiantar.
to retire, retirarſe.
to approach, chegar.
to turn, voltar.
to fall, cahir.
to ſlide, eſcorregar.
to hurt, fazer mal.
to arrive, chegar.
to enter, entrar.
to go out, ſahir.
to mount, ſubir.
to deſcend, decer, hir para baixo.
to ſit down, acentarſe.

Manual Actions, *acçóens de mãos.*

to work, trabalhar.
to touch, tocar.
to handle, apalpar.
to bind, attar.
to looſen, ſoltar.
to take away, tirar.
to take, tomar.
to rob, roubar.
to gather, colher.
to tear or rend, raſgar.
to preſent, apreſentar.
to receive, receber.
to hold, ter.
to break, quebrar, romper.
to hide, eſconder.
to cover, cubrir.
to diſcover, deſcubrir.
to dirty, ſujar.
to clean, limpar.
to rub, esfregar.
to ſhew, moſtrar.
to tickle, cocegar.
to ſcratch, aranhar.

Of Memory and Imagination, *dá memoria e imaginaçám.*

to remember, lémbrarſe.
to forget, eſquecer.
to think, cuidar.
to believe, crer.
to doubt, duvidar.
to ſuſpect, ſoſpeitar.

to obſerve, obſervar.
to take care, tomar cuidado.
to imagine, imaginar.
to wiſh, dezejar.
to hope, eſperar.
to fear, recear.
to aſſure, aſſegurar.
to judge, julgar.
to conclude, concluir.
to reſolve, reſolver.
to feign, diſſimular.
to grow angry, agaſtarſe.
to finiſh, acabar, finir.

Of Arts and Tradeſmen, *dás artes e artifices.*

to paint, pintar.
to engrave, eſculpir.
to draw, tirar.
to draw (as Painters do) traçar, debuxar.
to embroider, broſlar.
to enamel, eſmaltar.
to gild, dóurar.
to print, imprimir.
to work, trabalhar, obrar.

Of Shipping and mercantile Affairs, *dó navegar e negocios de mercadores.*

to embark, embarcar.
to load, carregar.
to inſure, aſſegurar.
to freight, fretar.
to ſail, navegar, dar vela.
to unload, deſcarregar.
to riſk, aventurar.
to ſink, margulharſe.
to drown, affogar.
to recover, recobrar.
to eſcape, eſcapar.
to agree, eſtar dácordo.
to promiſe, prometer.
to oblige one's ſelf, obrigar ſe.
to declare, declarar.
to confeſs, confeſſar.
to ſign, aſſinar.
to correſpond, correſponder.
to ſtay, ficar.
to contract, contratar.
to charge to Account, carregar a conta.
to credit, abonar.
to pack or ſtow, arrumar.
to anchor, ancorar.
to certify, certificar.
to aſſign, aſſinar.
to ſeal, ſellar.
to confirm, confirmar.
to recover, cobrar.
to accept, acceitar.
to indorſe, endoſſar.
to draw, tirar.
to remit, remeter.
to demand, demandar.
to advise, aviſar.
to order, ordenar.
to conſign, conſignar.
to obligate one's ſelf, empenhar ſe.
to pack, embalar.

FAMILIAR DIALOGUES IN *English* and *Portuguese.*

Dialogue I.

Some Compliments.

GOOD *Morrow (Day) Sir; how do you do?*

Very well, God be thanked, at your Service.

Not very well.

I thank you, Sir, (a thousand Years to you) I am your Servant.

How doth the Gentleman your Brother do?

He is in Health; he is well; but my Sister is ill of a Fever and Ague.

I am glad to hear it.

I am sorry for it.

Pratica I.

Alguns comprimentos.

BONS dias, Senhor; como está V. M.? (Vossa Mercé.)

Múy bem, graças á Deos, para servir á V. M.

Não muy bom.

Agradeço, a V. M. mil ánnos, sóu seu criado.

Como está o Senhor seu irmão?

Está com saude; está bom; porem minha irmãa está doente de huma febre e maléitas.

Folgo de ouvilo. A mim me pesa múito.

Sit

Sit down, Sir: Boy, give a Chair to the Gentleman.

It is not necessary; for I must go to make a Visit to Mr. N.

Is he arrived in Safety, (in Health?)

Yes, Sir. It is Time for me to go.

You are in great Haste, Sir; stay a while; for I want to see him too, and we will go together.

I will come back; I cannot stay now; good bye, I kiss your Hands.

Acente se V. M. Rapáz, da ca huma cadéira ao Senhor.

Não he necessario; porque ey de fazer huma visita ao Senhor N.

Chegóu ja em salvamento (com saude?)

Si Senhor. He tempo que eu me va.

V. M. está muy apressado; espere hum pouco; que eu quero tambem vélo, e hiremos juntos.

Eu tornarey outra vez; agora não posso aguardar; a Deos, beijo as mãos de V. M.

Dialogue II.

Of rising from Bed, and Dressing.

WHO *knocks at the Door? who is there?*

A Friend. Open the Door.

I ask Pardon, Sir; is it you? I did not know who it was.

Walk in, Sir; you come very early; is there any body else?

No, Sir; but why are you so late in Bed?

Pratica II.

De alevantar e vestirse.

QUEM bate á porta? quem esta ali?

Amigo. Abre a porta.

Perdóa Senhor, V. M. he? não sabia quem era.

Entre Senhor, V. M. vem bem sedo; está cá alguem mais?

Não Senhor; mas porque esta V. M. tam tarde na cama.

Because

Becaufe I am very tired with my Journey; what a-Clock is it?

Porque fico muy canfado de minha jornada; que hóras fam?

The Clock has ftruck Ten.

O relogio deu dez horas.

Is it fo late? I was miftaken in my Reckoning.

Tam tarde he? fiquéy enganado ná minha conta.

You are lazy, Sir; make hafte, and rife quickly.

V. M. He muy preguiçofo; avie, e levantefe de preffa.

Let me alone; I muft fleep yet longer, I have not flept well laft Night, and my Head aches.

Déixame; ey de dormir ainda mais, não dormí bem éfta nóite; e me dóe a cabeça.

Don't you remember, Sir, that you have Bufinefs to do upon Change?

Não fe lembra V. M. que tem negocios que fazer ná bolfa?

'Tis true, and for that Reafon I muft rife. Boy, give me my Shoes and Stockings.

He verdade; e por éfta rezão he mefter que me alevante. Rapaz, da cá as méias e os çapatos.

Where are they? I cannot find 'em.

Aónde eftám? não os poffo achar.

Go to look for them; I believe they are under the Bed.

Vay bufcallos; créyo que eftám em baixo dá cama.

They are not there; I don't fee them.

Alí nam eftam; eu não os véjo.

Put on your Breeches and Coat, and put on your Shoes.

Vefte os calçóens e a cafaca; e calca os çapatos.

Take out of the Cheft a Cravat and Ruffles, and forget not to comb my Peruke.

Tirá dá caixa a gravata com punhos, e nam efqueça de pentear a minha cabeléira.

Sir,

Sir, where is the Comb? I ſee none, neither of Horn or Box.

Senhor, onde eſtá o pentem; não acho nenhum nem de ponta nem de buxo.

You'll find it on the Table behind the Looking-glaſs. Give me ſome clean Water to waſh my Hands, and a Towel.

O acharas ná meſa detrás dó eſpelho. Da cá agoa limpa para lavar as mãos, com huma toalha.

Here are your Cloaths, Sir; but won't you put on a clean Shirt To-day?

Eis aqui tem V. M. ſeus veſtidos; mas nam quer pór hoje huma camiſa limpa?

Yes, I did not think on it, this is very dirty.

Si, não penſéy níſto; eſta eſtá muito ſuja.

I don't wonder at it; for it is now three Days ſince you put it on clean.

Nam me eſpanto diſſo; pois ha agora tres dias que V. M. póz a limpa.

Whoſe Fault is it?

Quem tem a culpa?

Not mine, Sir, becauſe the Laundreſs is not come with your Linen as ſhe ought.

Não a tenho eu, por que a lavandéyra não tem vindo com a róupa como devía.

Go to her To-day, and bid her come and ſpeak with me To-morrow Morning early.

Váy ter com ella oje, e diz lhe, que venha fallar comigo ſedo pella menhãã.

Sir, I don't ſee your Handkerchief.

Senhor não vejo o ſeu lénço.

May be they ſtole it out of my Coat Pocket laſt Night in the Street; then take Money to buy me another.

Pode ſer que mó roubaram dá algibeira da caſaca ontem a nóite ná Rua; pois toma dinhéiro para comprar óutro.

What will it coſt?

Quanto hade cuſtar?

Here

Here is a Crown, and return me the reſt.

Eis aqui hum cruzado, e torname a dar ademaſía.

What Sort muſt it be; of Silk, Cotton, or Linen?

Deque ſorte ha de ſer, de ſeda, algodão, o pano de linho?

Let it be of a fine Silk, becauſe the coarſe ones are not ſtrong; but before you go give me my Hat, Sword, Cane, and Gloves; for I go out with this Gentleman to breakfaſt at my Uncle's (in my Uncle's Houſe.)

Que ſeija de ſeda fina (delgada) porque os de ſeda groſſa não são fortes; más antes que vas dacá o chapéo, a eſpada, com a cana e luvas, porque eu vóu com eſte Senhor almorçar em caſa de meu tio.

Now I think you are dreſs'd; and, if you pleaſe, we will go to Change, to ſee what News there is, or if any Poſt is arrived.

Agora a mim me parece, eſtá V. M. veſtido de todo, e ſe quer hiremos pella bolſa para ver que novas ha, ou ſe tem chegado algum coréo.

'Tis well, I'll go with you; but, with your Leave, we muſt breakfaſt firſt.

Eſta bem, hirey com voſco, mas priméiro com licença de V. M. temos de almòrçar.

Then let us go to a Coffee-houſe, to drink a Diſh of Coffee or Chocolate, and at the ſame Time we may read the News-papers.

Pois vámonos á hum coffé, para beber huma tigela de coffé ou de chocolate, e nó meſmo tempo podremos lér as gazetas.

I muſt call, en paſſant, *at my Uncle's, who, I am perſuaded, will be very glad to ſee you.*

Ey de entrar, ao paſſar, ná caſa de meu Tio, que eſtóu perſuadido folgara de ver a V. M.

Dialogue

Dialogue III.

Of Breakfaſting.

WHAT will you have for Breakfaſt, Sir?

I'll go into the Kitchen to ſee what the Cook has to give us.

There is nothing but Bread, Butter and Cheeſe, and ſome Fruit, as Pears, Apples, Figs, &c.

Put the Kettle on the Fire to make the Water boil, for I will drink ſome Coffee this Morning.

If you'll eat ſome Meat, Sir, I'll ſend to Market for ſome Veal, Mutton, or Beef.

No, Sir, I don't care to eat Fleſh in the Morning; Bread and Butter with a little Cheeſe is ſufficient for me.

What will you drink? will you pleaſe to taſte the Ale or Beer, or white or red Wine? all theſe Sorts are here at your Service.

Pratica III.

De almorçar.

QUE quer V. M. para almorçar.

Hirey ná cuſinha para ver o que tem o cuſinheiro (a cuſinheira) que darnos.

Não ha ſenám pão, mateiga e quéijo, e alguma fruta, como peras, maçãas, figos, &c.

Poem a caldéyra ſobre o fogo, para fazer ferver a agoa, porque quero beber coffé éſta menhãa.

Se V. M. quizer comer carne, eu mandarey à praça, por vitela, carnéiro, ou vaca.

Não Senhor, a mim não ſe meda de comer carne pela menhãa, pão e manteiga com hum pouco de queijo baſta para mim.

Que quer V. M. beber? ſera V. M. ſervido de provar Ella ou cerveja, ou vinho branco ou tinto? todas eſtas ſortes eſtám aqui ao ſeu ſervicio de V. M.

With

With your Leave, I'll drink ſome red Wine with Water.	Com licença de V. M. beberéy vinho tinto com ágoa.
Why don't you cut a Piece of Bread? have you no Knife, Sir?	Por que não corta huma fatía de pam? não tem V. M. faca?
Yes, I have. To your Health, Sir.	Si tenho. A ſua ſaude de V. M.
I thank you (to you many Years.)	Agradeço (a V. M. muitos annos.)
I think it is pleaſanter to drink out of the Glaſs than the Cup.	A mim me parece mais goſtoſo beber dó copo de vidro que dó púcaro.
Drink it all; I take it to be good Wine.	Beba todo, tenho para mim que o vinho he regalado.
I can drink no more, I have drank enough.	Não, poſſo mais Senhor, tenho bebido baſtante.
What think you of the Wine.	Que lhe parece á V. M. do vinho.
The Wine is very good.	O vinho he muy bom.
You don't eat.	V. M. não come.
I have eat ſo much that I ſhall not be able to dine.	Tenho comido tanto que não podrey jantar.

Dialogue IV.	Pratica IV.
To ſpeak Portugueſe.	*Para fallar Portuguez.*
HOW *goes the Portugueſe? Are you well advanced in the Portugueſe Tongue?*	COMO vái dó Portuguez? Eſtá V. M. bem avançado ná lingòa Portugueza?

Not

Not much; I am as yet not very learned.	Nam muito; ainda não eſtó muí perito.
Yet they ſay you talk very well.	Porem dizem que V. M. falla mui bem.
I wiſh to God it was true; thoſe that ſay it are much miſtaken.	Provéra Deos què foſſe verdade; os que o dizem ſe enganam muito
I aſſure you, Sir, I was told it.	Lhe aſſeguro a V. M. que mo diceram.
I can ſay ſome Words I know by heart.	Poſſo dezir algumas palavras que tenho de cor.
That is neceſſary to begin.	Iſſo he neceſſario para começar.
It is not enough to begin, but it is neceſſary alſo to end.	Não he baſtante para começar, mas he miſter tambem para acabar.
Speak always, well or ill, that's no Matter; this Language is not difficult.	Fallay ſempre, bem ou mal, iſſo não importa nada; eſta lingoa não he mui difficultoſa.
I know it, and that it is very uſeful in ſeveral Parts of the World.	Eu o ſéy, e que he mui util em differentes partes dó mundo.
Particularly to Men of Buſineſs.	Párticularmente a homens de negocio.
How happy ſhould I be if I knew it!	O que ſeria eu ditoſo ſe a ſoubera!
You muſt ſtudy to learn it.	Hade eſtudar para ſabélla.
How long is it that you have learnt?	Quanto tempo ha que V. M. tem aprendido?
It is not yet quite a Month.	Não ha ainda hum mez.
What is your Maſter's Name?	Como ſe chama o ſeu meſtre.
His Name is Mr. N.	Se chama Senhor N.

I have known him a long Time; he has taught several of my Friends: Doth he not tell you that you must speak Portuguese?

Yes, Sir, he tells it me often.

For why don't you speak then?

With whom should I speak?

With those who speak to you.

I would fain speak, but I dare not.

You must not be timorous; but boldly speak, well or ill.

Eu o conheço muito tempo ha; tem ensinado a muitos dós meus amigos: Nam lhe diz a V. M. que ha mistér fallar Portuguez?

Si Senhor mó diz muitas vezes.

Por que rezão então não falla V. M.?

Com quem fallaria eu?

Com os que lhe fallarem a V. M.

Eu quisera fallar porem não me atrevo.

V. M. não deve ser medroso; mas ha de fallar intrepidamente bem ou roim (mão.)

Dialogue V.

Of the Weather.

WHAT *Weather is it?*

It is good Weather. It is bad Weather.

Is it cold? Is it warm?

The Weather is temperate; neither cold nor hot.

Doth it rain?

No, for the Sky is clear (serene.)

Pratica V.

Dó Tempo.

QUE tempo faz?

Faz bom tempo. Faz tempo roim.

Faz frio? Faz calor?

O tempo está temperado; nem frio nem quente.

Chove?

Não, porque o céo esta claro (sereno)

The

The Weather is changed. Yeſterday the Sky was very cloudy and rainy.

O tempo eſtá mudado; ontem o céo eſtáva muy nevoado, e chuvoſo.

But as the Wind is not changed, I fear we ſhall have Rain.

Más como o vento não eſtá mudado recéo teremos chuva.

It will not rain today.

Não choverá oje.

I believe it will thunder and lighten.

Créio que avera trovoada e relámpagos.

That may be; but I am ſure it will not ſnow.

Iſſo pode ſer (iſſo ſi) porem eſtóu perſuadido que não nevará.

For certain; 'tis more probable that it will hail.

Por certo; he mais provavel que ha de pedriſcar.

You have a great Cold, Sir.

V. M. eſtá muito reſfriado.

I have had this Cold this Fortnight.

Tive éſte frio quinze dias ha.

I don't wonder; it is a very common Thing, and the Fruit of the Seaſon.

Não me admiro; he couſa mui commúa, e a fruita dá ſezão.

What ſhall we do to paſs the Time till Dinner?

Que faremos para paſſar o tempo até o jantar?

Let us take a little Walk.

Vámonos paſſear hum pouco.

With all my Heart. I conſent; but whither ſhall we go?

De todo meu coração. Eu conſento; más onde hemos de hir?

Let us go to walk in the Garden.

Vámonos paſſear nó jardim.

Let us go; but ſee firſt if the Key is in the Door.

Vamos; mas véja primeiro ſe á chave eſtá ná porta.

Yes, it is, but I cannot open the Door; the Key is rusty.

Let me see; if you turn it that Way you'll break it.

What think you of the Garden? Is it not fine and pleasant?

Yes, Sir, these Shades and Arbours look very beautiful.

Let us walk in that Walk, where it is not so hot.

This Walk is beautify'd with a thousand various kinds of Flowers.

I think the Roses, with the Tulips and the Ranuncles, with the Carnations and Lilies, charm the Eye with the Briskness of their Colour.

This Place is a Paradise on Earth.

Gather any of these Flowers, if you please, to make a Nosegay.

No, Sir, it is enough for me to smell them here, and that I have the Pleasure of seeing them in their Spring.

This is my Pastime when I am alone.

Si, esta, porem não posso abrir a porta; a chave está ferrugenta.

Deixama ver; se V. M. a vira por esta parte, a quebrará.

Como lhe parece o jardim? não he lindo e prazentéiro?

Si Senhor, estes arvoredos e ramados tem bellissima vista.

Passeémos naquelle passeo, a ónde não faz tanta calma.

Este passeo está rodeodo com mil varios géne-de flores.

A mim me paréce que as rosas, com as tulipas e os renúnculos com os cravos e lirios encantão os olhos com a viveza de suas cores brilhantes.

Este lugar he hum Paraíso terreal.

Colha V. M. quaesquér déstas flores se quizer, para faser hum ramalhéte.

Não Senhor, basta para mim que as chéiro aqui, e que tenho o gosto de vellas ná súa primavera.

Este he o méu passa tempo quando estóu sozinho.

I muſt take my Leave of you, Sir; I have ſomething to do at home that cannot be excuſed.

Ey de deſpedirme de V. M. tenho que fazer em caſa que não ſe póde excuſar.

That cannot be; out of Civility you ought to dine with me.

Iſſo não ſe ha de ſoffrer; em corteſia ha de jantar comígo.

With your Leave, Sir, I muſt go, for the Buſineſs is very urging; another Time I will accept your Favour.

Com licença de V. M. ey de ir, pois o negocio he muy preciſo; para outra vez aceitarei o ſeu favor.

Dialogue VI.

Of Dinner.

I Believe it is near Dinner-time; let us go home.

I agree, for I am hungry.

Here, Boy, go to ſee if Dinner be ready.

I go, Sir, but I believe it is yet early.

Lay the Cloth, and bring the Salt-ſeller, with clean Plates and Napkins. Bring here Knives and Forks and Spoons, and let the Soop come upon the Table. Sit down, Sir, and let us uſe (let there be) no Ceremonies.

This is my favourite Diſh (greateſt Dainty) I

Pratica VI.

Dô jantar.

CRéyó que ſerám horas de jantar, vámos pera caſa.

Eu conſento, porque ténho fome.

O rapaz, vay ver ſe o jantar eſtá féito.

Eu vóu Senhor, mas créyo que ainda he ſedo.

Poem a meſa, e tráz o ſaléiro com pratos e guardanápos limpos. Dacá fácas, gárfos, e colheres, e venham as ſopas ſobre a meſa. Acente ſe V. M. e não aja ceremonia.

Iſſo he o meu mayór regalo, paraceme são

think it is good, and well ſeaſoned.

bóas e bem temparadas.

Theſe Turnips are delicious, and the Carrots with the Cabbage are not bad.

Eſtes nabós ſam regalados, e as cenóuras com a couve não são máas.

They cannot be better.

Não podem ſer melhores.

Be pleaſed to help your ſelf to ſome Beef; I believe it is well roaſted.

Seja V. M. ſervido de partir para ſi dá vaca; créyo que eſtá bem aſſada.

I would rather have boil'd Mutton with Spinage.

Antes queria do carnéiro cozido com eſpinafres.

John, take away this Plate, and bring ſomething elſe to Table.

O João, tira eſte prato, e venha máis que comer á meſa.

It is coming, Sir, the Cook is taking it up, and will ſend it preſently.

Ja vem Senhor, o cozinhéiro eſtá tirándoo, e logo o mandará.

Do you like Wood Pigeons? now is their Seaſon, and they are very fat.

Goſta V. M. dáquellas rólas? agora he ſeu tempo déllas, e ſam bem gordas.

I know it very well, Sir, but I had rather have a Leg of the Turkey, or a Wing of the Gooſe or Capon.

Bem o ſey Senhor, más antes quero a perna dó perú, ou a aza dó pato ou capão.

How do you like this Fiſh? Help yourſelf to ſome Sturgeon; there ſtand the Crewets, with Oil and Vinegar, and there is melted Butter in another Plate.

Como lhe parece éſte peixe? parta V. M. do péixe ſolha; allí eſtám ás galhétas com azéite e vinagre, e nóutro prato tem mantéiga derretida.

'Tis a good Fiſh, and it looks white like Veal.

He hum bom peixe, e parece alvo como vitela.

Shall I help you to ſome of the Turbet? it is very freſh and fat, and in the Opinion of moſt is no contemptible Fiſh.

Quer que eu parta para V. M. dó rodovalho? bem freſco he e gordo, e nó parecer comum, não he péixe deſprezivel.

Lord, Sir, it is one of the beſt that ſwims, and ſo well dreſs'd that it tempts (opens) my Appetite.

Oh Senhor, he húm dos melhores que náda, e de tal modo guiſado, que me abre a vóntade de comer.

Fill the Gentleman ſome Wine; they uſed to ſay in former Times, that Fiſh without Wine is Poiſon.

Enche vinho ao Senhor; foy dito nós tempos antepaſſados, que o péixe ſem vinho he peçonha.

Is there any Snow in the Houſe? if not, put ſome Wine in the Well to cool.

Ha algúa neve em caſa? ſe não ouver, mete o vinho nó poço para esfriar.

There is, Sir; I bought two Pounds To-day, and there are two Bottles of Wine cooling

Ha Senhor; oje compréy dous arrateis, e eſtamſe esfriando duas garafas de vinho.

Fill ſome cool Wine and Water.

Enche vinho frio com agoa ſerenada.

If you pleaſe, Sir, I'll ſend your Boy to the Water-ſide to ſee for a Boat.

Se V. M. for ſervido mandarey o rapaz á praya buſcar hum batel (fragata.)

What for? whither will you go? it is late, I believe no Boat will be found.

Paraque? adónde vay V. M.? já he tarde, creyo que não ſe achara batel (fragata.)

Let him go to ſee; I muſt go on the other Side of the Water.

Que va ver; pois hey de ir a banda dalém dá agoa.

If your Buſineſs is not very preſſing, ſtay till To-morrow, and I will wait on you.

Se o negocio não for muito appreſſado, eſpere até menhãã e acompanharey a V. M.

I will ſtay with all my Heart, but we muſt know what a-Clock the Tide ſerves.

Eſperarey de bóa mente, mas avemos de ſaber a que horas ſerve a maré.

The Tide begins to flow To-morrow Morning, and the Watermen ſay it will be low Water at Five a-Clock in the Morning.

Comecera a encherſe a maré a menhãã, pella menhãã e dizem os barquéir os queas cinco horas de menhãã eſtara vazía.

Very well; we'll take Boat at Six, and with a favourable Wind we ſhall be at N. by Eight.

Bellamente, embarcaremos as ſéis horas, e com o vento em popa eſtarémos á N. as outo.

Boy, go ſee if there be any Thing in the Houſe to carry with us for our Journey.

O rapaz, vay ver ſe ha algúa couſa ná caſa para a noſſa viagem.

Yes, Sir, I have already put into the Boat two cold roaſted Fowls, a Couple of Bottles of Wine, and all other Neceſſaries.

Si Senhor, ja meti ná fragata (batel) duas frangas aſſadas frias, duas canéquas de vinho, com todo o mais neceſſario.

Bring the Fruit to the Table, and if there is any Thing elſe of a Deſert, to make up a ſmall Dinner.

Venha a frúita para a meſa, e ſe ouver alguma cóuſa mais de ſobre meſa, para acabar hum jentar limitado.

Taſte theſe Grapes; they are the firſt of the Seaſon (Year), and theſe

Prove V. M. aquellas uvas; são as priméiras dó anno, e as maçãas

Apples

Apples and Nuts have now only their natural Taste.

If you want any Thing else, command as if you were in your own House (at home.)

Nothing more, I humbly thank you, Sir; I have eat enough.

If you please to sleep after Dinner, here you have a fresh retiring Room with a Couch.

e nozes agora só tem seu gosto natural.

Se V. M. quizer alguma cóusa mais, mande como se estivéra ná sua propria casa.

Nada mais, viva V. M. mill annos; ja comi bastante.

Querendo V. M. dormir a sesta despois de jentar, eis aqui huma cámera de fresquidão com huma caminha.

Dialogue VII.

Of a young Woman, and what News passes.

SEE there a handsome Damsel, or young Woman.

She is very well made.

She has a beautiful Face.

Do you know her?

No, I don't know her: She has fine Eyes.

She walks very gracefully.

And she is very well dress'd too.

Yes, and I believe she must be a Person of Distinction.

Pratica VII.

De huma moça, e dó que se pássa de nóvo.

EIS aqui huma fermosa donzella, oú moça.

He muy bem féita.

Tem huma bella cara.

V. M. a conhece?

Não a conheço; tem os olhos bellos.

Anda muy graciosamente.

E tambem está muy bem vestida.

Si e creyo eu que he huma pessóa de distinção.

That may be; what say you, Sir, should you not be happy with such a Wife?

Isso pode ser; que diz V. M. não seria ditoso com tal mulher?

Yes, if I had a good deal of Money with her.

Sim se tivera múito dinhéiro com ella.

You are too interested; the enjoying so fine a Woman is worth a Fortune.

V. M. he demasiado interessado; o gozar huma tal mulher val hum dote.

I am not of that Opinion; but let us drop that Discourse. What News is there To-day? Do you know no News?

Não sou désta opinião; más deixemos este discurso. Que novas ha oje? não sabe V. M. nada de novo?

I have heard nothing.

Não tenho ouvido nada.

I have read the Dutch Gazette, which speaks of nothing but War; and they write from Paris, they expect hourly News of some Rencounters between the French and the Imperialists.

Eu tenho lído a gazeta d'Ollanda, que não fallo senão de guerra; e escrevem de Paris, que todas as horas estám esperando novas de algum encontro entre os Francezes e as forças dó Imperio.

What do they say of the Princes of the North? how go the Affairs between the King of Poland and the King of Prussia?

Que dizem dós principes dó Norte? como vay o negocio entre o rey de Polonha, e o rey de Prussia?

The Reports are various in all Places; some say they are in good Friendship, others think they are jealous of each other.

Os rumores são varios em todas as partes; huns dizem que estám em bóa amizade; outros cuídam que estám ciosos hum dó outro.

Be it as it will, the ſupream Government is ſtill the ſame, and there is a great deal of Truth in that old Saying, that very often a good War makes an advantageous and laſting Peace.

Seja o que for, ainda Deos eſta onde eſtáva, e he muita verdade naquélle ditto antíguo, que múitas vezes ſocede que a bóa guerra faz huma bóa e durante paz.

They write from Spain that the Spaniſh Fleet is ready to ſail.

Eſcrevem de Eſpanha, que a frota Eſpanhola eſtá pronta para navegar.

Their Preparations make a great Noiſe in the World; they have Mariners, Ammunition, and Ships enough; but 'tis ſaid they want Money.

As ſuas preparaçóens rugem muito nó mundo; tem marinhéyros, provimento de guerra e naviós baſtantes, porem ſe diz que lhes falta dinhéiro.

Others ſay the Expedition is defer'd till next Spring, for other political Reaſons.

Outros dizém, que a expedição ſe poſpoem pélo verão próximo por rezóens politicas.

We muſt leave thoſe Things to Time, which clears up all Doubts.

Temos de deixár iſſo ao tempo que aclara todas as dúvidas.

Dialogue VIII.

To enquire about a Perſon.

WHO is that Gentleman that ſpoke to you juſt now?

He is a German.

Pratica VIII.

Pare enquerir ſobre huma peſſóa.

QUEM he eſſe fidalgo que agora lhe fallava?

He hum Alemão.

I thought he was an Engliſhman.

Eu cuidava que era Ingrez.

No, Sir, he is from Vienna.

Não Senhor, he de Vienna.

He ſpeaks very good Portugueſe.

Falla muy bem Portuguez.

He pronounces it like one born and educated at Liſbon.

O pronuncia como hum nacido e criado em Liſbóa.

Has he been long in Portugal?

Eſteve muito tempo em Portugal?

No more than two Years.

Não mais que dous annos.

I am ſurprized he learnt ſo much in ſo little Time.

Me eſpanto que tem aprendido tanto, em tam póuco tempo.

He has the Advantage of knowing Latin well, and he underſtands the Grammar perfectly.

Tem a ventagem de ſaber bem o Latim, e intende a grammática perfeitamente.

In ſhort, you ſay he is a Scholar, and I ſee by his Mien that he is an accompliſh'd Gentleman.

Bréve, V. M. diz que he docto, e eu véijo por ſua aparencia exterior que he hum fidalgo aperfeiçoado.

Your Opinion is very juſt, and I always found him ſuch.

A ſua opinião de V. M. he juſta, e eu o achéi ſempre tal.

He is of a genteel Behaviour, and a polite complaiſant handſome young Man.

He muy gentíl na converſação, e hum mui polido, cortez e fermoſo moço.

You ſpeak ſo favourably of him, that were he a Woman I ſhould think you were in love with him.

V. M. falla délle tam favoravelmente, que ſe foſſe mulher, créria eu que eſtiveſſe enamorado délle.

You

You joke, Sir; but I muſt own I have ſuch an Eſteem for him, that I ſhould be obliged to you if you would do me the Favour to procure me his Acquaintance.

V. M. zomba; porem ey de confeſſar tenho tanta reverencia por elle, que tivera muita obrigaçaõ a V. M. ſe quizera fazerme o favor de procurarme ſua amizade.

If you will, we will To-morrow go to his Lodging together.

Se V. M. quizer, hiremos a menhãã juntos a ſua pouſada.

Where doth he lodge?

Onde ſe hoſpeda?

Not far off; in New-Street.

Naõ muy longe dáqui, na Rúa nova.

'Tis very well: Good Night, Sir.

Eſtá bem: Bóas nóites Senhor.

I thank you: Farewel, Sir.

Agradeço a V. M. á Déos Senhor.

I kiſs your Hands: I wiſh you well home.

Bijoe as maõs de V.M. Chegue com bem a ſua caſa.

Dialogue IX.

For to write.

GIVE me a Sheet of Paper, a Pen and Ink.

DÁ cá huma fólha de papél, huma pena e tinta.

Go into my Cloſet, you'll find there on the Table what you want.

Entre em minha recámara e achara V. M. na meſa o que quizer.

I ſee no Pens.

Naõ vejo penas.

There are a great many in the Inkhorn.

Ha muitas nó tintéiro.

They are not good.

Naõ valem nada. Naõ saõ bóas.

Pratica IX.

Para eſcrever.

Here

Here are ſome others.	Eis aqui outras.
They are not cut.	Não eſtão cortadas.
Where is your Pen-knife?	Onde eſtá o ſeu canivete?
Do you know how to cut Pens?	Sabe V. M. cortar penas?
This is not bad.	Eſta não he má.
Whilſt I finiſh this Letter, be ſo kind as to fold up that Packet.	Entre tanto que acabo eu eſta carta façame V. M. a graça de dobrar eſte paquete.
What Seal muſt I put?	Que ſello tenho de pór?
Seal it with my Coat of Arms, or my Cypher.	Selleo com as minhas armas, ou cifra.
What Seal-wax ſhall it be?	Que lacre ha de ſér?
'Tis no Matter; take of the red or the black, which you pleaſe.	Não importa nada; tome V. M. dó vermelho ou negro; o que quiſer.
Have you put the Date?	Tem V. M. poſto a data?
I think I have; but I am not ſure whether I have ſigned or no.	Créio que ſi, más não eſtóu certó ſe tenho firmado ou não.
What Day of the Month is it?	A quantos dó mez eſtamos oje?
'Tis the twentieth Day of the Month.	Eſtamos a vinte dó mez.
Put the Superſcription.	Ponha V. M. o ſobreſcrito.
There is no Sand here.	Não ha aréa aqui.
There is ſome in the Sand-box.	A tem ná poeira.
Look, here is your Servant; will you have him carry the Letters to the Poſt?	Eis a qui voſſo criado; quer V. M. que leve as cartas ao coreo?

Don't

Don't forget to pay the Poſtage.

Não eſqueça de pagar o porte.

I have no Money.

Não tenho dinhéiro.

Here is a Crown; make haſte, and return preſently.

Aqui tems hum cruzado; vay de preſſa e torna logo para caſa.

I will not tarry, Sir; I will diſpatch.

Não ey de tardar Senhor; deſpachârey.

Dialogue X.

For to buy.

WHither do you go? If it is no Matter of Secrecy, I'll wait on you.

You do me much Honour: I only go to ſpeak with a Shop-keeper, to buy me a new Suit of Cloaths.

What is the Shop-keeper's Name? probably he may be my Acquaintance.

I think his Name is M. N. or ſomething like it; I do not know it for certain.

I know him very well; he lives in the Middle of the Street, on the Right Hand, over againſt the Inſurance-Office.

Well then, let us go and do our Buſineſs.

Pratica X.

Para comprar.

ONDE vay V. M.? ſe o negócio não fór cóuſa de ſegredo, acompanharey a V. M.

V. M. me fas muita honra; eu vóu ſómente para fallar á hum mercadór de lója, para comprarme hum veſtido novo.

Como ſe chama o mercadór? tal vez ſerá meu conhecido.

Cúydo que ſe chama M. N. ou tal; não o ſéy por certo.

Eu bem o conhéço; mora nó méyo dá rua, a mão deréita, juſto em fronte dá caſa dós ſegúros.

Pois, vámonos e tratemos o noſſo negócio.

God

God ſave your Perſon, Mr. M. N. I come recommended to you by a Friend of yours, Mr. N. having Occaſion for ſome Things out of your Shop.

Guarde Deos a peſſóa de V. M. Senhor N. venho en commendado a V. M. por hum amigo ſeu o Senhor N. por aver miſter algúas couſas de ſua tenda.

Sir, you are welcome, and the whole Shop is at your Service.

Seja V. M. bem vindo, meu Senhor, e tudo que eſtá ná lója fica as ſuas ordens.

I have Occaſion for ſome fine Cloth to make me a Suit; have you any that is good?

Ey de miſtér algum pano fino, para fazer hum veſtido; tem V. M. algum que préſte?

Yes, Sir, I will ſhew you a Piece that I believe will not diſpleaſe you.

Ténho Senhor, moſtraréy a V. M. huma peça que não lhe deſcontentara.

Look you, here is a Piece, and in my Opinion one of the beſt that is this Day in Portugal, being very fine, well wrought, and of an agreeable Colour.

Eis aqui húa peça, e nó meu parecer húa das melhores que oje ha em Portugal, por ſer muy fina, bem lavrada, e de cor agradavel.

The Cloth is not bad, but the Colour doth not pleaſe me: I am no Friend to this Aſh Colour, becauſe it is ſoon fill'd with Spots.

O pano não he máo, mas a cor não me agrada; não ſou amigo déſta cor de cinza, porque logo ſe enche de nódoas.

Look here, how do you like this Piece? it is of a more lively Colour, and more chearful for the Summer.

Olhecá Senhor, como lhe parece eſtóutra peça? he de cor mais viva e mais alegre para o verão.

Yes,

Yes, this I like; how do you ſell it a Covado, and be at a Word with me?*

Iſſo ſim; a como vende o cóvado, e dígamo em huma palavra?

Sir, I'll tell you, I cannot ſell it under two Mil and five hundred Reas a Covado.

Eu lhe diréy a V. M. não poſſo vendéllo por menos de dous míl e quinhéntos reis o cóvado

It is very dear; I know I can buy cheaper in other Places.

He múito caro, bem ſéy que poſſo comprállo mais acomodado em outras partes.

If you find any ſo good, and of this Make, for leſs Money, I will give it you for nothing.

Se V. M. achar algum tão bom e déſte feitio por ménos dinhéiro eu lhó darey por nada.

Hark ye, Sir, I'll give you two Mil two hundred and forty Reas, and I am perſuaded it can be worth no more.

Oúçame V. M. eu lhe daréy dous mil dozentos e quarenta reis, e tenho para mim que não podo valer mais.

Well then, to be ſhort, I will not let it go under two Mil four hundred Reas, altho' it were to my Brother.

Em fim, para uſar de brevidade não ey de largallo por menos de dous mil e quatro centos reis, ainda que foſſe ao meu irmão.

Do you know how many Covado's will be ſufficient to make a Suit?

Sabe V. M. quantos cóvados baſtaram para fazer hum veſtido?

Truly I cannot tell; but I'll ſend and call a Taylor that lives cloſe by in the Neighbourhood, and he will ſoon inform us.

Não ſey por cérto; mas mandaréy chamar hum alfayate que mora aqui perto ná vezinhança, e elle logo o dirá.

* *A* Covado *is a Meaſure almoſt an* Engliſh *Yard.*

How many Cóvado's must I have to make a compleat Suit?

Quantos cóvados hey de mistér para hum vestido inteiro?

You must have for Coat, Waistcoat, and Breeches, four Cóvadoes and a half.

V. M. ha mister para cassaca, vestia, e calçóens quatro cóvados e méyo.

What may be the Breadth of it? I believe I must have more.

Que largura terá? créyo que ey de mistér mais.

No, Sir, it is a Yard and three Quarters broad, and I am sure four or five Yards will be sufficient.

Não Senhor, tem de largura hum cóvado e tres quartos, e assegurolhe que quatro para cinco cóvados bastaram.

Very well, cut me off five Yards, that none may be wanting.

Andar; córteme cinco cóvados, que não aja falta.

Here is just a Remnant of five Yards.

Eis aqui hum retalho de cinco cóvados justos.

See what it comes to, and I will give you your Money.

Veja quanto importa, e lhe darey o seu dinhéiro.

Five Yards at two Mil four hundred Reas per Cóvado, amount to twelve Milreas in Portugal Money.

Cinco cóvados a dóus mil e quatro centos reas o cóvado, montam doze milreis em dinhéiro de Portugal.

How much is it in Sterling, or current Money of England?

Quanto vem á ser em dinhéiro estarlino ou moéda corrente de Ingalaterra?

Twelve Milreas, at six Shillings and three Pence per Mil, make three Pounds fifteen Shillings Sterling.

Doze milreas, (12000 rs.) á seis chelins e tres peniques por mil, fazem tres livras e quinze chelins estarlinos.

Here,

Here, tell your Money, and ſee if it be right.

Eis aqui, conte V. M. o dinhéiro, e veja ſe eſtá cérto.

It is, Sir. I humbly thank you, and hope another Time I ſhall have the ſame Honour.

Eſtá Senhor, agradeço a V. M. mil annos, e eſpero que em outra ocaſiam terey a meſma honra.

Dialogue XI.

Of Playing.

LET us play a Party at Picket.

How much will you play for?

Let us play for one Shilling to paſs the Time.

Give us ſome Cards.

Let us ſee who is to deal.

You are to deal.

Shuffle the Cards; all the Court-Cards are together.

They are mix'd ſufficiently; cut the Cards, if you pleaſe.

Have you all your Cards?

I think I have.

How many do you take?

I take all: I leave none.

I have a bad Game.

Pratica XI.

Dó jugar.

JUguemos huma partida a o piquete.

Por quanto quer V. M. jugar?

Juguemos por hum chelin por paſſar o tempo.

Danos humas cartas.

Vejamos quem ha de dar as cartas.

V. M. as ha de dar.

Baralhe as cartas; todas as cartas de figura eſtão juntas.

Eſtám baſtanteménte miſturadas; parta V. M. as cartas, ſe fór ſervido.

Tem V. M. todas ſuas cartas?

Creyo que tenho.

Quantas toma V. M.?

Tomo tudo; déixo nenhuma.

Eu tenho hum máo jogo.

Let us deal the Cards over-again.

Démos as cartas outra vez.

No, Sir. My Game puzzles me.

Não Senhor. O meu jogo me embaraça.

You must have a fine Game; for I have nothing.

V. M. ha de ter hum bello jogo, por que eu não tenho nada.

Count your Points; fifty, sixty, &c.

Conte V. M. os seos pontos; cincoenta, seicenta, *&c.*

They are not good. They are good.

Não valem nada. Estão boms.

A Quint Major, a Quint from the King, a Quart from the Queen, a Tierce from the Knave.

Huma quinta mayor, huma quinta do Réy, huma quarta dá Sôta, huma terça dó cavallo.

I have fourteen Kings, three Aces, three Queens, and three Knaves.

Eu tenho cartorze de Reys, tres ases, tres soutas, e tres cavallos.

Play Hearts, Spades, Clubs, or Diamonds.

Jogue copas, espadas, páos, ou ouros.

I have lost. You have won.

Eu tenho perdido. V. M. tem ganhado.

You owe me a Shilling.

V. M. me deve hum chelin.

Pardon me, Sir, you ow'd me one.

Perdoeme V. M. mó devia.

Then we are quits.

Pois estámos iguáis.

Dialogue XII.

About a Journey, with some other Occurrences.

O Sir, are you here yet? I expected a Letter from you from London

Pratica XII.

De huma viagem com outras cousas differentes.

SEnhor, está V. M. ainda aqui? estive esperando por huma

London by the laſt Week's Poſt.

It is true, Sir, there was no Remedy: I thought to depart laſt Week, but I had an embroil'd Buſineſs which has detained me.

But what hinders you now? Is the Ship ready? and are the Goods diſpatched at the Cuſtom-houſe?

Not yet, all will be cleared To-morrow.

Is the Ship cleared in the Cuſtom-houſe? and have you your Proviſion on board?

Yes, Sir, I think I ſhall have Occaſion for nothing more.

Don't you think I am ſufficiently provided for? I have put on board for myſelf and my Footman, two Sheep, four Dozen of Fowls, four Turkeys, four Geeſe, and a Barrel of Wine.

Your Proviſions are ſufficient for a Voyage of two Months: Have you agreed with the Captain for your Paſſage? How much are you to give him

carta de V. M. de Londres, pello corréo dá ſemana paſſada.

He verdade Senhor; não óuve remedio, tratey de partir a ſemana paſſada, mas tive hum negocio embaraçado que me póz em detença.

Pois agora que ha de impedimento? o navio eſtá leſtes? e as fazendas eſtão deſpachadas ná alfándega?

Ainda não; todo liquidarſeha a menhãa.

O navio eſtá deſpachado ná alfándega? e tem V. M. ſua matalotagem abórdo?

Si Senhor, creyo que não hey de miſter nada mais.

Não lhe parece que eſtou provido baſtantemente? pois mandey a bordo para mim e meu criado dous carnéiros, quatro duzias de galinhas, quatro perús, quatro patos, com hum barril de vinho.

Os mantimentos báſtam por huma viagem de dóus meſes. Tem V. M. ajuſtado com o capitão por ſua paſſagem? quanto ha de dar-

for yourself and your Footman?

I made a Bargain with the Captain for the Cabin for me and my Servant for twenty Milreas, or about six Pounds five Shillings Sterling.

I think it is very reasonable. God send you a good Voyage.

But pray tell me, is it any Business of Consequence that obliges you to this sudden Departure?

It is, Sir, I have some Accounts to adjust with my Correspondents of great Moment.

Have you any Money owing you there among your Acquaintance?

Yes, Sir, my Business is such, that I cannot do it by Letters of Attorney; but my Presence is necessary.

You have a Brother there, and if you will not trust him, whom will you trust?

Don't you know the Proverb; avoid Accounts with Relations, as Debts with such as are absent.

lhe por V. M. e mais o seu criado?

Eu fiz concerto com o capitão pello camerote, por mim e mais meu criado, em vinte milreis, ou seis librase c inco chelins estarlinas.

Bem acomodado está nó méo parecer. Deos lhe de boa viagem.

Más dígame ha algum negocio de importança que obriga a V. M. a ésta apressada partida?

Ha Senhor, tenho humas contas que ajustar com meus correspondentes de múito pezo e valor.

Tem algum dinhéiro que se lhe fica devendo de seus conhecidos?

Sim Senhor, meus negocios são táes que não posso fasellos por húa carta de procuração, mas a minha presença he necessaria.

V. M. tem lá hum irmão, e se não quizer fiarse delle de quem se fiara?

Não sabe V. M. o provérbio, guardate de contas com parentes, como de dívidas com ausentes.

You

You ſay right, Sir; mean while farewel, Sir: To-morrow Morning I'll come to kiſs your Hands, and to take my Leave of you.

No, Sir, that ſhall not be; you muſt without Fail dine with us, and we will wait for you till one a-Clock.

Sir, your Servant; you have overcome me with Civilities, and ſhall be obey'd.

V. M. diz bem Senhor; ora entretanto a Deos Senhor, a menhaa pélla menhãa virey beijar ſuas mãos e deſpedirme de V. M.

Não Senhor, iſſo não ha de ſer; V. M. ſem falta jentara com noſco e eſperaremos por V. M. até a huma hora.

Criado, meu Senhor; V. M. me tem vencido com cortezias e ſera ſervido.

Dialogue XIII.

To reckon with the Landlord.

GOOD *Evening, Sirs, are you contented (pleaſed) with your Supper?*

Was the Supper to your Liking?

We are ſatisfied; but now we muſt pay you.

The Expence is not great.

See what we muſt pay for ourſelves, our Servants and Horſes.

Pratica XIII.

Para contar com o eſtalajadéiro.

BOAS tardes Senhores meus, eſtám V. M. S. contentés com a céa?

Eſteve a céa ao goſto de V. M. S.?

Eſtámos ſatisféitos; mas agora he miſter pagar a voſſé.

Os gaſtos não são grandes.

Veja quanto temos de pagar por nos, e mais os noſſos criados e cavallos.

Reckon yourſelves, Gentlemen, and you'll find there are ſeven Crowns.

Contem V. M. S. meſmos e acharam que são ſete coróas.

It ſeems to me you aſk too much.

A mim me pareceque Voſſé pede demaſiado.

On the contrary, I am very reaſonable (moderate.)

Péllo cantrario, eſtóu múi razoado (moderado.)

How much do you make us pay for the Wine?

Quanto nôs faz pagar pello vinho?

Fifteen Pence the Bottle.

Quinze peniques o fraſco.

Bring us another Bottle, and To-worrow Morning we'll pay you. We will abate nothing.

Traga nós hum óutro fraſco e menhãã pella menhãã pagaremos á Voſſé; não lhe abateremos nada.

It ſeems to me this Gentleman doth not find himſelf well.

Tenho para mim que eſſe Senhor não ſe acha bem.

I am well, but I am tired and fatigued.

Eſtóu bem, más eſtóu canſado e fatigado.

You muſt have Courage.

Ha miſtér ter animo.

It will be better for me to be in Bed than at Table.

Sera melhor para mim eſtar ná cama, que ná meſa.

Tell my Servant to come and undreſs me.

Diga ao meu criado que venha diſpirme.

Good Night, Gentlemen, Good Repoſe to you all; ſleep well.

Bóas noites Senhores. Bom repóuſo a V. M. S. todos; dormam V. M. S. bem.

I humbly thank you (live you a thouſand Years) God preſerve your Perſon.

Viva V. M. mil annos; guarde Deos a peſſóa de V. M.

Have you ordered clean Sheets for our Beds.

Tem voſſé ordenado lançóys limpos para noſſas camas?

Take care that they may wake us early Tomorrow Morning.

Tome voſſé cuidado que nôs deſpertem ſedo á menhãã pella menhãã.

I will not fail; good by, Gentlemen, good Night.

Não faltarey; a Deos Senhores, boas nóites.

Hark ye, Hoſtler, have you look'd well after the Horſes?

O voſſé, moço de eſtribaría, tem tratado bem os cavallos?

Yes, Sir, for my Part I have been wanting in nothing; they have their Fill of Hay and Barley.

Si Senhor, dá minha parte não faltéy nada; tivéram de feno e cevada em abundancia.

Do us the Favour to have our Horſes ready Tomorrow at Six a-Clock in the Morning.

Faça nôs a Mercé de tér os cavallos prontos á menhãã as ſéys horas pella menhãã.

Here, Maſter Landlord, tell your Money, and the Half-Crown which is over and above, let it be ſhared among the Servants.

Ouça Senhor noſſo amo, conte Voſſé o dinhéiro, e a méya coróa que ſobeja repartaſe entre os criados.

Your humble Servant, Gentlemen; I hope every Thing has been to your Liking.

Vivam V. M. S. mil annos Senhores; eſpero que todo eſteve a ſeu goſto.

When you paſs by this Way, you have all your humble Servants at Command.

Quando paſſarem por eſte caminho, aqui tem todos os ſeus criados prontos ás ſuás ordens.

You are welcome, Gentlemen.

V. M. S. eſtão bem vindos.

A good Journey (Voyage) to you, Gentlemen.

Bóa jornada (viagem) tenhám V. M. S.

Dialogue XIV.

About the Exchange.

WHERE *are you going, Sir?*

To Change; and pray where do you come from?

I come from thence.

Did you hear any News?

No, Sir, nothing particular.

Nothing that is remarkable.

How is the Exchange for Amsterdam To-day?

Thirty four Shillings and four Groats.

Who told you so?

My Broker.

Is there a great deal of Business doing To-day?

Yes, and if you have any to do, I advise you to make haste.

Then good by to you, Sir.

I am your Servant. Pray my Service at home.

Do you design to draw or to remit?

I am not yet determin'd what I shall do; tell me: what do you think, is the Exchange for Amsterdam likely to rise or to fall?

Pratica XIV.

Dá bolsa.

ADonde vai V. M.?

A bolsa, e peçolhe de donde vem V. M.?

Venho de lá.

Ouvío V. M. algumas novas?

Não Senhor, nada em particular.

Nada que seja remarcavel.

Como vai o cambio para Amsterdam oje?

Trinta e quatro soldos e quatro grossos.

Quem lhó disse?

Meu corredór.

Se faz muito negocio oje?

Si, e se tem que fazer eu lhe aconselho que va de pressa.

Pois a Deos Senhor.

Sou seu servidor. Façame Mercé de dar meus beijamãos em casa.

V. M. intenta sacar ou remeter?

Não estou ainda resolto ó que farei; digame: o cambio para Amsterdam parecelhe que subirá ou que baixará?

They talk variouſly about it; yet according to Appearance it will fall.

Fallam variavelmente níſto; porem ao parecer baixará.

Can you get me ſome good Bills of Exchange?

Pode V. M. procurarme algumas bóas letras de cámbio?

I was juſt now offer'd ſome from a very good Houſe, and People of a good Reputation.

Inda agora me offrecerão algumas de boa caſa, e gente de boa reputação.

Were the Bills at Sight or Uſance?

Eram as letras a viſta ou uſos?

I can have either the one or the other.

Poſſo tér de humas ou de outras.

How much Brokerage muſt I give you?

Quanto de corretagem lhe ey de dar?

You know the Cuſtom is one Eighth per Cent.

V. M. ſabe que o cuſtume he hum outavo pór cento.

I want to negociate ſome Bills; what do you adviſe me? ſhould I ſend theſe Bills to Amſterdam or to Hambourg?

Eu quero negociar algumas letras; que me aconſelha? que mande eſtas letras a Amſterdam ó Hamburgo?

I have not made any Calculation yet; I'll tell you by-and-by.

Não he feito calculo nenhum ainda; lhó direy dáqui a pouco.

They ſay Mr. N. has refuſed Payment.

Dizem qúe o Senhor N. refuſou pagamento.

Yes, and a great many Bills drawn on him have been ſent back again to Holland, proteſted by Yeſterday's Poſt.

Sim e muitas letras ſacadas ſobre elle ſe mandaram outra vez proteſtadas a Hollanda, pelo correo de ontem.

I am ſurprized, that a Man who was in ſo good Buſineſs, and bore

Me admiro, que hum homem que tinha bom negocio, e de bom ca-

a good

a good Character, ſhould owe ſo much Money.

racter deveſſe tanto dinhéiro.

Some ſay he is broke, and that he cannot pay 50 per Cent.

Alguns dizem que faltóu é que não pode pagar cincoenta por cento.

What do People imagine to be the Reaſon?

Que lhes parece ao publico ſeja a razão?

Some fancy his Friend and Correſpondent abroad is broke; others ſay he games, or that his Wife is extravagant.

Alguns imaginão que o ſeu amigo e correſpondente fora faltóu; outros dizem que jogou ou que ſua mulher he muy extravagante.

When will his Creditors meet?

Quando ſe ajuntarão ſeus acredores?

They have taken already Poſſeſſion of all his Effects and Goods, and they will examine the Balance of his Books Tomorrow.

Tem jà tomado poſſeſſão de todos ſeus eféitos e fazendas, e examinarão o balanço dos ſeus livros a menhãa.

I hope our Friend Mr. N. has not loſt by him.

Eſpero que noſſo amigo N. não tem perdido com elle.

No, for he ſuſpected him a great while, and I remember that he has often refuſed to take his Bills.

Não, por que o ſoſpeitava jà ha muito tempo, e me lembra que muitas vezes tem refuſado ſuas letras.

Do you know any Man of Credit who inſures upon Ships and Goods?

Sabe V. M. algum homem de credito que aſſegura ſobre navios e fazendas?

Yes, Sir, if you'll leave your Buſineſs to me, I'll get it done to your Approbation, and for a moderate Premium.

Sim Senhor; ſe V. M. quer deijar ſeu negocio a mi, lhó far ei fazer á ſeu contento, e por premio moderádo.

When

When is the India Company's Sale?

In a Fortnight.

I am glad of it, for then I ſhall have Time enough to execute my Commiſſion before the Ships ſail (or depart.)

Quando he a venda dá companhia dá India?

Em quinze dias.

Eſtimo, por que então terey tempo baſtante para executar a minha commiſſão, ante que os navios ſe ponham á vela (ou que partam.)

Dialogue XV.

Of the Laws of England.

BY what Laws is England govern'd?

They have ſeveral, according to the Nature of Affairs, and the Diverſity of Places.

How are they diſtinguiſhed?

They are called the Common Law, the Statute Law, the Civil Law, and the Cononical (or Spiritual or Eccleſiaſtical) Law.

What is the Common Law?

It is nothing but the common Cuſtoms of the Kingdom, which by length of Time have obtained the Force of Laws.

The Statute Laws have been made by ſeveral Kings

Pratica XV.

Dás leys de Ingalaterra.

POR que leys ſe governa a Ingalaterra?

Tem divérſas conforme a natureza dós negocios, e a diverſidade de lugares.

Como ſe diſtinguem?

Se chamam a ley comúa, a léy dós ſtatutos, a ley civil, e a ley canonica (ou eſpiritual ou eccleſiaſtica.)

Que he a ley comúa?

Não he outro ſenão os coſtumes comús dó reyno, os quais com o tempo tem alcançado a força de leys.

As leys de ſtatutos ſe fizeram por diverſos

Kings of England, by the Advice and Consent of both Houses of Parliament, the Lords and Commons of England.

Reys de Ingalaterra, por conselho e consentimento de ambas casas dó parlamento, os condes e os comuns de Ingalaterra.

The Civil Law is the written Law, or a Collection of the Judgments and Opinions of the wisest Men in all Nations for many hundred Years past.

A ley civil he a ley escrita, óu huma collecção dás sentenças e opiniões dós mais sabios homens de todas as naçóens, por muitos seculos passados.

What is the Use thereof?

Que uso he o seu?

To preserve the Peace and Tranquillity of Mankind in general.

Para preservar a paz e tranquillidade do genro humano em geral.

Who was the Author of the Book which contains the Civil Laws, and is intitul'd the Codex?

Quem foi o autor dó livro que contem as leís civiys, e he intitulado o *Codex?*

The Emperor Justinian, in the Year 527, had it compiled by the greatest Lawyers of his Time.

O Emperador Justiniano nó anno 527. o fez collegir pellos mayores letrados de seu tempo.

What do you call the Canonical Law?

Que chamays a ley canonica?

Certain Canons compiled by the Clergy to support the Dignity of the Church, and to decide in all Matters relating to Ecclesiastical Affairs.

Certos canones collegidos por clerigos para supportar a dignidade da igreja e por decidir em todas materias tocante os negocios ecclesiasticos.

The Civil Law is used in the Court of Admiralty, because therein are plead-

A ley civil se usa ná corte de almirantasgo, por que nella se litigam

ed

ed and judged Affairs of Foreigners as well as of Engliſhmen.

What is the Privilege of a born Engliſhman?

That he may not be commanded by an arbitrary Power, but according to the known Laws of the Land, viz. the Common and Statute Laws, and eſpecially by that called Magna Charta, *the great Charter, which preſerves him in his Liberty and Property.*

How do they plead and try their Cauſes?

The Accuſer and Accuſed, or Defendant, ſtand forth in the Court of Juſtice; their Advocates plead the Cauſe, the Witneſſes depoſe upon Oath what they know of the Matter. The Judge who ſits on the Bench, recapitulates what has been ſaid on both Sides, and declares the Law in that Caſe. Then the twelve Jurors (who are Houſe-keepers, and choſen by turns, not belonging to the Law, but all Men that have common Senſe may ſerve in this Caſe) go into a Room

e julgam negocios de foraſteiros tam bem como dós Ingreſes.

Que he o privilegio de hum Ingres nacido?

Que não ſeja gouvernado por hum poder arbitrario, masconforme ás leys conhecidas dá terra, a ſaber, a comúa, e as leys de ſtatutos, e eſpecialmente por aquella chamada *Magna Charta*, ou grande privilegio, a qual o conſerva na ſua liberdade e poſſeſſão.

Como litigam e julgam ſeus pleitos?

O accuſante e o accuſado óu defendente eſtão diante dá corte de juſtiça; ſeus avogados repreſentam o pleito; as teſtemunhas depoem ſobre juramento o que ſabem dá materia. O juez, que eſta ſentado nó banco (cadéira) repite o que ſe tem dito de ambas partes, e declara a ley em eſte caſo. Então os doze jurados (os quais são gente que tem caſa, e eſcolhidos por vezes, não são letrados, mas todo homem que tem uſo de rezam

by

by themſelves, and when they are all agreed return into Court and declare what they think, guilty or not guilty, and the Judge pronounces Sentènce accordingly.

pode ſervir neſte caſo) vam em hum apoſento ſós, e quando accordão todos bolvem pera a corte e declarão quem imaginão ſer reo ou não; e o juez pronuncia a ſentença em comformidade.

Are criminal Matters managed in the ſame Manner?

Os caſos criminais ſe dirigem dó meſmo modo?

Yes, and thus an Engliſhman has the Happineſs of being tried and judged only by God and the Laws of his Country, acknowledging no arbitrary Power at all.

Sim e aſſim hum Ingrez tem a ſatisfacção de ſer julgado ſómente por Deos e as leys de ſua patria, não reconhecendo nenhum poder arbitrario.

Happy is that Nation which enjoys their Life, Liberty, and Property, and can loſe neither of them but by thoſe ſame Laws upon which the Safety of all their Fellow-Countrymen depends.

Ditoſa he eſſa nação que goza de ſua vida. liberdade, e poſſeſſoens, e não póde perder nenhumá déllas, ſe não por aquellas meſmas leys ſobre as quais depende a ſegurança de todos ſeus compatriotas.

GRAMMA-

GRAMMATICA

LUSITANO ANGLICA,

OU

GRAMMATICA

PORTUGUEZA e INGLEZA.

SEGUNDA PARTE,

A qual ſerve para Inſtruir a os *Portuguezes* na Lingua *Ingleza.*

LONDON:

Printed for W. MEADOWS, at the *Angel*; and E. COMYNS, at the *South-Gate* of the *Royal-Exchange*, in *Cornhill*, 1751.

GRAMMATICA
LUSITANO-ANGLICA,
OU
GRAMMATICA
PORTUGUEZA e INGLEZA.
SEGUNDA PARTE.

A quel fere para ensinar a os Portuguezes
na Lingua Inglesa.

LONDON:

Printed for W. Meares, at the Angel, and E.
Comyns, at the Bible over against the Royal Ex-
change, in Cornhill. 1721.

A O LEITOR.

SENDO varias as Razoens, que rendem ésta Obra util e necessaria; naõ farey mais que observar, ser para o Homem de Negocio, de absoluta importancia, e para o Curiozo Estudante de entertenimento e recreyo; o que suposto, darey principio a o dictame que se observou nesta Empreza.

Primeiramentese tratou das Letras e sua Pronunciaçaõ mostrando como se leyem por Exemplos no Estillo Portuguez *de Soletrear, como tambem das Vogais, Syllabas, Diphtongos, Triphtongos,* &c. *Seguindolhe despois as Declinaçoens, Conjugaçoens, Regras da Sintáce, Etymologia, Prosidia e Accentos. Com um Vocabulario, e Dialagos das Couzas mais commuãs que a contecem na vida juntamente varias Cartas sobre o negocio ou Comercio; e finalmente, A Carta, ou Iustrumento de Procuraçam, A Carta, ou Instrumento de Fretamento. A Police de Seguro. O Conhecimento. O Instrumento, ou Escritura de Compromisso. A Letra de Cambio, e seu Protesto,* &c. *o que sem duvida nenhuma será o melhor e mais seguro Methodo de Obter e Conservar o Conhecimento de Ambas as Linguas, e que tenha o Efeito dezejado he o que o Author muy sinceramente Implora.*

CASTRO.

ADVERTENCIA.

O Author desta Grammatica o qual ultimamente publicou hum Tratado Intitulado, hum Prezente para os Mancebos em entrando a o Contor, Emsina tanto em sua Caza em *Houndsditch*, entre as Insignias, do Sol e Coroa perto de *Bishopsgate*, como por fora a Ler, Escrever, Contar, e Livro de Caixa, pello Modo *Italiano*, e em pouco Tempo; sem as costumadas Regras, Taboadas, e impertinentes ou inutils Questoens, por hum Methodo, claro, patente, e bem a provado no estilo Mercantil.

GRAMMATICA LUSITANO-ANGLICA;

O U,

Grammatica, *Ingleza*, e *Portugueza*.

SEGUNDA PARTE.

CAP. I.

Das Letras, e ſua Pronunciaçaõ.

OS *Inglezes* naõ ſô mente Eſcrevem de hum modo e Leyem de outro; mas tambem naõ falaõ como Leyem ou Eſcrevem: Se naõ por hum modo muy rapido, que para com elles tem total dominio; o que ſem duvida cauza grande harmonia a os Foraſteiros; para facilitar o qual, tenho aplicado todas as diligencias poſſiveis para expreſſar, tanto o Alphabeto *Inglez*, por eſtilo *Portuguez*, como tambem as Vogais, Syllabas, Diphtongos, Triphtongos, *&c.* com ſuas diſtincçoens; alegando as mais adequadas Regras, para que poſſa o curiozo *Portuguez*, adquirir o conhecimento de ditta Lingua.

O Alphabeto *Inglez* contem 26 Letras asaber.

A,	*b*,	*c*,	*d*,	*e*,	*f*,	*g*,	*h*,	*i*,
E,	bi,	ci,	di,	i,	ef,	gi,	etche,	ai,
j,	*k*,	*l*,	*m*,	*n*,	*o*,	*p*,	*q*,	*r*,
je,	que,	el,	em,	en,	o,	pi,	quíiu,	ar,
s,	*t*,	*u*,	*v*,	*w*,	*x*,	*y*,	*z*,	
es,	ti,	iu,	vi,	dábiliu,	eks,	uay,	zed,	

Ingles.					*Portugues.*				
ba,	*be*,	*bi*,	*bo*,	*bu*,	be,	bi,	bai,	bo,	bu,
ca,	*ce*,	*ci*,	*co*,	*cu*,	que,	ci,	sai,	co,	cu,
da,	*de*,	*di*,	*do*,	*du*,	de,	di,	dai,	do,	du,
fa,	*fe*,	*fi*,	*fo*,	*fu*,	fe,	fi,	fai,	fo,	fu,
ga,	*ge*,	*gi*,	*go*,	*gu*,	gue,	gi,	jai,	go,	gu,
ha,	*he*,	*hi*,	*ho*,	*hu*,	he,	hi,	hai,	ho,	hu,
ja,	*je*,	*ji*,	*jo*,	*ju*,	je,	ji,	jai,	jo,	ju,
ka,	*ke*,	*ki*,	*ko*,	*ku*,	que,	qui,	cai,	co,	cu,
la,	*le*,	*li*,	*lo*,	*lu*,	le,	li,	lai,	lo,	lu,
ma,	*me*,	*mi*,	*mo*,	*mu*,	me,	mi,	mai,	mo,	mu,
na,	*ne*,	*ni*,	*no*,	*nu*,	ne,	ni,	nai,	no,	nu,
pa,	*pe*,	*pi*,	*po*,	*pu*,	pe,	pi,	pai,	po,	pu,
qua,	*que*,	*qui*,	*quo*,		qúue,	qúui,	qúuai,	qúuo,	
ra,	*re*,	*ri*,	*ro*,	*ru*,	re,	ri,	rai,	ro,	ru,
sa,	*se*,	*si*,	*so*,	*su*,	se,	si,	sai,	so,	su,
ta,	*te*,	*ti*,	*to*,	*tu*,	te,	ti,	tai,	to,	tu,
va,	*ve*,	*vi*,	*vo*,	*vu*,	ve,	vi,	vai,	vo,	vu,
wa,	*we*,	*wi*,	*wo*,	*wu*,	úe,	úi,	úai,	ùo,	úú,
ya,	*ye*,	*yi*,	*yo*,	*yu*,	yé,	yí,	yai,	yó,	yú,
za,	*ze*,	*zi*,	*zo*,	*zu*.	ze,	zi,	zai,	zo,	zu.

O

O seguinte he o *(ba)* areves o qual muda, o Son das Vogais como consta pellos Accentos; dos quais o primeiro se pronuncia largo e com aboca bem aberta, o segundo mais curto e com menos força.

Ingles.					*Portugues.*				
ab,	*eb,*	*ib,*	*ob,*	*ub,*	êb,	ĕb,	ib,	ŭb,	âb,
ac,	*ec,*	*ic,*	*oc,*	*uc,*	ec,	ec,	ic,	ac,	ac,
ad,	*ed,*	*id,*	*od,*	*ud,*	ed,	ed,	id,	ad,	ad,
af,	*ef,*	*if,*	*of,*	*uf,*	ef,	ef,	if,	af,	af,
ag,	*eg,*	*ig,*	*og,*	*ug,*	eg,	eg,	ig,	ag,	ag,
ah,	*he,*	*oh,*			êh,	ĕh,	ŏh,		
ak,	*ek,*	*ik,*	*ok,*	*uk,*	êk,	ĕk,	ik,	ŭk,	âk,
al,	*el,*	*il,*	*ol,*	*ul,*	el,	el,	il,	al,	al,
am,	*em,*	*im,*	*om,*	*um,*	em,	em,	im,	am,	am,
an,	*en,*	*in,*	*on,*	*un,*	en,	en,	in,	an,	an,
ap,	*ep,*	*ip,*	*op,*	*up,*	ep,	ep,	ip,	ap,	ap,
ar,	*er,*	*ir,*	*or,*	*ur,*	ar,	ar,	ir,	ar,	ar,
as,	*es,*	*is,*	*os,*	*us,*	es,	es,	is,	as,	as,
at,	*et,*	*it,*	*ot,*	*ut,*	et,	et,	it,	at,	at,
ax,	*ex,*	*ix,*	*ox,*	*ux,*	eks,	eks,	iks,	aks,	aks,
az,	*ez,*	*iz,*	*oz,*	*uz,*	ez,	ez,	iz,	az,	az,
amp,	*emp,*	*imp,*	*omp,*	*ump,*	emp,	emp,	imp,	amp,	amp,
ant,	*ent,*	*int,*	*ont,*	*unt,*	ent,	ent,	int,	ant,	ant,
aſt,	*eſt,*	*iſt,*	*oſt,*	*uſt.*	eſt,	eſt,	iſt,	aſt,	aſt,
ath,	*eth,*	*ith,*	*oth,*	*uth,*	eth,	eth,	ith,	ath,	ath,
bla,	*ble,*	*bli,*	*blo,*	*blu,*	ble,	bli,	blai,	blo,	blu,
bra,	*bre,*	*bri,*	*bro,*	*bru,*	bre,	bri,	brai,	bro,	bru,
cha,	*che,*	*chi,*	*cho,*	*chu,*	che,	chi,	chai,	cho,	chu,
cla,	*cle,*	*cli,*	*clo,*	*clu,*	cle,	cli,	clai,	clo,	clu,
cra,	*cre,*	*cri,*	*cro,*	*cru,*	cre,	cri,	crai,	cro,	cru,
dra,	*dre,*	*dri,*	*dro,*	*dru,*	dre,	dri,	drai,	dro,	dru,
dwa,	*dwe,*	*dwi,*			dué,	duí,	duaí,		
fla,	*fle,*	*fli,*	*flo,*	*flu,*	fle,	fli,	flai,	flo,	flu,
fra,	*fre,*	*fri,*	*fro,*	*fru,*	fre,	fri,	frai,	fro,	fru,

Inglez.	*Portuguez.*
gla, gle, gli, glo, glu,	gle, gli, glai, glo, glu,
gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu,	ne, ni, nai, no, nu,
gra, gre, gri, gro, gru,	gre, gri, grai, gro, gru,
kna, kne, kni, kno, knu,	ne, ni, nai, no, nu,
pha, phe, phi, pho, phu,	fe, fi, fai, fo, fu,
pla, ple, pli, plo, plu,	ple, pli, plai, plo, plu,
pra, pre, pri, pro, pru,	pre, pri, prai, pro, pru,
rha, rhe, rhi, rho, rhu,	re, ri, rai, ro, ru,
sca, sce, sci, sco, scu,	ésqué, si, sai, escó, escú,
sha, she, shi, sho, shu,	xe, xi, xai, xo, xu,
ska, ske, ski, sko, sku,	esqué, esquí, esquaí, escó, escú,
sla, sle, sli, slo, slu,	celé, cilí, celaí, celo, celú,
sma, sme, smi, smo, smu,	cemé, cimí, cimaí, cemó, cemú,
sna, sne, sni, sno, snu,	cené, ciní, cinaí, cenó, cenú,
spa, spe, spi, spo, spu,	espé, espí, espai, espó, espú,
squa, sque, squi, squo,	esqúué, esqúuí, esqúuai, esqúuó,
sta, ste, sti, sto, stu,	esté, esti, estai, estó, estú,
swa, swe, swi, swo, swu,	sué, suí, suaí, suó, sú,
tha, the, thi, tho, thu,	the, thi, thai, tho, thu,
tra, tre, tri, tro, tru,	tre, tri, trai, tro, trú,
twa, twe, twi, two,	tué, tuí, tuaí, tú,
wha, whe, whi, who,	ué, uí, uaí, ú,
wra, wre, wri, wro, wru,	re, ri, rai, ro, ru,
scra, scre, scri, scro, scru,	escré, escrí, escraí, escró, escrú,
shra, shre, shri, shro, shru,	xeré, xerí, xeraí, xeró, xerú,
spla, sple, spli, splo, splu,	esplé, espli, esplai, esplo, esplu,
spra, spre, spri, spro, spru,	espré, esprí, espraí, espró, esprú,

stra,

stra, stre, stri, stro, stru,	estré, estrí, estraí, estró, estrú,
thra, thre, thri, thro, thru,	thré, thrí, thraí, thró, thrú,
thwa, thwe, thwi,	thué, thuí, thuaí,

Letra he hum Charactar, q~. significa hum Simple Articulado Son sem Compoziçaõ. As Letras na Linguá *Ingleza* saõ 26 como seve do Alphabeto atras.

Dividense em Consoantes, e Vogais. As Vogais tem hum cheo, e perfeito Son de si mesmo, sem ajuda de outra qual quer Letra; e saõ Sinco, asaber. *a, e, i, o, u,*—e, *y,* Grego que sepoem no fim das Palavras: Todas em Geral soaõ na forma Seguinte asaber. a, antes de, *ll,* he, *a Portuguez,* Ex, *tall, Wall, all,* &c. *lease, tal, uál, al,* &c. Tambem antes de, *ld,* he, *a, Portuguez,* Ex. *bald, scald,* &c. *lease, bald, escáld,* &c. e antes de *l k,* Ex. *talk, walk, lease, tak, uák,* e antes de, *l t,* Ex. *Malt, Salt*; e entre, *w r,* Ex. *war, ward, warm, &c.* e tambem em *Watch, Water, was, wash,* e nas Palavras dirivadas de qual quer destes; assim tambem os Diphtongos.

Au, aw, Saõ, *a, Portuguez,* Ex. *Authority, Audience, saw, law, raw,* &c. *lease,* Athárity, ádíence, sa, la, ra, *&c.*

A, he, *e, Portuguez* em todos os Nomes de huma Syllaba que acabaõ com huma Consoante, Ex. *bat, can, far, mad, &c. lease, bet, quen, fer, med, &c.* tambem quando duas Consoantes da mesma especie se encontraó no meyo de huma Palavra. Ex. *Battle, cannot, Farrier, &c. lease,* bétil, quénnat, férias, *&c.* e tambem quando huã singela Consoante em o meyo Soa como dobrada, Ex. *banish, Dragon, Habit, &c. lease,* bénix, Drégan, Hébit, *&c.*

E. em Palavras que acabaõ com huma ou mais Consoantes he, *e*, *Portuguez*. Ex. *Bed*, *blest*, *length*, *Strength*, *&c. lease*, *bed*, *blest*, *length*, *estrength*, &c.

E. Singello no fim de algums Nomes proprios soa como, *i*, *Portuguez*. Ex. *Phebe*, *Penelope*, *&c. lease*, Phíbi, Penélípi, *&c.* e assim deve ser no fim de todos os Nomes Gregos, e Latinos, Ex. *Epitome*, como tambem em, *he*, *she*, *me*, *we*, *be*, *ye*, *the*, tambem, *y*, no fim de varias Palavras soa como, *i*, *Portugues*. Ex. *holy*, *happy*, *daily*, *&c.*

E. tacito e que naõ Soa serve para fazer longa a Vogal q̄. lhe fica atras, e tambem para abrandar, o, c, g, Ex. *mad*, *made*, *bit*, *bite*, *not*, *note*, *tun*, *tune*, *lac*, *lace*, *rag*, *rage*, *stag*, *stage*, *hug*, *huge*, *&c. lease*, med, mede, bit, bait, not, nat, *&c.* Notese, q̄. quando, *e*, naõ Soa no fim das Palavras, se chama, *e*, final: O qual algumas vezes serve para alongar o Son da Vogal que fica atras; como Ex. *save*, e algumas vezes he redundante como Ex. *give*. E. naõ Soa no fim das Palavras depois de *r* mas se converte em *a Portuguez*. Ex. *fire*, *desire*, *acre*, *meagre*, *&c. lease*, faíar, dízaiar, écar, mígar, *&c.*

I. tem o Son de, *ai*, *Portuguez*, Ex. *pint*, *mind*, *wild*, *&c. lease*, páint, máind, úaild, e de *i* em *tin*, *win*, *sing*, *&c. lease*, tin, úin, sing *&c.* Tambem antes de *g h*, he *a i*, *Portuguez*. Ex. *high*, *nigh*, *sigh*, *&c. lease*, hái, nái, saith, *&c.* excepto nos Diphtongos Improprios de *u i*, que he, *i*, *Portuguez*, Ex. *build*, *built*, *guilty*, *&c. lease*, bild, bilt, gúilty, *&c.*

O. Tem 4 Sons asaber.

1°. Como *o Portuguez*, Ex. *go*, *lo*, *so*, *&c.*

2. Como *a*, Ex. *hot*, *not*, *plot*, *&c. lease*, hat, nat, plat, &c.

3. Como *u*, *Rome*, *move*, *prove*, *&c. lease*, Rum, muvé, pruvé, *&c.*

4.

4. Como *a*, Ex. *some*, *mouth*, *monk*, *&c. lease*, sám, máuth, mánk.

U. Soa como, *e*, *Portuguez* nesta Palavra, *bury*, *lease*, béri, porem em *buy*, *business*, soa como *i*, *Portuguez*, e se leyem bizi, bízines. U. em Palavras de huã Syllaba ou seguindolhe qual quer Consoante he *a Portuguez*, Ex. *rub*, *gun*, *burst*, *custom*, *clutter*, *mutter*, *&c. lease*, ráb, gán, bárst, cástam, clátar, mátar, *&c.* Em todos os Monosyllabas que terminaõ com *e* soa como *u* apertado, Ex. *cube*, *pure*, *flute*, *confute*, *lease*, quíub, píuar, flíut, confiut, *&c.* Y. Em os Nomes de huã Syllaba, se pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *by*, *my*, *why*, *thy*, *&c. lease*, bai, mai, uai, thai, *&c.*

No fim dos nomes Adjectivos, e Substantivos, se pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *beauty*, *bounty*, *angry*, *ready*, *city*, *heavy*, *&c. lease*, bíuti, báunti, éngri. rédi, cíti, évi, nos Verbos de duas Syllabas se pronuncia, como *ai Portuguez*, Ex. *deny*, *apply*, *&c. lease*, dinái, épplai. *&c.*

Tiraõse os Verbos que acabaõ em, *ry*, que nestes se pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *carry*, *tarry*, *merry*, *lease*, quéri, téri, méri.

No principio das Palavras se pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, ainda que se lhe siga Vogal, Ex. *Yard*, *yes*, *year*, *you*, *your*, *yours*, *youth*, *yet*, *young*, *&c. lease*, íard, íes, íer, iú, iúar, íuars, íuth, íit, íang, *&c.*

Su. Soa como *x Portugues*, Ex. *Sugar*, *assure*, *insure*, *lease*, Xugar, éxuar, ínxúar, *&c.* Tambem, *ti*, quando lhe segue qual quer das 5 Letras Vogais Soa como *x*, Ex. *Nation*, *vexation*, *condition*, *determination*, *patience*, *&c. lease*, néxian, vékséxían, cándíxían, díterminexian, péxience. *&c.*

Todas as Palavras que acabaõ em, *ure*, Soaõ coma *ar Portugues*, Ex. *Nature*, *adventure*, *proceedure*, *&c. lease*, néitar, édventar, procidar, *&c.*

As Consoantes, *g h*, em o meyo de qual quer Palavra naõ Soaõ porem no fim Soaõ algumas vezes como *f*, Ex. *rough*, *cough*, *laugh*, *enough*, *lease*, raf, caf, laf, énaf, *&c.*

As Consoantes, *sh*, tem o Son de *x Portuguez*, Ex. *shine*, *Shirt*, *Shift*, *Ship*, *short*, *&c. lease*, xáin, xáart, xift, xip, xart, *&c.*

K. seguin dolhe *n* naõ Soa, Ex. *know*, *knot*, *knee*, *knuckle*, *lease*, no, nat, ni, náquil, *&c.* Tambem *w*, em lhe seguindo, *r* naõ tem Son, Ex. *write*, *wrist*, *wrong*, *&c. lease*, raít, ríst, ráng, *&c.* Taõ pouco, *g*, seguindolhe *n* tem Son, Ex. *gnaw*, *gnat*, *&c. lease*, na, net, *&c.*

Estes Nomes Singulares, *knife*, *life*, *wife*, *lease*, náif, uaif, laif, e seus Compostos, no numero Plural mudaõ o *f* em *v*, Ex. *knives*, *Wives*, *lives*, *lease*, naívs, uaívs, laivs, *&c.*

Dos Diphtongos.

Diphtongos saõ duas Vogais juntas, fazendo hum Son, ou huma Syllaba, dos quais ha duas Sortes; proprios, e improprios.

Os proprios, Saõ duas Vogais em huma Syllaba fazendo hum Son Asaber.

O Diphtongo *ai* he *e Portuguez*. Ex. *fair*, *pair*, *pain*, *stain*, *&c. lease*, fer, per, péin, estéin, *&c.*

O Diphtongo *ee* he *i Portugues*, Ex. *Queen*, *seen*, *meet*, *&c. lease*, Quin, sin, mit, *&c.*

O Diphtongo *oo* he *u*, *Portuguez*, Ex. *good*, *noon*, *cook*, *lease*, gud, nun, cuk, excepto nestas palavras que Soa como *a*, Ex. *blood*, *flood*, *foot*, *lease*, blad, flad, sat, *&c.*

O Diphtongo *oi*, he *ai Portuguez*, Ex. *void*, *toil*, *soil*, *spoil*, *&c. lease*, váid, táil, sáil, espáil, *&c.*

Os

Os Diphtongos, *ou*, *ow*, Soaõ, como *au Portuguez*, Ex. *House*, *mouse*, *rouse*, *cow*, *now*, *how*, *lease*, áus, máus, ráus, caú, naú, aú, *&c.*

Dos Diphtongos Improprios.

Este Diphtongo he o encontro de 2 Vogais em huã Syllaba, soando sô huã dellas e ficando a outra muda. Ha 10. asaber.

aa, ea, *eo*, eu, *ei*, ie, *oa*, oe, *ue*, ui.

aa, he e *Portuguez*, Ex. *Aaron*, *Isaac*, *Canaan*, *lease*, éran, áizac, Kénan.

ea Tem 4 Sons asaber.

1°. Como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *Bear*, *swear*, *tear*, *wear*, *&c. lease*, bér, súer, tér, úer, *&c.*

2°. Como *a Portuguez*, Ex. *Heart*, *heard*, *hearken*, *&c. lease*, hart, hard, harkin, *&c.*

3°. Como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *Already*, *Bread*, *Breast*, *Head*, *&c. lease*, álredi, bréd, brést, héd, *&c.*

4°. Como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *appear*, *fear*, *near*, *Veal*, *deal*, *conceal*, *Flea*, *Plea*, *Pea*, *Sea*, *Tea*, *yea*, *&c. lease*, éppiar, síar, níar, vil, dil, cáncil, fli, pli. pi, Si, Ti, ii, *&c.*

eo, Tem 3 Sons asaber.

1°. Como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *Jeopardy*, *Leopardy*, *Feoffee*, *&c. lease*, Jepardy, Lepardy, Feffi, *&c.*

2°. Como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *People*, *Feodary*, *&c. lease*, pípil, sídery:

3°. Como *a Portuguez*, Ex. *Geometry*, *Geography*, *&c. lease*, Geámetri, Geâgrefi, *&c.*

eu, ew, Soaõ como *u Portugues*, Ex. *Deuce*, *Pleurisy*, *Dew*, *few*, *Pew*, *Pewter*, *&c. lease*, díus, plúrisi, diu, síu, píu, píutar, *&c.*

ei. Tem 2 Sons asaber,

1°. Como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *feign*, *reign*, *lease*, féin, rein, *&c.*

2°.

2°. Como *i*, Ex. *perceive*, *Deceit*, *Conceit*, *inveigle*, *Receipt*, *receive*, *&c. lease*, pársiv, dísit, cánsit, ínviguil, rícit, ríciv, *&c.*

ie, he *i Portuguez*, Ex. *Belief*, *believe*, *brief*, *Cashier*, *Field*, *pierce*, *Priest*, *&c. lease*, bílif, bíliv, brif, Kexiar, Fild, píars, prist, *&c.* e Tambem em busie, crasie, Gypsie, *&c.* que em lugar de *ie* no fim se escrevem hoje com *y*, Ex. *busy*, *crasy*, *Gypsy*, *dignify*, *&c. lease*, bízi, crézi, jipsi, *&c.*

OA, he *o Portugues*, Ex. *Coat*, *Cloak*, *Coast*, *Float*, *Boat*, *&c. lease*, Cot, Clok, Cost, Flot, Bot, *&c.* excepto em *broad*, *Groat*, que he *a Portuguez*, *lease*, brad, grat, e em *Goal*, que he *e Portugues*, *lease*, *Gel.*

oe, Soa algumas vezes como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *Œconomy*, *Œdipus*, *Œconomical*, *&c. lease*, écanimi, edípas, écanamical, *&c.* Tambem he *o Portuguez*, Ex. *Foe*, *Toe*, *&c. lease*, fo, to, *&c.* excepto em *Shoe*, que he *u Portuguez*, *lease*, xu.

ue, he *u Portuguez*, Ex. *accrue*, *sue*, *avenue*, *pursue*, *Residue*, *&c. lease*, écru, su, evinu, parsu, residu, *&c.* depois de *g* serve para fazelo forte, e a largar a Vogal que vay a diante e emtaõ he *a Portuguez*, Ex. *Catalogue*, *Dialogue*, *Epilogue*, *Fatigue*, *League*, *Synagogue*, *prorogue*, *Rogue*, *Tongue*, *&c. lease*, Ketelág, Daíelag, *&c.*

ui, Tem 3 Sons asaber.

1°. Como *ai Portuguez*, Ex. *beguile*, *guide*, *disguise*, *quite*, *lease*, bígáil, gâid, disgáis, qúait, *&c.*

2°. Como *i*, Ex. *Guildford*, *build*, *rebuild*, *&c. lease*, Guíldford, bild, rébild, *&c.*

3°. Como *u*, Ex. *bruise*, *recruit*, *Fruit*, *Bruit*, *&c. lease*, brús, rícrut, Frut, *&c.* Tambem quando 3 Vogais vem juntas em huã palavra se chama hum Triphtongo, Ex. *Beauty*, *lieu*, *adieu*, *lease*, bíuti, líiu, edíiu.

Das

Das Consoantes em Geral.

Consoante he huã Letra, a qual naõ pode ter Son, sem que antes, ou depois se lhe junte huã Vogal, Ex. *m* em, *d* de. A Lingua *Ingleza* them 21, *viz.*

b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, w, x, y, z.

B. naõ se pronuncia antes de *m*, Ex. *Comb*, *Lamb*, *dumb*, *&c. lease*, cóm, lem, dam, *&c.* Tambem antes det, Ex. *Doubt*, *Debt*, *Debtor*, *&c. lease*, dáut, det, détar, *&c.*

C. Tem dois Sons, hum forte e duro, como em *Cat*, *cast*, *&c. lease*, Ket, Kest, *&c.* e outro brando como em *City*, *Cell*, *&c. lease*, Cíti, Cél, *&c.* Soa sempre duro antes de, *a*, *o*, *l*, *r*, Ex. *can*, *Cord*, *Crab*, *clean*, *&c. lease*, Ken, Card, Creb, clin, *&c.* Soa brando antes de *e*, *i*, *y*, Ex. *cease*, *cement*, *City*, *Cypher*, *&c. lease*, cís, címent, Citi, Saífar, *&c.* E antes de hum Apostrophe (') denota a auzencia de *e* Ex. *plac'd*, em lugar, de *placed*, *lease*, plésed. Quando Soa duro antes de, *e*, *i*, *n*, sempre se escreve com *k*, Ex. *keep*, *kill*, *knack*, *know*, *&c. lease*, kip, kil, néck, no, *&c.*

Ch, em palavras meramente *Inglezas* tem o Son forte como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *Church*, *rich*, *such*, *cheap*, *&c. lease*, Charché, riché, saché, chip, *&c.* porem na quellas que se dirivaõ do Frances se pronunciaõ brandamente como se focem escritas com *x Portugues*, Ex. *Chevalier*, *Chaise*, *Champain*, *Capuchin*, *Machine*, *&c. lease*, Xévelíar, Xés, Xem, péin, Quepuxin, Mexin, *&c.* nos Nomes dirivados dos Hebreos, ou dos Gregos Soa como *K*, Ex. *Acham*, *Barodach*, *Antioch*, *Christian*, *Monarch*, *Chronicle*, *lease*, équam, Berodek, Entiak, Chrístían, Mánark, Crániquil, *&c.*

D.

D. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez* nas Palavras em que compoem Syllaba, porem naõ se pronuncia nas Palavras seguintes, servindo so para cargar na Syllaba, Ex. *Badge*, *Hedge*, *Bridge*, *Lodge*, *Judge*, *&c. lease*, bége, hége, brígi, láje, jáge, *&c.*

F. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez.*

G. Tem dois Sons, hum duro gutural, Ex. *Game*, *Gold*, *Gum*, *&c. lease*, guem, guld, gam, *&c.* e outro brando, Ex. *gentle*, *danger*, *Ginger*, *lease*, jéntil, dénjar, jíngar, *&c.*

Soa sempre duro antes de *a*, *o*, *u*, *l*, *r*, e no fim das Palavras, excepto se for molificado por *d*, *ou*, *e*, Ex. *Bag*, *Badge*, *Cag*, *Cage*, *Log*, *lodge*, *Dog*, *dodge*, *hug*, *huge*, *&c. lease*, beg, bége, queg, quéje, lag, láge, dag, dáge, hag, iíje, *&c.*

Soa commummente brando antes de *e*, *i*, *y*, Ex. *Gender*, *gentle*, *Ginger*, *Gypsy*, *&c. lease*, jéndar, jéntil, jínjar, jípsi, *&c.* excepto que seja endure cido por *h* ou *u*, Ex. *guide*, *guile*, *guest*, *ghess*, *Ghost*, *&c. lease*, gaíd gáil, guést, gués, góst, *&c.*

Nas Palavras seguintes retem, o seu natural duro Son antes de *e*, Ex. *altogether*, *Anger*, *beget*, *Finger*, *forget*, *Geese*, *get*, *Hunger*, *linger*, *&c. lease*, álto-guethar, éngar, bíguit, síngar, fárgit, guis, guit, hángar, íngar, *&c.* e em todas as Palavras dirivadas de *long*, *big*, *strong*, *beg*, *sing*, *bring*, *&c.*

Da mesma sorte Soa duro antes de *i* nas Palavras seguintes, Ex. *begin*, *forgive*, *giddy*, *Gift*, *Girt*, *Girl*, *Gizzard*, *&c. lease*, bíguin, fárguiv, guídi, guist, gárt, guél, guizard, *&c.* Tambem quando dois *gg*, vem juntos, ambos tem o Son duro, ainda que, *e*, *i*, *y*, se sigaõ depois delles, Ex. *Gagg*, *Dagger*, *&c. lease*, Guégue, Dégar, *&c.*

As Letras que a companhaõ *g*, na mesma Syllaba saõ *h*, *l*, *n*, *r*, e fazem o Son de *g* duro, Ex. *Ghess*, *Ghost*, *glad*, *great*, *Ground*, *lease*, gués, gost, gled, grét, gráund, *&c.*

G.

G. Antes de *n* no fim das Palavras he mudo, e so serve para fazer longa a Vogal que fica atras, Ex. *Sign*, *Design*, *Ensign*, *consign*, *&c. lease*, sáin, disáin, insáin, consáin, *&c.*

H. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez* apertando mais a rispiraçaõ.

J. Naõ tem variedade eu seu Son soando sempre como *g* brando, Ex. *just*, *Joint*, *Jointure*, *&c. lease*, jast, jáint, jáintar, *&c.*

K. Se pronuncia como *Q Portuguez.*

L. Naõ se pronuncia antes de *f*, *k*, Ex. *Chalk*, *Calf*, *half*, *Walk*, *lease*, chák, kef, éf, uak, *&c.* taõ pouco se pronuncia em, *could*, *should*, *would*, *lease*, cud, xúd, úd, *&c.*

M. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez.*

N. Nunca se pronuncia depois de *m*, Ex. *Autumn*, *damn*, *lease*, átam, dém, *&c.*

P. Naõ se pronuncia em *Psalm*, *tempt*, *Receipt*, *lease*, Sâm, témt, rícit, *&c.*

Ph. ou principie ou termine a Syllaba, sempre Soa como *f*, Ex. *Physick*, *Physician*, *Philosopher*, *lease*, Fízik, Fízixien, Fílazifar; excepto em *Phthisick*, *Phthisical*, aonde, *Ph*, saõ mudos e naõ soaõ, *lease*, thízik, thízical, *&c.*

Q. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *Quail*, *quick*, *Quality*, *lease*, quéil, qúic, quáliti, *&c.*

R. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *run*, *rest*, *Rain*, *lease*, rán, rest, réin, *&c.*

S. Entre duas Vogais se pronuncia como *z*, Ex. *Desire*, *despise*, *praise*, *dispraise*, *&c. lease*, dízaíar, díspaíz, préiz, dispréiz, *&c.* mas no principio das Palavras se pronuncia como nó *Latin es*, e nó fim mesmo como *s Portuguez.*

T. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez.*

Th. Tem dificultoza pronuncia amelhor instruiçaõ he aquella da Vôz humana; sem embargo a

sua

sua pronuncia he sicioza metendo a Lingua entre os dentes, Ex. *that*, *thou*, *thence*, *this*, *they*, *thine*, *&c. lease*, thét, thaú, théns, this, thé, tháin, *&c.*

V. Sempre sepoem antes, das Vogais, e nunca depois dellas, sem se lhe seguir *e* mudo, Ex. *vain*, *Voice*, *vulgar*, *have*, *Lease*, *Love*, *sav'd*, *lov'd*, em lugar de *saved*, *loved*, *lease*, véin, váiz, válgar, év, lív, lav, séved, láved, *&c.*

Seguese depois das Consoantes *lr*, Ex. *Calves*, *Carve*, *&e. lease*, quélvs, quérv, *&c.*

W. Tem dous Sons asaber, de Consoante e de Vogal; antes de Vogal he consoante, Ex. *Want*, *went*, *Winter*, *lease*, úant, úent, úintar, porem depois de *a*, *e*, *o*, he Vogal, Ex. *Awl*, *crawl*, *Dew*, *few*, *how*, *now*, *lease*, ál, crál, díiu, fíiu, áu, náu, *&c.* mas todas as vezes que he pronunciada no principio das Palavras ou Syllabas, sempre tem o Son de *u*, Vogal em *Portuguez*, Ex. *want*, *went*, *was*, *&c. lease*, úant, úent, úas, *&c.*

X. Sempre Soa como *es*, *ou*, *ks*, nunca começa palavras commuas e sô da principio a algums nomes proprios, sempre acaba, mas nunca começa Syllaba; algumas vezes tem *c* despois, mas nunca *s*, Ex. *Ax*, *vex*, *six*, *Ox*, *Box*, *Flux*, *Example*, *exempt*, *express*, *&c. lease*, éks, veks, siks, ács, bács, flâcs, éksempil, éksempt, éksprés, *&c.*

Z. Naõ tem alteraçaõ no seu, Son, pode estar antes ou depois de qual quer Vogal, mas nunca pode estar immidiatamente antes, ou depois de Consoante na mesma Syllaba.

As

Para amelhor execuçaõ das referidas Regras, daremos aqui ao Leitor huma pequena Carta em Inglez, *escrita pello estilo* Portuguez *de Soletrear.*

Inglez.	*O mesmo* Inglez *por estilo* Portuguez.
Since mine of the 16th Instant I have yours of the 14th ditto, and refer myself to what I already written in answer to your said Letter. This serves at present to desire you to furnish and pay to Mr. J. M. *to the Value of two hundred Pounds, at one or more Times, according as he shall desire it from you, taking his Bill or Bills of Exchange for what you shall so furnish him with, and put it to my Account, and this my Letter of Credit shall be your sufficient Warrant for so doing.*	Sénse máin av thi 16 ínstant Ai ev iúars av thi 14 ditto, end rifár máiself tu uát Ai ev alrédy rítin in énsar tu iúar séid Létar. This sárvés et prézent tu dizáir iú tu fárnix end péy tu Místar *J. M.* tu thi vélhu av tu hándad páunds et uán ar môr Táims eccarding es hi xal dizáiar it fram iú, teking his Bill ar Bills av Exchénge far uát iú xal so fárnix him úith end pát it to mái eccáunt, end this mái Létar av Credit xal be iúar sáffixient Uárant far so duing.

Regras, para se saber quando se hade Escrever com Letra grande, ou pequena.

As Letras grandes se naõ devem de uzar no meyo ou fim de qual quer Palavra, sem que toda ella seje composta dellas, mas sempre no principio; e ainda a hi sômente nestes 6 Cazos, asaber. 1. Em o Principio de qual quer Escritura. 2. Depois de Cada Periodo, ou Ponto final, quando começa

huã

huã nova Sentença. 3. Em o Principio de cada regra na Poezia, e qual quer Verso na Bibilia. 4. Em Nomes Proprios de todos os Generos, tanto de Pessoas, Lugares, ou Couzas, *&c.* 5. Em Termos de Artes, e Nomes de dignidades, Oficiaes, ou outra qual quer Palavra de especial Veneraçaõ em huã Sentença; ou a quem se da em particular todo o devido Respeito. Tambem todos os Nomes Substantivos podem começar com Letra grande; e se podem conhecer pellos signaes, a, an, ou, *the*, antes delles; Ex. *a Man*, hum Homem; *a Mouse*, hum Rato; *an Ox*, hum Boy; *an Ass*, huma Burra; *the City*, a Cidade; *the River*, a Ribeira, *&ce* E ultimamente o Pronome Pesoal I, *eu*, se hade sempre Escrever com Capital ou Letra grande. As pequenas se uzaõ em qual quer lugar que seja.

Das Paradas, ou Pontos, e Virgolas.

As Paradas servem para mostrar que distancia de Tempo se deve observar entre Palavra e Palavra quando se lé. E saõ taõ absolutamente necessarias para a melhor Intiligencia do que Escrevemos, e lemos, que sem ellas, todas as Escrituras seriaõ muy confuzas, e sujeitas a contrarias interpetaçoens. Saõ 4 asaber.

Comma, Semicólon, Cólon, e Periódo, ou Ponto final.

Cada huma destas tem alguma a finidade com o Compasso da Muzica: Porque, o Comma, para a Voz do Leitor entre mentes q'elle possa com deliberaçaõ contar hum. O Semicólon, dous. O Colon, tres; e o Periodo, ou Ponto final, Quatro,

Comma (,) he huã Virgola ao pe de huma Palavra.

Semicólon (;) Ponto, e Virgola.

Colon (:) dous Pontos.

Periodo

Periodo (.) hum Ponto sô ao Pe de huã Palavra.

Porem em se preguntando huã Questaõ, se pôem hum risco em riba do Periodo, e se chama Interogaçaõ; assim (?)

Se de repente se expressa alguã couza de Admiraçaõ, emtaõ se poem hum risco dereito em riba do Periodo, e se chama nota de Admiraçaõ; assim (!)

Se huma Sentença estiver incluza com outra, da qual naõ he nem tem Parte, em taõ se poem dous meyos Circulos, e se chamaõ Entre Parenthesis, assim ( ) e, quando se le, estes fazem q' o Ton da Voz seje mais baixo, como huma couza que vem por acazo interompendo a Coherencia e concordia do Periodo, e tirandolhe a força da inteligencia que de outro modo podera ter. Cada huã Parte delle tem o mesmo Tempo de diliberaçaõ como huã Virgola.

Estas que seguem saõ as Marcas, ou Charactars que mais se uzaõ quando se escreve.

O, Accento (´) em estando em sima de huã Vogal, mostra, que o Ton, ou força da Voz na pronunciaçaõ está sobre a quella Syllaba.

Apostrofa (') he huã Virgola que se poem em sima das Letras, e denota alguma Letra, ou Letras que se deixaraõ de Escrever em alguã Palavra para apressar a Pronunciaçaõ, Ex. *I'll, I will*; eu quero. *Woud'st, wouldest*; queres tu. *Shan't, shall not*; naõ eyde. *Ne'er, never*; nunca.

Asterism (*) he huma Estrela que serve de guia para alguã Remarca na Margem, ou ao Pe da Folha, ou Pagima.

Muytas dellas juntas significaõ que falta alguã couza na quella Passagem, ou relaçaõ do Author a qual tem defeito ou immodestia.

Breve, (˘) he hum risco torto sobre huã Vogal.

Caret, (^) se poem debaixo da Regra, e denota, que algua Letra, Palavra, ou Sentençça, ficou de fora por erro, e se deve incluir exactamente adonde aponta.

Circumflex (ˆ) he do mesmo talho como o Caret, mas sempre se poem emcima de alguma Vogal em huã Palavra, e demostra ser hua Syllaba longa, Ex. *Euphrâtes*.

Diæresis (¨) dous Pontos em sima de 2 Vogais em huã Palavra, que de outro modo fariaõ hum Dipthongo, e as reparte em duas diversas Syllabas.

Hyphen, (-) he hum risco dereito, o qual em estando no fim de huã Regra, denota, que as Syllabas de huã Palavra estaõ apartadas, e q̃. o resto della está no Principio da outra Regra.

Tambem se uza para ajuntar, ou Compor, de duas Palavras hua; Ex. *Ale-house*, Caza, ou Taverna de Cerveja; *Inn-keeper*, Estalajadeiro, ou Estalajadeira.

Estando por sima de huã Vogal, emtaõ naõ se chama propriamente Hyphen, mas sim huã Pilica, e de nota haverse omitido hum *m*, ou *n*, quando se Esereveo. Ex. *nothing is more comendable tha fair Writing*; *nothing is more commendable than fair Writing*.

Naõ ha couza q̃. mereça mais louvor q̃. huã boa Letra.

Index, (☞) he o Dedo dienteiro a pontando, e significa ser aquella Passagem ou relaçaõ notavel para aqual está pontando.

Obelisk, ✝ se uza tambem como o Asterism *, e he para que o Leitor se refira a Margem. Em Diccionarios commumente, denota ser a Palavra Antigua, e de pouco uzo.

Paragraph, (¶) Paragrafo, ou Divizaõ contem varias Sentenças debaixo de hum Articulo, ou Discurço.

Paren-

Parenthesis, [ ] ou Brackets, incluem Palavras, ou Sentenças do mesmo valor ou Significaçaõ com aquellas a quem se ajuntaõ, as quais se podem uzar em seu lugar.

Quotation, (") ou duas Virgolas a o reves, em o Principio de huã Regra, mostraõ a Passagem, ou Relaçaõ do Author que está Quotada, ou alegada em suas proprias Palavras.

Section, (§) ou Divizaõ, se uza em o repartimento de hum Capitulo, ou Livro, em menos Partes, ou Porçoens.

Prosodia, ou Accento das Palavras.

As Monosyllabas que terminaõ com huã Consoante saõ breves, Ex. *Bar*, *bit*, *Car*, *fat*, *Fin*, *Hat*, *mad*, *Shin*, *win*, *&c. lease*, bér, bit, quer, fét, Fín, hét, méd, Xín, úin, *&c.*

Aquelles que terminaõ com a Vogal *e*, Saõ longas, Ex. *bare*, *bite*, *care*, *fare*, *fine*, *hate*, *made*, *shine*, *Wine*, *lease*, bér, baít, quér, fér, fáin, ét, medé, Xáin, úain, *&c.*

As de duas Syllabas, tem o Accento ou na primeira, Ex. *ángel*, *Bánquet*, *cértain*, *Dánger*, *éarly*, *férvent*, *Gárment*, *húman*, *Jéwel*, *Kíngdom*, *Lícence*, *Mémber*, *Náture*, *óintment*, *párdon*, *quárrel*, *Ráiment*, *Sérmon*, *Témple*, *wánton*, *&c.* ou na ultima, Ex. *Abhór*, *begán*, *commánd*, *descénd*, *encámp*, *foménr*, *genteél*, *implóre*, *lamént*, *matúre*, *negléct*, *obscúre*, *permít*, *refórm*, *sincére*, *transfórm*, *vouchsáfe*.

As de 3 Syllabas tem o Accento na primeira, Ex. *árgument*, *Báttlement*, *cáptivate*, *Décency*, *Excellence*, *Férvency*, *Gárrison*, *Hármony*, *íntimate*, *Kínswoman*, *Lénity*, *mágnify*, *négligent*.

Na Syllaba do meyo, Ex. *Advénture*, *cohérent*, *detérmine*, *encóunter*, *forbídden*, *immórtal*, *incéntive*, *inhérit*, *matérnal*, *nocturnal*, *obsérvance*, *presúmptive*,

tive, ou na ultima, Ex. *Apprehénd*, *circumvént*, *disappoínt*, *entertaín*, *importúne*, *intercépt*, *overchargé*, *persevére*, *reconcíle*, *thereupon*.

As de 4 Syllabas tem o Accento vario, por que huãs vezes [illegible] na primeira, Ex. *ámiable*, *cómfortable*, *díligency*, *efficacy*, *fórmidable*, *glóriously*, *innocency*, *mércenary*, *náturally*, *óratory*, *pátrimony*, *sánctuary*; outras vezes na segunda, Ex. *abúndantly*, *behávior*, *commúnicate*, *detérminate*, outras vezes na terceira, Ex. *Apprehénsion*, *Arbitrátor*, *comprehénsive*, *disinhérit*, *howsoéver*, *ornaméntal*; outras vezes na quarta, Ex. *Legerdemáin*, *nevertheléss*, *&c.*

As de 5 Syllabas sempre tem o Accento ou na segunda, Ex. *abóminable*, *commúnicable*, *extrávagantly*, *immédiately*, *notóriously*, *oríginally*, *perpétually*, *unnécessary*; ou nas do meyo, Ex. *Abdicátion*, *Admonition*, *Benedíction*, *Ceremoníal*, *&c.*

As de 6 Syllabas tem quazi sempre o Accento na quarta, Ex. *Abomináti̇on*, *Commemóration*, *Disadvantágious*, *Ecclesiástical*, *Familiárity*, *Irregulárity*, *Mathematícian*, *Qualification*, *&c.*

Das partes da Oraçam.

As partes da Oraçaõ saõ oyto, asaber Nome, Pronome, Verbo, Participio, Adverbio, Prepoziçaõ, Conjuncçaõ, Interjeiçaõ.

Nome.

Os Nomes saõ as Vozes, ou palavras, q' Significaõ alguã Couza, q' seve, ouve, ou palpa; e sedividem, em duas Claces; a Saber em substantivos, e em adjectivos.

Os Substantivos significaõ a mesma e Sencia, e entidade da Couza; Como, *Earth*, terra; *Stone*, pedra;

pedra ; e podem estar na oracaõ por Sy so sem ajuda de adjectivo.

Os adjectivos saõ Aquelles, q' significaõ aqualidade, ou Accidente da couza, Como, *good*, bom ; *white*, branco ; enaó podem estar na oraçaô sem ajuda de Substantivo, claro, ou es condido ;

Os Nomes Substantivos se dividem em proprios, e appellativos.

O nome proprio he aquelle, q' Significa as Couzas proprias, e Certas, Como, *Romulus*, Romulo ; *Rome*, Roma.

O nome appellativo he aquelle, q' Significa as Couzas Commuas, e incertas, Como, *King*, Rey ; *Town*, Lugar.

Genero.

Todo o nome Substantivo, ou he de Genero Masculino, ou Feminino, ou Commum, ou Neutro.

Os nomes de Anjos, Homens, e animais Machos saõ do Genero Masculino.

Os nomes desemeas tanto depessoas, Como de Animais saó do Genero feminino.

Os nomes, q' Significaõ hum, e outro Sexo Saó do Genero Commum, Como, *Cousin*, q' Significa, primo, ou prima ; *Neighbour*, q' significa, vizinho, ou vizinha ; *Servant*, Criado, ou Criada ; *Thief*, Ladraõ, ou Ladra ;

Os nomes, em os quais se naõ pode discernir, nem conhecer o sexo, Como saõ, *the creeping things*, As Couzas Reptis, q' Andáõ de Rasto, *the Fishes*, os peixos, saõ do Genero neutro.

Da Derivaçam dos Nomes.

O Nome, ou he permetívo, ou derivativo ; o permitivo he aquelle, q' naõ se deriva de outro,

Como, *Love*, Amor ; e derivativo he aquelle, q' ſe deriva de permitivo, Como, *Lover*, Amante, q' ſe deriva de *Love*.

A Lingua Ingleza Contem emſi grande variedade de outras Linguas ; por Cuja Razaõ muyta parte de ſeus nomes tem ſua derivaçaõ Nellas ; o Curiozo, q' a quizer Saber, o podera cenſeguir recorrendo a *Bailey*, e a outros Diccionarios, q' apequenés deſte Volume, naõ permite mayor extençaõ.

Há Certos Subſtantivos materiais, a os quais ajuntandolhe huã deſtas Syllabas, er, yer, ou ſter, formaõ outros ſubſtantivos, q' ſignifiçaõ, o agente empregada nas Cõuzas. Ex.

An Hat, hum Chapeo.	*An Hatter*, Chapeleiro.
Pot, Panella.	*Potter*, o Leyro.
Fiſh, Peyxe.	*Fiſher*, Peſcador.
Glove, Luva.	*Glover*, Luveyro.
Garden, Jardin.	*Gardiner*, Jardineyro.
Gun, Canhaõ.	*Gunner*, Canhoneyro.
Law, Ley.	*Lawyer*, Juriſta.
Game, Jogo.	*Gameſter*, Jugador.
Seam, Cuſtura.	*Seamſter*, Cuſtureyra.

Tambem ha certos Subſtantivos peſſoais, dos quais ſe formaõ outros Subſtantivos de dignidade, ajuntandolhe eſta Syllaba, *Ship*, Ex.

Apoſtle, Apoſtolo.	*Apoſtleſhip*, Apoſtolado.
Admiral, Almirante.	*Admiralſhip*, Almirantalgo.
Maſter, Meſtre.	*Maſterſhip*, Magiſterio.
Lord, Senhor.	*Lordſhip*, Senhoria.

Da meſma ſorte a Syllaba, *Hood*, junta aos Subſtantivos tem a meſma força, Ex.

Father, Pay.	*Fatherhood*, Parternidade
Child, Criança.	*Childhood*, Mininice.
Brother, Irmaõ.	*Brotherhood*, Irmandade.

Man

Man, Homem.	*Manhood*, Virilidade.
False, Falso.	*Falshood*, Falsidade.
Priest, Sacerdote.	*Priesthood*, Sacerdocio.

Tambem da mayor Parte dos Adjectivos terminados em, *full*, *less*, *ous*, *y*, *ish*, se formaõ Substantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *ness*, Ex.

Powerful, poderoso.	*Powerfulness*, Poder.
Wilful, opinativo.	*Wilfulness*, Opiniaõ.
Careless, sem cuydado.	*Carelessness*, Descuydo.
Godly, piadozo.	*Godliness*, Piedade.
Crafty, engenhozo.	*Craftiness*, Engenho.
Foolish, loco.	*Foolishness*, Locura.
Righteous, justo.	*Righteousness*, Justidade.
Worthy, digno.	*Worthiness*, Estimaçaõ.
Devilish, diabolico.	*Devilishness*, Diabrura.
Brutish, brutal.	*Brutishness*, Brutualidade.

Tambem há muytos Substantivos derivados do Latim, terminados variamente, porque hums terminaõ em, *ion*; derivados dos Latinos Acabados em, *io*, como, *Opinion*, Opiniaõ, de Opinio; *Religion*, Religiaõ, de, Religio; *Question*, Pregunta, de, Questio. Outros terminaõ em, *our*, derivados dos Latinos em, *or*, como, *Labour*, trabalho, de, Labor; *Honour*, Honra, de, Honor; *Favour*, Favor, de, Favor; outros terminaõ em, *ty*, e se derivaõ dos Latinos em, *tas*, como, *Piety*, Piedade, de, Pietas; *Charity*, Caridade, de, Charitas; *Liberality*, Liberalidade, de, Liberalitas; *Purity*, Puridade, de, Puritas; e outros muytos.

Dos Numeros dos Nomes.

Os Nomes tem Numero singular, e Numero plurar; o singular he quando se fala de hum; como, *a King*, hum Rey; o plurar, quando se fala de muytos, como, *Men*, Homens, *Kings*, Reys.

O numero plurar se forma ordinariamente por ajuntamento de hum, *s*, ao singular, Ex.

The King, o Rey.	*The Queen*, a Rainha.
The Kings, os Reys.	*The Queens*, as Rainhas.
The Lord, o Senhor.	*Book*, Livro.
The Lords, os Senhores.	*Books*, Livros.
My Brother.	Meu Irmaõ.
My Brothers.	Meus Irmaõs.
My Horse.	Meu Cavallo.
My Horses.	Meus Cavallos.
My House.	Minha Caza.
My Houses.	Minhas Cazas.
Tree.	Arvore.
Trees.	Arvores.

Tres Excepçois tem esta regra.

A primeyra he nos nomes, q' terminaõ o singular em, *ch*, *dg*, *se*, *sh*, *ss*, *x*. q' nestes se forma o plurar ajuntandolhe, *es*, *ex*.

Church,	*Churches*,	Igrejas.
Match,	*Matches*,	Mechas.
Hedg,	*Hedges*,	Cercos.
Horse,	*Horses*,	Cavallos.
Fish,	*Fishes*,	Peyxes.
Cross,	*Crosses*,	Cruzes.
Witness,	*Witnesses*,	Testemunhas.
Box,	*Boxes*,	Caixas.

A segunda he nos nomes acabados em, *f*, ou *fe*, q'estes formaõ o plurar, mudando, *o*, *f*, ou *fe*, em, *ves*, Ex.

Self,	*selves*,	mesmos.
Knife,	*Knives*,	Facas.
Life,	*Lives*,	Vidas.
Calf,	*Calves*,	Vitellas.
Staff,	*Staves*,	Bordõis, Baculos.
Thief,	*Thieves*,	Ladrõis.
Wife,	*Wives*,	Mulheres cazadas
Loaf,	*Loaves*,	Pains.

Ate-

Aterceyra he nos irrigulares seguintes.

Ma,	*Men*,	Homens,
Woman,	*Women*,	Mulheres.
Child,	*Children*,	Rapazes, crianças.
Ox,	*Oxen*,	Boys.
Mouse,	*Mice*,	Ratos.
Louse,	*Lice*,	Piolhos.
Die,	*Dice*,	Dados.
Foot,	*Feet*,	Pes.
Goose,	*Geese*,	Ganſos,
Penny,	*Pence*,	Peniques.
Sow,	*Swine*,	Porcos.
Tooth,	*Teeth*,	Dentes.

Noteſe, q' ha Subſtantivos, q' naõ tem plurar como, *Gold*, Ouro; *Silver*, Prata; *Copper*, Cobre; *Lead*, Chumbo, *&c.*

Das Declinaçois dos Nomes.

Os Nomes em Inglez, ſe declinaõ por meyo de Artigos, e naõ por Mudança de terminaçois, como os Latinos e tem ſeis Cazos; a ſaber, Nominativo, Genitivo, Dativo, Acuzativo, Vocativo, Abelativo.

Os artigos ſaõ *the*, *of*, *to*, *the*, *o*, *from*; o Artigo, *the*, correſponde ao artigo, o, a, os, as do Portuguez, e ſe aplica ao Nominativo, e Acuzativo; o Artigo *of*, correſponde ao Artigo, de, da, des, das, e ſerve para o Genitivo; o Artigo, *to*, correſponde ao Artigo, a, ao, para o, e ſerve, para o Dativo; o Artigo, *o*, he o meſmo q'em Portuguez, e ſe aplica ao Vocativo; o Artigo, *from*, correſponde ao artigo, de, do Portuguez, e ſerve para o Abelativo.

Noteſe q' ſuppoſto, *of*, e *from*, ſignifiquem, de, em *Portuguez*; com tudo, no *Inglez* ſe uza de, *of*, quando dois nomes ſubſtantivos, pertençentes a Couzas diverſas, ſe encontraõ na oraçao; Como, *the Riches of* England *are great*, As Riquezas de *Inglaterra* ſão Grandes;

Ede,

Ede, *from* se uza quando aquestaõ he feita, pella pregunta, unde, (de donde) dos Latinos; como, *from whence come you?* de donde vens? *I come from* London; eu venho de *Londres*; tudo o sobredito ficará manifesto, ávista da declinaçaõ, que he na forma seguinte.

Singular.

N. *the King*, o Rey.
G. *of the King*, do Rey.
D. *to the King*, ao Rey.
Ac. *the King*, o Rey.
V. *o King*, o' Rey.
A. *from the King*, do Rey.

Tambem se pode declinar por meyo desta particula, *a*, *q̃*, em *Portuguez*, significa hum;

Singular.

N. *a King*, hum Rey.
G. *of a King*, de hum Rey.
D. *to a King*, á hum Rey.
Ac. *a King*, hum Rey.
V. *Caret.*
A. *from a King*, de hum Rey.

Advertindo q' se o nome Começa por hua vogal, he necessario uzár de *an*, em Lugar de, *a*, Ex.

N. *an Angel*, hum Anjo.
G. *of an Angel*, de hum Anjo.
D. *to an Angel*, a hum Anjo.
Ac. *an Angel*, hum Anjo.
A. *from an Angel*, de hum Anjo.

Para de clinar o plurar, naõ he necessario mais, q' juntar hum, *s*, ao singular, observando a mesma ordem.

Notese

Notese q' os Artigos tanto servem para o masculino como para o feminino, e tanto, para o singular, como para o plurar. Ex.

A Man, and a Woman,	Hum Homem, e huá mulher.
A Brother, and a Sister,	Hum Irmaõ, e huá Irmã.
The Father, and the Mother,	O Pay, e a May.
The Son, and the Daughter,	O Filho, e a Filha.
The Children,	As Crianças.
The Sun,	O Sol.
The Moon,	A Lua.
The Stars.	As Estrellas.

Dos Adjectivos.

Os Nomes Adjectivos tem só huã Forma, como, *bitter*, amargo; *sour*, azedo; *sharp*, agudo; *even*, igual; *crafty*, astuto; *greedy*, sofrego; *warlike*, guerreyro, bellicozo; *large*, cumprido; *fit*, capas, proporcionado; *narrow*, estreyto.

No *Inglez* servem para todo o genero, e para todo o numero; idest, que o mesmo Adjectivo serve com o Substantivo; seja este de qualquer genero, que for; esteja no, singular, ou no plurar, Ex.

Good Boy,	Bom Rapaz.
Good Boys,	Bons Rapazes.
Good Girl,	Boa Rapariga.
Good Girls,	Boas Raparigas.
Wise Man,	Sabio Homem.
Wise Men,	Sabios Homems.
Wise Woman,	Sabia Mulher.
Wise Women.	Sabias Mulheres.

Do Modo, como muytos Adjectivos se formam.

Muytos Adjectivos se formaõ de Substantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *full*, que importa huma Quantidade, da Qualidade, que o Substantivo significa, Ex.

Joy, Alegria,	*joyful*, alegre.
Fruit, Fruta,	*fruitful*, frutifero.
Youth, Mocidade,	*youthful*, juvenil.
Care, Cuydado,	*careful*, cuydadozo.
Use, Uzo,	*useful*, uzual.
Deceit, Dolo,	*deceitful*, dolozo.
Disdain, Desdem,	*disdainful*, desdenhozo.
Grace, Graça,	*graceful*, graciozo.
Faith, Fé,	*faithful*, fiel.
Forget, Esquecimento,	*forgetful*, esquecido.
Beauty, Fermozura,	*beautiful*, formoza.
Bounty, Benignidade,	*bountiful*, benigno.
Chear, Alegria,	*chearful*, alegre.
Skill, Pericia,	*skilful*, perito.
Power, Poder,	*powerful*, poderozo.
Delight, Delicia,	*delightful*, deliciozo.
Distrust Desconfiança,	*distrustful*, desconfiado.
Dread, Medo,	*dreadful*, medrozo.
Will, Vontade,	*wilful*, voluntario.
Hurt, Damno,	*hurtful*, damnoso.
Pain, Dor,	*painful*, doloroso.
Watch, Vigia,	*watchful*, vigilante.
Plenty, Abundancia,	*plentiful*, abundante.

Outros se formaõ de Substantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *less*, que importa huma privaçaõ da quillo, que o Substantivo significa, Ex.

Beard, Barba.	*beardless*, desbarbado.
Blame, Culpa,	*blameless*, sem culpa.

Fa-

Father, Pay,	*fatherless*, orphaõ.
Friend, Amigo,	*friendless*, semamigo.
God, Deus,	*godless*, sem deus.
End, Fim,	*endless*, sem fim.
Name, Nome,	*nameless*, sem nome.
Question, Questaõ,	*questionless*, sem questaõ.
Sense, Sentido,	*senseless*, sem sentido.

Outros se formaõ, ajuntandolhe hum, *ous*, Ex.

Danger, Perigo,	*dangerous*, perigozo.
Courage, Animo,	*courageous*, animozo.
Malice, Malicia,	*malicious*, maliciozo.
Harmony, Armonia,	*harmonious*, armoniozo.
Valour, Valor,	*valourous*, valerozo.
Zeal, Zello,	*zealous*, zellozo.
Monster, Monstro,	*monstrous*, monstruozo.
Outrage, Contumelia,	*outrageous*, contumeliozo
Marvel, Maravilha,	*marvellous*, maravilhozo.
Rigour, Rigor,	*rigorous*, rigorozo.
Virtue, Virtude,	*virtuous*, virtuozo.

Outros se formaõ ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *ly*, Ex.

God, Deus,	*godly*, piadozo.
Brother, Irmaõ,	*brotherly*, irmandade.
Earth, Terra,	*earthly*, terrestre.
Heaven, Ceo,	*heavenly*, celeste.
Love, Amor,	*lovely*, amavel.
Order, Ordem,	*orderly*, ordenado.

Outros se formaõ ajuntandolhe hum, *y*, Ex.

Blood, Sangue,	*bloody*, sanguinho.
Dirt, Lama,	*dirty*, lamacento.
Guilt, Culpa,	*guilty*, culpado.
Hair, Cabello,	*hairy*, cabelludo.
Hunger, Fome,	*hungry*, faminto.
Mud, Limo,	*muddy*, limozo.
Need, Necessidade,	*needy*, necessitado.
Sand, Area,	*sandy*, areozo.
Stone, Pedra,	*stony*, pedragozo.
Wind, Vento,	*windy*, ventozo.

Outros

Outros se formam ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, ish, *Ex.*

Brute, Bruto,	*brutish*, brutal.
Devil, Diabo,	*devilish*, diabolico.
Fool, Estulto,	*foolish*, fatuo.
Sot, Tonto, Bebado,	*sotish*, atontado, embebedado.
Water, Agua,	*waterish*, aguado.
Whore, Puta,	*whorish*, putanheiro.
Child, Criança,	*childish*, pueril.

Porem se esta Syllaba, ish, *se junta a Adjectivos, diminue sua significam.* Ex.

White, branco,	*whitish*, branquinho.
Red, vermelho,	*redish*, vermelhinho.
Black, negro,	*blackish*, negrinho.
Cold, frio,	*coldish*, friozinho.
Sweet, doce,	*sweetish*, docezinho.

Outros se formam ajuntandolhe a particula, able, *Ex.*

Season, Oportunidade,	*seasonable*, oportuno.
Blame, Culpa,	*blameable*, culpavel.
Answer, Reposta,	*answerable*, responsavel.
Change, Troco,	*changeable*, comutavel.
Cure, Cura,	*curable*, curavel.
Favour, Favor,	*favourable*, favoravel.
Marriage, Cazamento,	*marriageable*, cazadeira.
Note, Nota,	*notable*, notavel.
Pardon, perdaõ,	*pardonable*, perdoavel.
Profit, proveito,	*profitable*, proveytozo.

Outros se formam ajuntandolhes as Syllabas, cal, al, ical, *Ex.*

Rhetorick, Rhetorica,	*Rhetorical*, Rhetorico.
Angel, Anjo,	*Angelical*, Angelico.

Can-

Canon, o Canon,	*canonical*, canonico.
Logic, Logica,	*logical*, logico.
Musick, Muzica,	*musical*, muzico.
Allegorick, Allegoria,	*allegorical*, allegorico.
Accident, Accidente,	*accidental*, accidental.
History, Historia,	*historical*, historico.
Method, Methodo,	*methodical*, methodico.
Person, Pessoa,	*personal*, pessoal.

Dos Graos de Comparaçam.

Em os Nomes Adjectivos, tem so Lugar a comparaçaõ; em aqual se admitem tres graos; a saber pozitivo, que significa a simples qualidade, ou quantidade da Couza; como, *big*, grande; *white*, branco; comparativo, que e leva a couza a mais alto Lugar; como, *bigger*, mais grande; *whiter*, mais branco; e superlativo, que a exalta ao mais alto Lugar; como, *biggest*, o mais grande; *whitest*, o mais branco.

O Comparitivo formase dopozitivo, ajuntando lhe a Syllaba, *er*, regularmente; e o superlativo, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *est*, Ex.

Low, bayxo; *lower*, mais bayxo; *lowest*, o mais bayxo.

Great, grande; *greater*, mayor; *greatest*, o mayor.

High, alto, *higher*, mais alto, *highest*, o mais alto.

Tambem se pode formar com as dicçois, *more*, e *most*, a primeira para expressar o comparativo, e segunda, o superlatívo, o que commumente tem Lugar nos Adjectivos, que terminaõ, em, *ous*, Ex.

Charles *is ingenious*,	*Carlos* he engenhozo.
William *is more ingenious*,	*Guilherme*, he mais engenhozo.

George

George *is the most ingenious in the World,*	*George* he o mais engenhozo em o mundo.
Glorious, gloriozo.	
More glorious,	mais gloriozo.
The most glorious,	o mais gloriozo.
Jealous, zelozo.	
More jealous,	mais zelozo.
The most jealous,	o mais zelozo.

Das comparaçoens irrigulares.

Good, better, the best, bom, melhor, o melhor.

Ill, bad, naught, maõ, *worse,* peyor, *the worst,* o mais peyor.

Much, muyto, *more,* mais, *most,* o mais.

Little, pouco, less, menos, *the least,* o minimo.

Dos Pronomes.

O Pronome he aquelle, que se poem em Lugar do nome; declinasse tambem por Cazos, tendo Numero singular, e plural.

Ha quatro especies de Pronomes; pessoais, possessivos, demonstrativos, e relativos.

Os pessoays saõ, *I,* eu, *thou,* tu, he, elle no Numero singular; e we nos, *ye* ou *you, they,* elles, no plurar. Se declinaõ na Forma seguinte.

Singular.

N. *I* ou *me,*	eu.
G. *of me,*	de mi.
D. *to me,*	à mi.
A. *me,*	à mi.
Ab. *from me.*	de mi.

Plural.

N. *We,*	nos.
G. *of us,*	de nos.
D. *to us,*	à nos.
A. *us,*	a nos.
Ab. *from us.*	de nos.

Sin-

Singular.

N. *thou*,	tu.
G. *of thee*,	de ti.
D. *to thee*,	a ti.
Ac. *thee*,	ati.
V. *o thou*,	ó tu,
A. *from thee*,	de ti.

Plural.

N. *ye*,	vôz.
G. *of you*,	de vôz.
D. *to you*,	a vôz.
Ac. *you*,	á vôz.
V. *o ye*,	ó vôz.
A. *from you*,	de vôz.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *he*, elle.	N. *they*, elles.
G. *of him*, delle.	G. *of them*, delles.
D. *to him*, a elle.	D. *to them*, a elles.
Ac. *him*, a elle.	Ac. *them*, a elles.
A. *from him*, delle.	A. *from them*, delles.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *she*, ella,	o plurar de, *she*, *he* o
G. *of her*, della.	mesmo q' o de, *he*, a
D. *to her*, a ella.	sima.
Ac. *her*, a ella.	
A. *from her*, della.	

Os Pronomes possessisivos saõ aquelles, q' mostraõ a posse das Couzas; estes saõ de duas maneyras, ou Conjunctivos, ou absolutos.

Os Conjunctivos saõ aquelles, q' sejuntaõ aos Substantivos, q' significaõ as entidades possuidas, Ex.

My Father,	meu Pay.
My Mother,	minha May.

My Sister,	minha Irmã.
My Brother,	meu Irmaõ.
My Friends,	meus Amigos.
Thy Horse,	teu Cavallo.
Thy Mare,	tua Egua.
Thy Dogs,	teus Cãis.
Thy Bitches,	tuas Cadellas.
His Ox,	seu Boy.
His Cow,	sua Vaca.
His Cocks,	seus Gallos.
His Hens,	suas Gallinhas.
Our Houses,	Nossas Cazas.
Your Book,	Vosso Livro.
Your Books,	Vossos Livros.
Their Country,	seu Pays.
Their Cities.	suas Cidades.

Notese que quando a Couza possuida pertence amacho, se uza do possessivo, *his*, e pertencendo a femea, se uza do possessivo, *her*, declinaõse os sebreditos possessivos na forma seguinte.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *my*, meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
G. *of my*, de meu, de minha,	de meus, de minhas.
D. *to my*, a meu, a minha,	a meus, a minhas.
A. *my*, meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
V. *o' my*, ó meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
A. *from my*, de meu, de minha,	de meus, de minhas.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *thy*, teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
G. *of thy*, de teu, de tua,	de teus, de tuas.
D. *to thy*, a teu, a tua,	a teus, a tuas.
A. *thy*, teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
V. *o thy*, ou teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
A. *from thy*, de teu, de tua,	de teus, de tuas.

Sing.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *his*, seu, sua,	seus, suas.
G. *of his*, de seu, de sua,	de seus, de suas.
D. *to his*, á seu, á sua,	á seus, á suas.
A. *his*, seu, sua,	seus, suas.
Ab. *from his*, de seu, de sua,	de seus, de suas.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *her*, seu, sua,	seus, suas.
G. *of her*, de seu, de sua,	de seus, de suas.
D. *to her*, á seu, á sua,	á seus, á suas.
A. *her*, seu, sua,	seus, suas.
Ab. *from her*, de seu, de sua,	de seus, de suas.

Sing.

N. *our*, nosso, nossa.
G. *of our*, de nosso, de nossa.
D. *to our*, a nosso, á nossa.
A. *our*, nosso, á nossa.
V. *o our*, 'o nosso, o' nossa.
Ab. *from our*, de nosso, de nossa.

Plur.

N. *ours*, nossos, nossos.
G. *of ours*, de nossos, de nossas.
D. *to ours*, á nossos, á nossas.
A. *ours*, nossos, nossas.
V. *o ours*, o' nossos, o nossas.
Ab. *from ours*, de nossos, de nossas.

Sing.

N. *your*, vosso, vossa.
G. *of your*, de vosso, de vossa.
D. *to your*, á vosso, á vossa.
A. *your*, vosso, vossa.
V. *o your*, o' vosso, o' vossa.
Ab. *from your*, de vosso, de vossa.

Plural.

N. *yours*, vossos, vossas.
G. *of yours*, de vossos, de vossas.
D. *to yours*, a' vossos, a vossas.
A. *yours*, vossos, vossas.
V. *o yours*, o' vossos, o' vossas.
Ab. *from yours*, de vossos, de vossas.

Sing.

N. *their*, seu, sua.
G. *of their*, de seu, de sua.
D. *to their*, a seu, a sua.
A. *their*, seu, sua.
V. *o their*, o' seu, o' sua.
Ab. *from their*, de seu, de sua.

Plural.

N. *theirs*, seus, suas.
G. *of theirs*, de seus, de suas.
D. *to theirs*, á seus, á suas.
A. *theirs*, seus, suas.
V. *o their*, o' seus, 'o suas.
Ab. *from their*, de seus, de suas.

Notese, q', *their*, se pode aplicar no plurar; como tambem, *yours*, se pode uzar no singular, e, *your*, no plurar.

Os Absolutos saõ aquelles, q' senaõ juntaõ immidiatamente aos Substantivos; se naõ por via de conjuncçâo; os quais saõ os seguintes.

mine, meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
thine, teu, tua,	teus, tuas,
his, seu, sua,	seus, suas.
her, seu, sua,	seus, suas.
ours,	nossos, nossas.

their,

their, sua,	seus, suas.
your, vosso, vossa,	vossos, vossas.
yours, vosso, vossa,	vossos, vossas.

Ex.

Your Father and mine,	vosso Pay, e meu.
Your House and mine,	vossa Caza, e minha.
Your Friends and mine,	vossos Amigos, e meus.
Your Daughter and mine,	vossa Filha, e minha.
My Country and yours,	meu Pays e vosso.
My Friend and yours,	meus Amigos, e vossos.
Our Servants, and theirs,	nossos Moços, e seus.
Their Opinion and ours,	sua Opiniaõ e nossa.
My Horse runs better than yours,	meu Cavallo corre melhor, q' o vosso.
I am at your Service,	eu estou á vosso Serviço.
I am at yours,	eu estou ao vosso.

Notese, q'os mais dos Sobreditos possessivos, sendo de sua natureza Conjunctivos, como fica atras ditto, se fazem accidentalmente absolutos, por se juntar por Cazualidade por via de Conjunçaõ aõs Substantivos; e q' entre elles so, *mine*, e *thine*, saõ propria, e realmente absolutos, porque estes nunca sejuntaõ aos Substantivos immidiatamente se naõ por via de Conjuncçaõ, e commumente se aplicáõ em Repostas. Como, *whose is this Book?* de quem he este Livro? *is mine*, he meu; *is thine*, he teu: sua declinaçaõ he na forma seguinte.

N. *mine*, meu, minha, meus minhas.
G. *of mine*, de meu, de minha, de meus de minhas.
D. *to mine*, a meu, a minha, a meus a minhas.
A. *mine*, meu, minha, meus, minhas.
V. *o mine*, ó meu, ó minha, ó meus, ó minhas.
A. *from mine*, de meu de minha, de meus, de minhas.

N. *thine*, teu, tuá, teus, tuas.
G. *of thine*, de teu, de tua, de teus, de tuas.
D. *to thine*, a teu, á tua, á teus, á tuas.
A. *thine*, teu, tua, teus, tuas.
V. *ó thine*, ó teu, ó tua, ó teus, ó tuas.
A. *from thine*, de teu, de tuá, de teus, de tuas.

Os Pronomes demonstrativos, saó aquelles q' fazem de mostraçam das pessoas ou Couzas, Ex.

this Man,	este Homem.
these Men,	estes Homens.
that Man,	aquelle Homem.
those Men,	aquelles Homens.
this Woman,	esta Mulher.
these Women,	estas Mulheres.
that Woman,	aquella Mulher.
those Women,	aquellas Mulheres.
that same,	aquello mesmo.
that vexes me,	aquillo me emraivece.

Sua declinaçam he na Forma seguinte.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *this*, este, esta.	N. *these*, estes, estas.
G. *of this*, deste, desta.	G. *of these*, destes, destas.
D. *to this*, a este, á esta.	D. *to these*, a estes, a estas
Ac. *this*, este, esta.	Ac. *these*, estes, estas.
Ab. *from this*, deste, desta.	Ab. *from these*, destes, destas.

Sing.
N. *that*, aquelle, aquella.
G. *of that*, da quelle, da quella.
D. *to that*, aa quelle, aa quella.
Ac. *that*, aquelle, aquella.
Ab. *from that*, da quelle, da quella.

Plu-

Plural.

N. *those*, aquelles, aquellas.
G. *of those*, da quelles, da quellas.
D. *to those*, á aquelles, á aquellas.
Ac. *those*, aquelles, aquellas.
Ab. *from those*, da quelles, da quellas.

Quando, *that*, he Relativo se uza dos Pronomes pessoais, e naõ dos demonstrativos, Ex.

He that is content, is rich enough,	aquelle q' está contente he bastante rico.
She that you know,	aquella, q' tu conhesses.
They, that you spoke to me of,	aquelles de quem vos me falasteis.

Tambem se uza destes Pronomes, *this*, e *that*, por evitar a repitiçaõ de hum nome, *Ex.*

This Knife doth not cut so well, as that which I lost.	este faca naõ corta taõbem como aquella, q' eu perdi.
That Cloth is not so fine, as that you bought yesterday.	este pano naõ he táo fino, como a quelle q' tu comprastе honte.
My Book is better than that.	meu Livro he melhor q' aquelle.
Your Horse runs better than this.	vosso Cavallo corre melhor, q'este.
Our House is bigger than this.	nossa Caza he mayor q' esta.
Our Bells ring better than those.	nossos Sinos tangem melhor q' aquelles.

Dos Pronomes Relativos.

Os Pronomes Relativos saõ aquelles, q' se referem aos Substantivos, q' lhe ficaõ atrâs; e saõ tres, a

saber, *who*, *which*, e, *that*, e sedeclinaõ na forma seguinte, sendo de todo o genero e de todo o numero.

Sing.

N. *Who*, quem ou que.
G. *of whom*, de quem.
D. *to whom*, á quem.
Ac. *whom*, quem.
Ab. *from whom*, de quem.

Plural.

N. *Who*, que, ou quem.
G. *of whom*, dos que, ou de quem.
D. *to whom*, aos que, ou a quem..
Ac. *whom*, que.
Ab. *from whom*, dos que, ou de quem.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *which*, o que, o qual, a q', aqual, os q' os quais.	
G. *of which*, de q', do qual, da q', de qual, dos q' das quais.	
D. *to which*, ao q', ao qual, á q', á qual, aos q', aos quais.	
Ac. *which*, oq', o qual, a q', a qual, os q', as quais.	
Ab. *from which*, do q', do qual, da q', da qual, dos q', das quais.	

That se declina na mesma Forma; mas nesta natureza de Relativo, he de todo, o genero, e de todo, o numero, e em tam significa, que, ou oqual;

Notese, q' o Pronome, *who*, se refere só á pessoas, *Ex.*

Alexander, *Who found the Earth too little of whom you speak?*	*Alexandre*, que achou o Mundo pequeno muito de quem falais, vôz.
He is a Man of whom I have received many Favours.	Este he hum homem de quem eu tenho recebido muitos favores.

To

To whom I am much obliged.	A quem eu estou muito obrigado.
There are the Gentlemen of whom we have spoken so much.	La estaõ os Gentis Homens, de quem nos havemos falado tanto.
These are the Gentlewomen, of whom we have bought.	Estas saõ asGentis mulheres de quem nos havemos comprado.

Which, e *that*, se referem á pessoas, e a Couzas indiferentemente.

The Man, that lives well.	O Homem q' vive bem.
The Woman, which works.	A Mulher, q' trabalha.
The Birds, that fly.	As Aves q' voaõ.
There are Predictions, which advertise us of our Misfortunes.	Ellas saõ predicçõis, q' nos Avizaõ de nossas Desgraças.
Gold is a Metal, which doth help us in all our Wants.	Ouro he hum Metal, q' nos ajuda em todas nossas Faltas.
Which makes the Execution of our Designs easy; and which makes us to triumph over all Difficulties.	Q' fas a Execuçaõ de nossos Dizignos facil; eq' nôs fas triumfar sobre todas as Difficuldades.

Estes Pronomes Relativos sam tambem Interrogativos, Ex.

Who is there?	Quem está lá?
Who comes here?	Quem vem aqui?
Who is that Man?	Quem he aquelle Homem?
Who is that Woman?	Quem he aquella Mulher?
Who are those Men?	Quem saõ aquelles Homens?

Which

Which will you have?	Qual quereis vôs?
Which of these two Horses do you like best?	Qual destes dois Cavallos, te agrada melhor?
From whom have you this News?	De quem tendes vos estas novas?
Which is it?	Qual he elle?
Which is the Way?	Qual he o Caminho?
Which of the two?	Qual dos dois?

Uzasse deste Pronome, *what*, quando no Portuguez se uza, o que, no Principio de hum Periodo, como tambem diante das pessoas, couzas, e Verbos, quando se fas alguá interrogaçaõ, Ex.

What you say is true.	O q' tu dizes he verde.
What he doth is worth nothing.	O q' fas elle, he digno de nada.
What the Heart thinketh, the Tongue speaketh.	O q' o Coraçaõ cuyda, dis a Lingua.
What one wins, the other spends.	O q' Ganha hum, o outro dispende.
Give what you can.	Da o que tu Podes?
Say what you know.	Dize o q' tu sabes?
What Man is that?	Q' Homem he aquelle?
What Book is that?	Q' Livro he aquelle?
What Trade are you of?	De q' Officio sois?
What say you?	Q' dizes tu?
What do you ask?	Q' procuras tu?
What will you drink?	Q' queres tu beber?
What do you want?	Q' necessitas tu?

Esta palavra, *where*, a companhada das Prepoziçõis, *about*, *at*, *in*, *of*, *unto*, *with*, he uzada em Lugar de, *which*, Ex.

Where about,	Aorredor, do qual, ou da qual.
Where at,	Ao qual, ou a qual.

Where

Wherein,	Em o qual, ou em a qual.
Wherewith,	Com o qual, ou com a qual.
Whereunto,	Ao qual, ou ã qual.

Notese, q' o *Inglez* expressa o Relativo, *o*, do *Portuguez*, pella Syllaba *it*, q' quando se refere a Couzas antecedentes, tem força de Relativo, *Ex.*

I have not seen it,	Eu naõ o, vi.
Do you see the King's, Coach? I see it,	Ves tu o Coche do Rey? en o vejo.
It shall be of fine Flour,	Sera de fina Farinha.
It is a thing the most holy,	He a Couza a mais sagrada.

Declinasse na maneyra seguinte.

N. *it*, elle, ou ella.
G. *of it*, de elle ou de ella.
D. *to it*, a elle, ou a ella.
Ac. *it*, elle ou ella.
Ab. *from it*, de elle, ou de ella.

Notese que a Syllaba, *its*, tem força de possessivo, significando, seu, sua, seus, suas, e se declina na Forma seguinte.

N. *its*, seu, sua, seus, suas.
G. *of its*, de seu, de sua, de seus, de suas.
D. *to its*, a seu, a sua, a seus, a suas.
Ac. *its*, seu, sua, seus, suas.
Ab. *from its*, de seu, de sua, de seus, de suas.

Dos Verbos.

O Verbo he hua Parte da Oraçaõ, que tem modos, e tempos, e naõ se declina por Cazos.

O

O Verbo he pessoal, ou impessoal; o impessoal se conjuga só pellas terceyras pessoas do singular; como, *it raineth*, chove; *it bloweth*, aventa.

O Verbo pessoal se conjuga por todas aseys pessoas; a saber; tres no singular; *I love*, eu amo, *thou loveſt*, tu amas; *he loveth*; elle ama e tres no plurar asaber, *we love*, nôz amamos; *ye*, ou *you love*, vôz a mais; *they love*, elles amaõ.

O Verbo pessoal se divide em activo, passivo, e neutro.

O Verbo Activo he aquelle q' exercita a acçaõ com relaçaõ a alguá Couza, como, *I read*, eu Leo; *I love*, eu amo; *I write*, eu escrevo; os quais verbôs dizem relaçaõ ao que se lé ao que se ama, e ao que se escreve.

O Passivo he aquelle em que se padesse alguá acçâõ; como, *I am loved*, eu seu amado.

O Neutro he aquelle q' produz e exercita a acçaõ em sy mesmo; como, *I am*, eu sou; *I exist*; eu existo.

O Verbo tem seis Modos, a saber, modo Indicativo, que demostra; como, *I speak*, eu falo.

Modo Imperativo, que manda; como, *do thou, that*, faze aquillo; *let him do that*, faça elle a quillo.

Modo Optativo, q' dezeja conhecido pellos signais, *God grant, please God, wish God, would to God*; como, *O that, God grant I may do that*, oxala, faça eu aquillo.

Modo Potencial, conhecido pellos signais, *may, can, might, should, could, would, ought*, vg. *I may*, ou *can love*, *I might*, ou *I should*, &c. *love*, amaria ou poderia eu amar, *&c.*

Modo Conjunctivo que ajunta a acçâõ á algum Tempo, ou pessoa, conhecido pellos signais, *how, as, when, if, although*, v. g. *as I love*, como eu amo, *&c.*

E Modo Infinito, que poem o Verbo sem definir Tempo, pessoa, e Numero, v. g. *to speak*, fallar.

O

O Modo Indicativo tem ſinco Tempos, aſaber, Tempo prezente, que ſignifica o que actualmente, ſe eſtá fazendo, vg. *I love*, eu amo.

Preterito Imperfeito, que ſignifica a acçaõ paſſada, mas ainda naõ totalmente acabada; v. g. *I loved*, eu amava.

Preterito perfeito, que ſignifica a acçaõ ja paſſada, e finida, v. g. *I loved*, ou *have loved*, eu amey, ou tenho amado.

Preterito pluſquam perfeito, que vem aſer mais, que perfeito, e ſignifica a acçâõ de tal ſorte paſſada, que ja naõ pode ſer interrompida, v. g. *I had loved*, eu tinha amado.

Futuro, que ſignifica a acçâo, que hade ſer, ou vir vg. *I ſhall*, ou *will love*, eu amarey.

Os tempos dos mais Modos ſe veraõ pella conjugaçaõ dos Verbos.

Alem do referido ſe hade notar que ha dois Verbos auxiliares, a ſaber, o Verbo, *to have*, e o Verbo *to be*.

O Verbo, *to have*, ſerve para ajudar a Formar os perfeitos compoſtos, e os pluſquam perfeitos dos Verbos Activos; v. g. *I have loved*, *I had loved*.

O Verbo, *to be*, ſerve para formar os Verbos Paſſivos, ajuntandolhe os Participios do Preterito dos Verbos que ſe Neceſſitaõ àos Tempos dodito Verbo, *to be*, v. g. *I am loved*, eu ſou amado, ſeguindo da meſma Sorte pellos mais Tempos, e Modos.

E porque para aformaçaõ dos Tempos aſſima referidos ſaõ neceſſarios eſtes dois Verbos auxiliares por elles ſe da Principio as Conjugaçois, *to have*, ter, ou haver.

Modo

Modo Indicativo, Tempo prezente.

Sing.

I have,	eu tenho, ou hey.
Thou hast,	tu tens, ou has.
He hath, ou *has,*	elle tem ou ha.

Plural.

We have, &c, *ye,* ou *you have,* &c. *they have,* &c.

Preter Imperf.

Sing.

I had, eu tinha, ou havia.
Thou hadst, he had, &c.

Plural.

We had, &c. *ye,* ou *you had,* &c. *they had,* &c.

Preter Perf.

Sing.

I have had, eu tive, ou houve tido.
Thou hadst had, &c. *he have had,* &c.

Plural.

We have had, &c. *ye,* ou *you have had,* &c.
They have had, &c.

Preter Plusquam Perfeito.

Sing.

I had had, eu tinha, ou havia tido.
Thou hadst had, &c. *he had had,* &c.

Plural.

Plural.

We had had, &c. *ye* ou *you had had*, &c.
They had had, &c.

Futuro.

Sing.

I shall, ou *will have*, eu terey, ou haverey.
Thou shalt, ou *wilt have*, *he shall*, ou *will have*.

Plural.

We shall, ou *will have*, *ye*, ou *you shall*, ou *will have*, *they shall*, ou *will have*.

Imperativo.

Sing.

Have thou, tem, tu, ou há tu.
Let him have, tenha, ou haja elle.

Plural.

Let us have, *have ye*, ou *have you*, *let them have*.

Modo Potencial.

Sing.

I may ou *can have*, tenha ou haja, ou possa ter eu.

Thou mayst, ou *canst have*, ou *you may*, ou *can have*, *he may*, ou *can have*.

Plural.

We may, ou *can have*, *ye*, ou *you may*, ou *can have*, *they may*, ou *can have*.

Preter Imperf.

Sing.

I might have, teria, ou haveria ou poderia eu ter.

Thou

Sing.

Thou mighteſt have, ou *you might have*, *he might have.*

Plural.

We might have, *ye*, ou *you might have*, *they might have.*

Preter Perfect.

Sing.

I might have had, pude eu ter, ou haver, *thou mighteſt have had*, *he might have had.*

Plural.

We might have had, *ye*, ou *you might have had*, *they might have had.*

Preter Pluſquam.

Sing.

*I might have had * had*, pudera eu ter, ou haver, *thou mighteſt*, ou *you might have had * had*, *he might have had * had.*

Plural.

*We might have had * had*, *ye*, ou *you might have had * had*, *they might have had * had.*

Noteſe que neſte Tempo, e no Preterito imperfeitõ, do perfeito a ſima ſe podem fazer as meſmas formaçois com o ſignais, *could*, *would*, *ought*, *ſhould*; formandoos, como com o ſignal, *might*.

Noteſe, tambem que o * *had* que vai com eſtrela commummente ſe ſuprime, e não ſe expreſſa; diſtinguindoſe então o perfeito do pluſquam perfeito, pello ſentido da õraçao: e eſtas anotaçõis ſerviraõ para todas as conjugaçois, e formaçois dos mais Verbos.

Futuro.

Futuro.

Sing.

I may ou *can have hereafter*, poderey eu ter ou haver, *thou mayst*, ou *canst*, ou *you may*, ou *can have hereafter*, *he may*, ou *can have hereafter*.

Plural.

We may, ou *can have hereafter*, *ye*, ou *you may*, ou *can have hereafter*, *they may*, ou *can have hereafter*.

Modo Optativo.

Os Tempos deste modo se formaõ ajuntando ao Verbo hum dos Adverbos, ou signais de dezejo como, *please God*, *God grant*, *o' that*, &c. v. g. *ó that I may have*, oxala tenha, ou haja eu, *ó that thou mayst*, ou *you may have*, oxala tenhas ou hajas tu, *&c.* e a sim nos mais Tempos. Notando que os signais dos Tempos saõ só os que se mudâo, conservando sempre o Verbo da mesma sorte ; o que se observarã para todas as Conjugaçois.

Modo Conjunctivo.

Os Tempos deste modo se formaõ como os do Optativo, ajuntandolhe da mesma sorte ao Modo Potencial, huã das Conjucçois, *as*, *if*, *when*, *how*, *although*, v. g. *as I may have*, como eu tenho, ou hey ; seguindo da mesma Sorte nos mais Tempos ; e guardando, e observando o que se advertio no Potencial do * *had* com estrela.

Infinit.

Present.

To have, ter ou haver.

Preter Perf.

To have had, ter ou haver tido.

Gerundio.

Of having, de ter ou de haver, *in having*, *for having*.

Supino.

To have, para ter, ou haver.
To be had, para ser tido ou havido.

Participio prezent.

Having, tendo, ou havendo.

Particip. preter.

Had, tido, ou havido.

Participo futuro.

To be about to have, o que hade ter ou haver.

Do Verbo.

To be, ser, ou estar.

Indicat. prezent.

Sing.

I am, eu sou, ou estou, *thou art*, *he is*.

Plural.

We are, *ye* ou *you are*, *they are*.

Imperf.

Sing.

I was, eu era, ou estava, *thou wast*, ou *you was*, *he was*.

Plural.

We were, *ye* ou *you were*, *they were*.

Prf.

Perf.

Sing.

I have been, eu fuy ou estive.
Thou hast been, *he hath* ou *has been.*

Plural.

We have been, *ye* ou *you have been*, *they have been.*

Plusquamperfect.

Sing.

I had been, eu fora ou estivera, ou eu tinha sido, ou estado, *thou hadst been*, *he had been.*

Plural.

We had been, *ye* ou *you had been*, *they had been.*

Futuro.

Sing.

I shall ou *will be*, eu serey ou estarey, *thou shalt*, ou *wilt be*, ou *you shall be*, *he shall*, ou *will be.*

Plural.

We shall ou *will be*, *ye* ou *you shall*, ou *will be*, *they shall*, ou *will be.*

Modo Imperativo.

Sing.

Be thou, se tu, ou estã, *let him be.*

Plural.

Let us be, *be ye* ou *you*, *let them be.*

Modo Potencial.

Sing.

I may ou *can be*, seja, ou esteja eu ou possa ser ou estar eu, *thou mayst*, ou *canst be*, ou *you may*, ou *can be*, *he may* ou *can be.*

Plural.

We may ou *can be*, *ye* ou *you may*, ou *can be*, *they may*, ou *can be.*

Imperf.

Sing.

I might be, seria ou estaria ou poderia ser ou estar eu, *thou mighteſt be*, ou *you might be*, *he might be.*

Plural.

We might be, *ye* ou *you might be*, *they might be.*

Perfeit.

Sing.

I might have been, pude eu ser ou estar, *thou mighteſt have been*, ou *you might have been*, *he might have been.*

Plural.

We might have been, *ye* ou *you might have been*, *they might have been.*

Plusquamperf.

Sing.

I might have had been, pudera ser ou estar eu, *thou mighteſt have had been*, ou *you might have had been*, *he might have had been.*

Plural.

We might have had been, *ye* ou *you might have had been*, *they might have had been.*

Futuro.

Sing.

I may ou *can be hereafter*, poderey ser ou estar ou, ou serey eu ou estarey, *thou mayſt* ou *canſt be here-*

hereafter, ou *you may* ou *can be hereafter*, *he may* ou *can be hereafter*.

Plural.

We may ou *can be hereafter*, *ye* ou *you may* ou *can be hereafter*, *they may* ou *can be hereafter*.

Modo Optativo.

Este Modo se forma, como dissemos asima no Verbo, *have*, v. g. *God grant I might be*, oxala fora, ou estivera eu, e assim nos mais Tempos.

Modo Conjunctivo.

O mesmo se observa neste modo, com as conjuncçois apropriadas ã elle v. g. *as I may* ou *can be*, como eu sou ou estou, vejase o que se disse no Verbo, *have*, neste modo, e no Optativo.

Infinitivo.

To be, ser ou estar.

Preter.

To have been, ter sido, ou estado.

Gerund.

Of being, de ser ou estar, *in being*, *for being*.

Supin.

To be, para ser ou estar.
To be been, para ser sido, ou estado.

Particip. prezent.

Being, sendo, ou estando.

Particip. preter.

Been, sido, ou estado.

Particip. futuro.

To be about to be, ou *to be hereafter*, o que hade ser ou estar.

Dos Verbos Activos.

Os Verbos activos ou saõ regulares, ou irrigulares, os regulares saõ aquelles, cujos Participios do preterito, acabaõ *em*, *ed*, como *love*, *loved*, advertindo que alguãs vezes se suprime *o*, *e*, por Sincope, interpondoselhe hum apostrofe, que he hum accento entremeyo, como, *loved*, *lov'd*.

Na Lingua Ingleza os Verbos naõ tem mais que huã conjugaçaõ aqual he geral para todos os Verbos, asim regulares como irregulares, naõ havendo mais differença entre huns, e outros, que os regulares terminar seus Participios do preterito *em*, *ed*, como se fas mensaõ a sima, e os irregulares terminalos, com variedade de terminaçois, guardando em tudo o mais a mesma conjugaçaõ, e os mesmos signais nos mais Tempos, e Modos.

Da Formaçao dos Tempos, e Modos.

O Infinito se forma antepondolhe to, a qualquer Verbo, v. g. *to love*, *to kill*.

O Prezente formasse do Infinito, tirandolhe *o*, *to*, e ajuntandolhe a pessoa, v. g. *to love*, *I love*.

O Preterito Imperfeito se forma, ou valendosse do Participio do Preterito, e ajuntandolhe a pessoa, sem mudança de ditto Participio, ou por meyo do do signal, *did*, v. g. *I loved*, *thou loved*, &c. *I did love*, *thou didst love*, &c.

Advertindo que o signal, *do*, e signal *did*, o primeyro he prezente, e o segundo preterito imperfeito do Verbo, *do*, o qual significando fazer, quando se junta aos Verbos por signais, nada significa, nem

tem

tem outro e feito, mais que mostrar os Tempos em que esta o Verbo, a que sejunta; notando tambem, que quando a oraçaõ he interrogetiva, *o*, *do*, se antepoem ao Nominativo, v. g. *do you speak* French? porem sendo affirmativa se poem de pois do Nominativo, v. g. *he doth speak* French.

O Preterito Perfeito, a que chamaõ diffinido, historico, ou simples, se forma uzando da mesma Sorte do Participio do preterito, v. g. *I loved*, *thou loved*, &c.

O Preterito Perfeito composto se forma, juntando ao Verbo auxiliar, *to have*, o participio do Preterito do Verbo que se necessita uzar, v. g. *I have loved*, &c.

O Plusquam Perfeito se forma tambem por meyo do Preterito Imperfeito deditto Verbo, *to have*, juntandolhe da mesma Sorte o Participio do Preterito, v. g. *I had loved*, &c.

O Futuro se forma por meyo dos signais, *shall* ou *will*, v. g. *I shall* ou *will love*, &c.

O Imperativo forma suas segundas pessoas do singular, e do plurar, tomando o prezente do Indicativo, e pondolhe a pessoa depois, v. g. *love thou*, *love ye* ou *you*, e a primeyra pessoa do plurar e as terceiras de ambos Numeros, se formaõ por meyo do signal, *let*, v. g. *let him love*, *let us love*, *let them love*.

A formaçaõ dos Modos Optativo, e Conjunctivo, e de seus Tempos se conhecerá pella Conjugaçaõ ad extensum advertindo como asima se disse ja, que na conjugaçaõ de hum Verbo toda avariedade estã, quasi em os signais, que o Verbo sempre he o mesmo sem nelle haver outra mudança mais que ajuntarlhe na segunda pessoa do Indicativo hum *st*, e naterceira hum, *th*, o qual muytas vezes se rezolve em hum, *s*, v. g. *thou loveſt*, tu amas; *he loveth*, ou *loves*, elle ama.

Da Conjugaçaõ do Verbo activo.

O Verbo.

To love, amar.

Modo Indicativo.

Prezente.

Sing.

I love, ou *I do love*, eu amo *thou loveſt*, ou *doſt love*, ou, *you love*, *he loveth*, ou *loves*, ou *doth* ou *does love*, &c.

Plur.

We love ou *do love*, *ye* ou *you love*, ou *do love*, *they love*, ou *do love*.

Preter Imperf.

Sing.

I loved ou *did love*, eu amava, *thou lovedſt*, ou *didſt love*, ou *you loved*, *he loved* ou *did love*, &c.

Plur.

We love, ou *did love*, *ye* ou *you loved*, ou *did love*, *they loved* ou *did love*, &c.

Preter Perfeito.

Sing.

I have loved, eu amey ou tenho amado.
Thou haſt, ou *have loved*, *he has*, ou *hath loved*.

Plur.

We have loved, *ye*, ou *you have loved*, *they have loved*, &c.

Pluſ-

Plusquam Perfect.

Sing.

I had loved, eu tinha amado, ou eu amara
Thou hadst, ou *you had loved*, *he had loved*, &c.

Plur.

We had loved, *ye* ou *you had loved*, *they had loved*, &c.

Futur.

Sing.

I shall ou *will love*, eu amarey, *thou shalt* ou *wilt*, ou *you shall* ou *will love*, *they shall* ou *will love*, &c.

Plur.

We shall ou *will love*, *ye* ou *you shall*, ou *will love*, *they shall* ou *will love*, &c.

Imperativo.

Sing.

Love thou, ama tu.
Let him love.

Plur.

Let us love, *love ye*, *let them love*, &c.

Modo Potencial.

Prez.

Sing.

I may ou *can love*, ame ou possa eu amar.
Thou may'st, ou *canst*, ou *you may* ou *can love*, *he may* ou *can love.*

Plur.

Plur.

We may ou *can love, ye* ou *you may* ou *can love, they may* ou *can love.*

Preter Imperf.

Sing.

I might love, amaria, ou poderia eu amar: *thou mighteſt love,* ou *you might love, he might love.*

Plur.

We might love, ye ou *you might love, they might love.*

Preter Perf.

Sing.

I might have loved, pude eu amar: *thou mighteſt have loved,* ou *you might have loved: he might have loved,* &c.

Plur.

We might have loved: ye, ou *you might have loved: they might have loved.*

Pluſquam Perf.

Sing.

*I might have * had loved,* pudera eu ter ou haver amado: *thou mighteſt,* ou *you might have * had loved, he might have * had loved.*

Plur.

*We might have * had loved, ye,* ou *you might have * had loved, they might have * had loved.*

Noteſe que tirado fora o had com a e ſtrela, como Commum mente ſe Coſtuma, ainda que o perfeito

ſe

se e quivoque com o plusquam perfeito; pello sentido da sentença se farão distinctos.

Futuro.

I may ou *can have hereafter*, poderey eu amar, ou amarey eu: *thou may'st*, ou *canst*, ou *you may* ou *can love hereafter*, *he may*, ou *can love hereafter*.

We may ou *can love hereafter*, *ye* ou *you may* ou *can love hereafter*, *they may* ou *can love hereafter*.

Modo Optativo.

Os tempos deste Modo se formaõ a juntando lhe hum dos adverbios de dezejo, Como

O that I may love, Oxala ame eu.

O that I might love, Oxala amara eu ou amasse.

Modo Conjunctivo.

Os tempos deste Modo se formaõ Como os do Optativo, ajuntandolhe da mesma Sorte ao mo do potencial huá das Conjuncçõis, *as*, *if*, *when*, *how*, *although*, &c. a sim Como, *as I may love*, Como eu amo: *as I might love*, Como eu amara, seguindo da mesma Sorte nos mais tempos; guardando o que se advertio no verbo, *have*.

Infinitivo.

to love, amar.

Preterio Perf.

to have loved, ter amado.

Gerundio.

of loving, de amar.
in loving, em amar.
for loving, para amar.

Su-

Supino.

to loving, para amar.
to be loved, para ſer amado.

Partic. Prezente.

loving, amando, ou oque ama, e amava.

Partic. Preter:

loved, amado.

Partic. Futur.

to be about to love, oque hade amar.

Do Verbo Paſſivo.

O verbo paſſivo naõ he outra Couza mais, que o verbo auxiliar, *to be* com o participio do preterito dos verbos, que ſe neceſſitaõ uzar. ex.

Prezente.

I am loved, eu ſou amado.

Preterit Imperf.

I was loved, eu era amado.

Preter Perf.

I have been loved, eu fui amado.

Preter Pluſquam.

I had been loved, eu tinha ſido amado.

Futur.

I ſhall, ou *will be loved*, eu ſerey amado.

Im-

Imperat.

Be thou loved, se tu amado.
Let him be loved, seja elle amado.
Let us be loved, sejamos nos amados.
Be ye ou *you loved*, sede vôs amados.
Let them be loved, sejaõ elles amados.

E por esta Sorte se hiraõ formando as mais pessoas. Modos, e seus Tempos.

Dos Verbos Reciprocos.

Os Verbos reciprocos se formaõ pella particula, *self*, exponse a formaçaõ do Prezente do Indicativo, e por ella sera facil saberse dos mais Modos.

Prezente.

I love myself, eu meamo, *thou loveſt thyself*, &c. *He loveth*, ou *loves himself.*

Plural.

We love ourselves, *you* ou *ye love yourselves*, *they love themselves.*

Dos Verbos Irrigulares.

Em que consista a irrigularidade destes Verbos, e qual seja a Differença entre elles, e os regulares; se pode ver no Paragrafo segundo, no Titulo dos Verbos activos. E porque em tudo o mais se formaõ como os regulares, observando as formaçois destes, fica conhecida, e sabida ada quelles.

Mas porque a formaçaõ dos seus preteritos simples naõ he sempre a mesma; porque hums os formaõ valendose dos seus Participios do preterito, e outros naõ; se poem as listas seguintes de huns, e outros para menos confuzaõ dos que dezejarem saber esta Lingua.

Dos

Dos que nao se valem dos Participios do preterito.

to see, ver, *I saw*, eu vi, *I have seen*, eu tenho visto.

to take, tomar, *I took*, eu tomey, *I have taken*, eu tenho tomado.

to undertake, emprender, *I undertook*, eu emprendy, *I have undertaken*, eu tenho emprendido.

to give, dar, *I gave*, eu dey, *I have given*, eu tenho dado.

to write, escrever, *I wrote*, eu escrevi, *I have written*, eu tenho escrito.

to do, fazer, *I did*, eu fis, *I have done*, eu tenho feito.

to forgive, perdoar, *I forgave*, eu perdoey, *I have forgiven*, eu tenho perdoado.

to go, hir, *I went*, eu fui, *I am gone*, eu sou hido.

to forsake, abandonar, *I forsook*, eu abandoney, *I have forsaken*, eu tenho abandonado.

to come, vir, *I came*, *I am come.*

to break, quebrar, *I broke*, *I have broken.*

to become, vir aser, *I became*, *I have become.*

to rise, sevantarse, *I rose*, *I am risen.*

to grow, crescer, *I grew*, *I am grown.*

to know, saber, *I knew*, *I have known.*

to throw, tirar, *I threw*, *I have thrown.*

to fall, cahir, *I fell*, *I am fallen.*

to shew, mostrar, *I shew*, *I have shewn.*

to beat, bater, *I did beat*, *I have beaten.*

to eat, comer, *I did eat*, *I have eaten.*

to owe, dever, *I did owe*, *I have own.*

to draw, tirar, *I drew*, *I have drawn.*

to sow, cozer, *I did sow*, *I have sown.*

to abide, ficar, *I abode*, *I have abode.*

to bear, levar, *I bore*, *I have born.*

to bite, morder, *I bit*, *I have bitten.*

to blow, soprar, *I blew*, *I have blown.*
to bid, mandar, *I bad*, *I have bidden.*
to beget, gerar, *I begot*, *I have begotten.*
to chuse, escolher, *I chose*, *I have chosen.*
to chide, reprehender, *I chid*, *I have chidden.*
to cleave, fender, *I clove*, *cleft*, *I have cloven*, *cleft.*
to catch, apanhar, *I catcht*, *I have caught.*
to crow, cantar ogallo, *I crew*, *I have crown.*
to drive, guiar, *I drove*, *I have driven.*
to dare, ouzar, atreverse, *I durst*, *I have dared.*
to fly, fugir, *I fled*, *I have flown.*
to forget, esque serse, *I forgot*, *I have forgotten.*
to flee, voar, *I flew*, *I have flown.*
to get, gainhar, *I got*, *I have gotten*, ou *got.*
to gird, cingir, *I girded*, *I have girt.*
to hide, esconder, *I hid*, *I have hidden.*
to hold, ter, *I held*, *I have hold*, ou *held.*
to lie, jazer, *I lay*, *I have lain.*
to lean, pouzar, *I did lean*, *I have leaned.*
to run, correr, *I ran*, *I have run.*
to ride, cavalgar, montar a cavalo, *I rod*, *rode*, *I have ridden*, ou *rid*
to read, Ler, *I read*, *I have read.*
to stink, feder, *I stank*, ou *stunk.*
to spread, espalhar, *I spread*, *I have spread.*
to strike, ferir, *I struck*, *I have struck*, ou *strucken.*
to spell, soletrear, *I spelt*, *I have spelled.*
to swear, jurar, *I swore*, *I have sworn.*
to smite, dar, *I smote*, *I have smitten.*
to shoe, ferrar, *I shod*, *I have shodden.*
to shed, derramar, *I shed*, *I have shedden.*
to shake, vibrar, brandir, mexer, *I shook*, *I have shaken.*
to spit, cuspir, *I spat*, *I have spitten.*
to steal, furtar, *I stole*, *I have stolen.*
to swim, nadar, *I swam*, *I have swam.*
to shine, resplandecer, *I shone*, *I have shone*, ou *shined.*

to

to ſlay, matar, *I ſlew*, *I have ſlain.*
to ſeeth, cozer, *I ſod*, *I have ſodden.*
to ſplit, raxar, *I ſplitted*, *I have ſplit* ou *ſplitten.*
to ſtick, pegar, *I ſtuck*, *I have ſtuck*, ou *ſtucken.*
to ſtrip, deſpir, *I ſtript*, *I have ſtript*, ou *ſtrippen.*
to ſtrive, contender, *I ſtrove*, *I have ſtriven.*
to tear, deſpedaçar, *I tore*, *I have torne.*
to thrive, medrar, *I throve*, *I have thriven.*
to tread, pizar, *I have trodden.*
to be willing, querer, *I was willing*, *I have been willing.*
to wring, torcer, *I wrung*, *I have wrung.*
to wear, trazer, *I wore*, *I have worn.*
to work, trabalhar, *I workt*, *I have workt.*
to weave, tecer, *I wove*, *I have woven.*
to will, querer, *I would*, *I have willed.*
to awake, deſpertar, *I awake*, *I have awoke*, *awaked.*
to cut, cortar, *I did cut*, *I have cut.*

Dos que ſe ſerven do Participio preterito.

to aſk, preguntar, *I askt*, *I have askt.*
to buy, comprar, *I bought*, *I have bought.*
to begin, começar, *I begun*, *I have begun.*
to bring, trazer, *I brought*, *I have brought.*
to bleed, ſangrar, *I bled*, *I have bled.*
to breed, gerar, *I bred*, *I have bred.*
to bend, dobrar, *I bent*, *I have bent.*
to beſeech, ſuplicar, *I beſought*, *I have beſought.*
to bind, encadernar, *I bound*, *I have bound.*
to bereave, privar, deſpojar, *I bereaved*, ou *bereft*, *I have bereft*, ou *bereaved.*
to burn, queimar, *I burnt*, *I have burnt.*
to creep, engatinhar, ou andar de raſto, *I crept*, *I have crept.*
to curſe, amaldiçoar, *I curſt*, *I have curſt.*
to crack, eſtallar, *I crackt*, *I have crackt.*
to drink, beber, *I drank*, *I have drank.*

to deal, tratar, *I dealt*, *I have dealt.*
to dwell, morar, *I dwelt*, *I have dwelt.*
to dip, molhar, *I dipt*, *I have dipt.*
to feed, pastar, *I fed*, *I have fed.*
to fling, tirar, com funda, *I flung*, *I have flung.*
to fetch, hir buscar, *I fetcht*, *I have fetcht.*
to feel, apalpar, *I felt*, *I have felt.*
to fight, pelejar, *I fought*, *I have fought.*
to find, achar, *I found*, *I have found.*
to fix, fixar, *I fixt*, *I have fixt.*
to geld, castrar, *I gelt*, *I have gelt.*
to hang, pendurar, *I hung*, *I have hung.*
to help, ajudar, *I helpt*, *I have helpt.*
to hit, dar golpes, *I hit*, *I have hit.*
to keep, guardar, *I kept*, *I have kept.*
to kiss, beijar, *I kist*, *I have kist.*
to leave, deichar, *I left*, *I have left.*
to laugh, rir, *I laught*, *I have laught.*
to let, deichar, *I let* ou *did let*, *I have let.*
to lose, perder, *I lost*, *I have lost.*
to learn, aprender, *I learnt*, *I have learnt.*
to lead, guiar, *I led*, *I have led.*
to make, fazer, *I made*, *I have made.*
to meet, encontrar, *I met*, *I have met.*
to mix, misturar, *I mixt*, *I have mixt.*
to put, por, *I put*, ou *did put*, *I have put.*
to pitch, brear, pegar, untar, com pez, *I pitcht*, *I have pitcht.*
to quake, tremer, *I quaked*, *I have quaked.*
to ring, soar, *I rung*, *I have rung.*
to rend, despedaçar, *I rent*, *I have rent.*
to sell, vender, *I sold*, *I have sold.*
to sleep, dormir, *I slept*, *I have slept.*
to sing, cantar, *I sung*, *I have sung.*
to send, enviar, *I sent*, *I have sent.*
to stand upright, estar direito, *I stood upright*, *I have stood upright.*
to snatch, arrebatar, *I snatcht*, *I have snatcht.*

to smell, cheirar, *I smelt*, *I have smelt.*
to shoot, tirar, *I shot*, *I have shot.*
to spend, dispender, *I spent*, *I have spent.*
to spring, brotar, *I sprung*, *I have sprung.*
to stand, estar, *I stood*, *I have stood.*
to sting, picar, *I stung*, *I have stung.*
to string, encordoar, *I strung*, *I have strung.*
to spill, derramar, *I spilt*, *I have spilt.*
to sweat, suar, *I sweat*, *I have sweat.*
to seek, buscar, *I sought*, *I have sought.*
to set, asentar, *I sat*, *I have sat.*
to slide, escorregar, *I slid*, *I have slid.*
to spin, fiar, *I spun*, *I have spun.*
to say, dizer, *I said*, *I have said.*
to speed, expedir, *I sped*, *I have sped.*
to sweep, varrer, *I swept*, *I have swept.*
to stride, abrir aspernas, *I stride*, *I have stride.*
to slip, resvalar, *I slept*, *I have slept.*
to sink, fundirse, *I sunk*, *I have sunk.*
to think, imaginar, *I thought*, *I have thought.*
to understand, entender, *I understood*, *I have understood.*
to tell, dizer, *I told*, *I have told.*
to teach, ensinar, *I taught*, *I have taught.*
to weep, chorar, *I wept*, *I have wept.*
to whip, açoitar, *I whipt*, *I have whipt.*
to win, gainhar, *I won*, *I have won.*
to behold, reparar, olhar com atençaõ, *I beheld*, *I have beheld.*
to shut, fechar, *I shut*, *I have shut.*
to sling, tirar com funda, *I slung*, *I have slung.*

Tambem o Preterito, e o Participio do Preterito de alguns Verbos irrigulares, se podem formar, con facilidade observando as regras seguintes.

Os Verbos terminados *em*, *eed*, tem os seus preteritos e Participios *em*, *ed*, Ex.
to bleed, sangrar, *I bled*, *I have bled.*

to

to breed, gerar, *I bred*, *I have bred.*
to feed, pastar, ou apascentar, *I fed*, *I have fed.*
to speed, accelerar, *I sped*, *I have sped.*

Os Verbos, que terminaõ *em*, *eep*, fazem *em*, *ept*, Ex.

to keep, guardar, *I kept*, *I have kept.*
to creep, engatinhar, *I crept*, *I have crept.*
to weep, chorar, *I wept*, *I have wept.*
to sleep, dormir, *I slept*, *I have slept.*
to sweep, varrer, *I swept*, *I have swept.*

Os que terminaõ *em*, *end*, os fazem *em*, *ent*, Ex.

to bend, dobrar, *I bent*, *I have bent.*
to lend, emprestar, *I lent*, *I have lent.*
to send, enviar, *I sent*, *I have sent.*
to spend, dispender, *I spent*, *I have spent.*

Os que terminaõ, *em*, *ind*, os fazem *em*, *ound*, Ex.

to bind, liar, encadernar, *I bound*, *I have bound.*
to find, achar, *I found*, *I have found.*
to grind, moer, *I ground*, *I have ground.*
te wind, dobar, *I wound*, *I have wound.*

Os que terminaõ em, *ing*, fazem em, *ung*, Ex.

to sting, picar, *stung*, *have stung.*
to string, encordoar, *strung*, *have strung.*
to wring, torcer, *wrung*, *have wrung.*
to ring, soar, *rung*, *have rung.*
to sing, cantar, *sung*, *have sung.*
to sling, tirar ã funda, *slung*, *have slung.*
to fling, tirar, *flung*, *have flung.*
to spring, brotar; *sprung*, *have sprung.*

Os que terminaõ em, *ear*, fazem o preterito em, *are*, ou em, *ore*, e o participio em, *orn*, Ex.

to wear, trazer, *wore*, *have worn.*
to swear, jurar, *swore*, *have sworn.*
to bear, levar, *bare*, *bore*, *have born.*
to tear, despedaçar, *tare*, *tore*, *have torn.*

Os que terminaõ em *ow*, ou *aw*, fazem o preterito em, *ew*, e o participio em, *awn*, ou *own*, Ex.

to draw, tirar, *drew*, *have drawn.*
to blow, soprar, *blew*, *have blown.*
to grow, crecer, *grew*, *have grown.*
to know, saber, *knew*, *have known.*
to throw, tirar, *threw*, *have thrown.*

Dos Adverbos.

O Adverbo he huá Parte da Oraçaõ, que junta as mais Partes a caba dedeclarar o seu significado.

Ha Adverbos de Tempo, v. g.

to day, hoje.
now, agora.
presently, ja, logo.
immediately, immediatamente.
already, ja.
betimes, sedo.
early, demadrugada.
lately, ultimamente.
yesterday, hontem.
formerly, antigamente.
before, antes.
after, despois.
hereafter, da qui adiante.
shortly, em breve.
to-morrow, amenhaa.
every day, cada dia.
continually, continuamente.
eternally, eternamente.
never, ja mais, nunca.
Day and Night, de Dia o de Noyte.
by Day, de Dia.
by Night, de Noyte.
then, emtaõ.
whilst, enrre tanto.
late, tarde.

Há

Há Adverbos de lugar, v. g.

here, aqui.
there, lá.
this way, por aqui.
hitherto, athequi.
thitherto, athelá.
below, abaixo.
above, asima.
high, alto.
low, baixo.
near, junto.
far, longe.
aside, de lado.
before, diante.
behind, atrâs.
within, dentro.
in, dentro.
out, fora.
without, de fora.
upon, sobre.
under, de baixo.
about, aorredor.
amongst, entre.
between, entre.
beyond, alem.
somewhere, em alguá parte
no where, em nenhuã patre
every where, em toda parte

Há Adverbos de Interrogaçaõ.

where, onde?
from whence, dedonde?
which, por onde?
how far, que longe?
how much, quanto?
how many, quantos?
how long, deque longura?
when, quando?
why, porque?
what, que?
how, como.

Há de quantidade.

as much, tanto.
but little, pouco.
few, pouco.
almost, quasi.
little, pouco.
much, muyto.
enough, bastante.
abundantly, abundantemente.
more, mais.
wholly, inteiramente.
infinitely, infinitamente.
superfluously, superfluamente.
all, todo.
nothing, nada.
at most, ao mais.
at least, ao menos.
intirely, inteyramente.
sufficiently, sufficientemente.
none, nada.
too much, muyto.

Há de Numero.

once, huã vêz.
thrice, tres vezes.

often, frequentemente.
twice, duas vezes.
sometimes, alguãs vezes.

Há de Qualidade.

wisely, sabiamente.
virtuously, virtuozamente
prudently, prudentemente.
haply, felismente.
boldly, atrevidamente.
wickedly, malvadamente.
passionately, apayxoadamente.
hotly, quentemente.
rudely, rudamente.
neatly, pura, propria, limpa mente.
insolently, insolentemente
readily, promptamente.
in fashion, á moda.
openly, abertamente.
standing, de pê.
backwards, para trâz.
heartily, deloraçaõ.
in earnest, seriamente.
rashly, iradamente.
at random, inconsideramente.
carelesly, descuydadamente
pleasantly, agradavelmente.
reasonably, razoadamente, erazoavelmente.
coldy, friamente.
softly, suave, brandamente.
handsomely, fermozamente.
imprudently, imprudentemente.
quickly, a pressadamente.
at ease, facilmente.
kneeling, dejuelhos.
fasting, em jejum.
barefcot, apédescalço.
secretly, em segredo.
on purpose, de proposito.
heedlessly, negligentemente.
by oversight, por negligencia.
on a sudden, repentinamente
desperately, dezesperadamente.
in jest, dezombaria.
in pudding-time, oportunamente.
on horseback, acavalo.
in a boat, em barco.
by sea, por mar.
confusedly, consuzamente.
asunder, separadamente.
by stealth, afurtadelas.
in haste, apressadamente.
securely, seguramente.
conveniently, conveniente-mente.
a-foot, a pê.
in a Coach, em Coche.
by Water, por Agua.

by

by Land, por Terra.
jointly, juntamente.
by turns, por tornos.

Há de Afirmaçaõ.

yes, sim.
it is true, heverdade.
infallibly, infalivelmente.
truly, verdadeyramente.
assuredly, seguramente.
undoubtedly, induvitavelmente ou sem duvida.
in truth, em verdade.

Há de Contradiçaõ.

no, naõ.
not at all, totalmente nada.
nor, nem.
none, nada.
by no means, de nenhuã maneyra.
neither, nem.

Há de Ordem.

first, primeyramente.
thirdly, terceyramente.
at first, primeiramente.
after, despois.
in a Croud, em Caterva.
secondly, segundariamente.
next, despois.
afore, antecedentemente.
together, juntamente.

Há de Concluzaõ.

in fine, finalmente.
so that, com tanto que.
at last, ultimamente.

Das Conjunçois.

A conjunçaõ he huã Parte da oraçaõ, que serve para ajuntar as mais Partes.

Há Adversativas.

but, mas.
though, aindaque.
notwithstanding, naõ obstante.
nevertheless, naõ obstante.
however, naõ obstante.
yet, com tudo, ainda.

Há concludentes.

in fine, em fim.
so that, de sorte, se bem que.
to make an end, por acabar.

Há Copulativas.

and, e.
both, assim.
also, tambem.
both good, and bad, assim bom, como maõ.

Outras Disjuntivas.

or, ou.
or else, aliâs.
neither, nem.
either, ou.
nor, nem.

Outras Condicionais.

if, se.
if peradventure, se por acazo.
on condicion that, com condiçaõ que.
so that, se com tudo.
if so be that, se for assim.
unless that, menos que.

Outras Cauzais.

for, por.
since that, depoisque.
for as much as, por tanto quanto.
to the end that, a fim que.
least that, paraquenaõ.
whereas, como querque.
therefore, por tanto.
then, em taõ.
seeing that, á vista.
because, por cauza.

Das Propoziçois.

A Propoziçaõ he huã Parte da Oraçaõ, que se poem antes das outras Partes.

near, junto.
against, contra, de fronte.
before, diante.
about, aorredor.
throūgh, por.
behind, atrâz.
without, sem.
under, debaixo.
out, fora.
instead, em lugar.
at the side, ao Lado.
with, com.
in, em, dentro.
into, dentro.
from, de.
towards, para tal parte
beyond, a lem.
above, sobre, asima.
far, longe.
after, despois.
till, atheque.
until, atheque.
at, ã.
since, despois.
between, entré.
for, para.

Das Interjecçois.

A Interjecçaõ he huã Parte da Oraçaõ, que mostra os varios afectos do animo.

Há de Alegria.

ah, *ah*, *ah*, ha, ha, ha.
come, *come*, vamos, vamos.

let

let us be merry, alegremonos.
hang Sorrow, enforca a Penna, a Tristeza.

De Socorro.

help, help, ajuda, ajuda.
fire, fire, fogo, fogo.
murder, murder, matador, matador, a qui de l'Rey.

De Aversaõ.

fie, fie, fy, fo, fo.

De Animar.

well, well, bem, bem.
só, só, asim, asim.
that is well, vay bem.
well done, bem feito.
have a good Heart, Corrage, tem Animo, Valor.

De Admiraçao.

hó, hó, hó, hó.
o strange, o' milagro.
o wonderful, o' maravilha.
ô fine that is, que bello que está.

De Chamar.

Ho there, hó there, ho lá, ho lá.
Ho heark, you, you, escuta.

De Impedir.

Not a Word, nem huã Palavra.
Hold your Tongue, callate.

Da Sintaxe.

Esta palavra (Sintaxe) dirivada do Grego, he huã ordenada disposiçaõ das oito Partes da Oraçaõ entre si, e por esta razaõ todas as instrucçois, ou regras, que conduzem para esta ajustada Ordem, estaõ de baixõ deste titullo.

A Sintaxe se divide em Analogia, ou perfeyta, e he commua, e regular; e em Anomola, ou figurada, e he irregular; e se a Parta das Regras.

Por duas vias se dis a Sintaxe Analogia, ou perfeyta: huá pella Conveniencia, e Concordancia das palavras

lavras entre Sy, e outra pello Regimem, ou de pendencia que huã dicçaõ tem da outra.

Pello que respeita a Concordancia das palavras entre sy; tres saõ as Concordancias: a primeyra entre o Nominativo, e o Verbo.

A 2a entre o Adjectivo, e o Substantivo.

A 3a entre o antecedente e o Relativo.

Em quanto á primeyra, entra o Nominativo e o Verbo: quando encontrares algum Verbo em huã sentença, deves preguntar; quem exercita a significaçaõ deste Verbo? e apalavra, ou Nome, que te responde aesta pregunta, essa terâs por Nominativo do Verbo, e os concordaras em Numero, e pessoa, v. g.

I am your Servant, eu sou vosso servidor.
he is very diligent, elle he muyto diligente.
we are all Friends, nõs somos todos Amigos.
you are very civil, vôs sois muy civil.
they are very bold, elles saõ muy atrevidos.

Nos Exemplos referidos acharâs, fazendo a pregunta de quem he o servidor, o de ligente, os amigos, o civil, e os atrevidos; que eu, elle, nos, vos, e elles, saõ os que respondem á ditta pregunta, e que por Consequencia saõ os Nominativos do Verbo de cada huã das Sentenças; o que estaõ concordando em Numero, e pessoa, conforme a sua regra: por que overbo am, está comcordado com o Pronome *I*, em Numero, e pessoa no singular, e na primeyra pessoa; e a sua terceira pessoa, *is*, está concordando com o Pronome, *he*, terceyra pessoa e do Numero singular, e we primeira pessoa de plurar, e *you* segunda, e *they* terceira do mesmo Numero saõ os Nominativo, de, *are* do Verbo, am que sem mudança determinaçaõ serve para todas dittas pessoas; e com ellas está concordando em numero, e pessoa.

Nota

Notese que muytos Nominativos juntos Levaõ o Verbo ao plurar, e que este Concorda com apessoa mais nobre.

I and thou are in Safe-Guard.	Eu e tu estamos em Seguro.
Thou and thy Father are in Jeopardy.	Tu e teu pay estais em grande perigo.
Thy Father and thy Master send for you.	Teu Pay e teu Mestre mandaõ porti.

O exemplo está em, *I and thou*, em *thou and thy Father* : E em *thy Father and thy Master* : Os quais Nominativos juntos levaõ o Verbo, *are*, e o, Verbo, *send*, ao Plurar.

Notese que alguãs Vezes o Infinitivo, ou aparte enteyra de huã sentença serve de Nominrtivo ao Verbo, Ex.

To rise betimes is a very wholsome Thing.	Levantar sedo he mais salutifera Couza.
To know much is a most pleasant Life.	Saber muyto he amais agradavel Vida.

O exemplo está em, *to rise*, e em, *to know*, Infinitivos, os quais estaó Servindo de Nominativo ao Verbo, *is*.

Notese Que alguás Vezes se uza do prezente, em lugar do preterito, Ex.

They go a hunting.	Elles foraõ á caça.
They take a Stag.	Elles tomaraó hum Corço.
They divide it.	Elles o dividiraõ.

O exemplo está em, *they go*, *they take*, *and they divide*, prezentes do Indicativo, em lugar de *went*, *took*, e *divided* preteritos perfeytos.

Notese que tambem alguãs Vezes se uza do prezente em lugar do Futuro, Ex.

What Day is to-morrow?	Que Dia he Manhaã?
To-morrow is Sunday.	A manhaã he *Domingo.*
When do you go?	Quando vas tu?
I go next Week.	Eu vou a Semana que Vem.
Next Monday *is a Holy-day.*	A *Semana* que vem he dia Santo.

O exemplo está nasterceyras pessoas, *is*, do Verbo, *am*, e em, *I go*, prezentes do Indicativo, que estaó em lugar de *shall be*, e *shall go*, futuros.

Tambem se uza do tempo prezente do Verbo, *I am*, com o Participio do prezente do Verbo que se necessita para expressar o prezente do ditto Verbo, Ex.

I am going to Church.	Eu vou a' Igreja.
He is going for France.	Elle vay para *Franca.*
What is he doing?	Que fas elle?
He is writing.	Elle escreve.
He is reading.	Elle le.
What is she doing?	Que fas ella?
She is dressing her Head.	Ella compoem sua Cabeça.

O Exemplo está em, *am*, e, *is*, com os Participios do prezente, *going*, *doing*, *writing*, *reading*, e *dressing*, dos Verbos necessarios, em lugar dos prezentes, *goeth* ou *goes*, *doeth* ou *does*, &c.

Mas advirtasse, que he necessario, que o Verbo seja de movimento, eque acçaõ tenha duração; por que naõ sera bem ditto, *he is seeing*, elle ve.

Tambem se uza do prezente com o Signal, *did*, ou do preterito perfeyto, para exprimir o preterito imperfeyto, Ex.

Alex-

Alexander *did take*, ou *took great Pleasure in drinking.*	*Alexandre* tomava grande agrado na bebida.
He did take, ou *took such Pleasure in drinking, that Drunkenness was reckoned amongst his Crimes.*	Elle tomava tal prazer em abebida, que a embriagues foy contada entre seus Crimes.
The Pagans *did worship*, ou *worshipped the false Gods.*	Os *Paganos* adoravaõ os falsos Deuzes.

O exemplo está em, *did take*, ou *took*, e em *did worship* ou *worshipped*, uzados em lugar do imperfeyto.

O Preterito imperfeyto nos Verbos de Movimento, se expressaõ pello imperfeyto do Verbo, *am*, com o participio do prezente do ditto Verbo de Movimento, Ex.

Whither were you going Yesterday when I met you?	Aonde hias tu hontem quando eu te encontrey?
I was going to the Exchange.	Eu hia á bolça.
What was he doing?	Que fazia elle?
He was writing.	Elle escrevia.

O exemplo está em, *were*, com o participio *going*, e em, *was going*, *was doing*, *was writing*; expressando com elles o preterito imperfeyto dos Verbos de movimento, *go*, *do*, e *write*.

Algũas Vezes o preterito imperfeyto toma este signal, *would*, Ex.

He would take all the Men that came into the Wood.	Elle tomava todos os Homens que Vieraõ ao bosque.

He

He would lay an Ambush to slay them.	Elle fazia huã emboscada para matalos.
As soon as they had done they would run away.	Tanto que elles tinhaõ feyto fugiaõ.
He would throw Money into the Streets!	Elle lancava dinheyro pellas ruas!

O exemplo está em *take*, *lay*, *run*, e *throw*, todos expressando o preterito imperfeyto com osignal, *would*.

O Preterito perfeyto simples se exprime pello participio do preterito ajuntandolhe as pessoas, Ex.

I loved, eu amey; *I killed*, eu matey, o Exemplo está em, *loved*, e *killed*. Que com o Pronome, *I*, se exprime a primeyra pessoa do preterito dos Verbos *love*, e *kill*.

O Preterito perfeyto Composto se exprime com o prezente do Verbo *have*, e o participio do preterito do Verbo, que sequer uzar, Ex.

I have been there several Times.	Eu estive lá diversas Vezes.
He hath carried your Letter to the Post-House.	Elle levou a Vossa ou tua Carta ao Correyo.
We have drank together a great many Times.	Nôs temos bebido juntos muytas Vezes.

O Exemplo está em, *have been*, *hath carried*, *have drank*, que com seus pronomes, *I*, *he*, *we*, estaó, Expressando o preterito perfeyto composto.

Notese que quando sefas Menssaõ de hum certo tempo he melhor servirse do preterito imperfeyto, que do perfeyto, Ex.

I was there the last Week.	Eu estive la a somana passada.

He

He carried your Letter to the Post-House the last Night.	Elle levou atua, ou Vossa Carta aoCorreyo anoite passada.

O exemplo está em *was*, e *carried*, preteritos imperfeytos, expressando por elles o preterito perfeyto, pella certeza do tempo da *somana*, e noite passada.

O Preterito plusquam perfeyto se exprime com o preterito imperfeyto do Verbo, *have*, e o participio do preterito do Verbo, que se quer uzar; como sedisse na formaçaõ dos tempos, Ex.

As they had agreed.	Como elles tinhaõ acordado.
I brought home all the Money that I had owing.	Eu trouxe acaza todo odinheyro, que eu tinha Gainhado.
I gave to him a Shilling that I had found.	Eu lhedey hum Shillim, que eu tinha achado.

O exemplo está em, *had agreed*, *had owing*, *had found*, explicando o plusquam perfeyto dos Verbos de cada sentença, com os seus participios, e o imperfeyto, *had*, do Verbo, *have*.

O uzo do futuro com o Signais *shall* ou *will*, o do Imperativo com o signal, *let*, e o do optativo, e Conjunctivo com os seus Signais, a qualquer Capacidade fica facil observando as Conjugaçois.

Do uzo do Infinito.

Servesse do infinito depois de outro Verbo, quando os dois Verbos pertencem amesma pessoa, Ex.

I desire to learn Mathematicks.	Eu dezejo aprendar Mathematica.

Will

Will you learn to write?	Queres aprender a escrever ?

O exemplo está em, *to learn*, e *to write*, que estaó no infinito por Cauza dos Verbos *desire*, *&c.*

Do uzo do Supino.

Servesse tambem depois de outro Verbo, Ex.

I have something to do.	Eu tenho alguá Couza para fazer.
He hath Letters to write.	Elle tem Cartas para escrever.
I have a great mind to go to Paris.	Eu tenho grande Vontade de hir à Parîs.

O exemplo está em, *to do*, *to write*, postos no Supino depois do Verbo, *have*.

O Gerundio em, *di*, pende de Substantivos, e de Adjectivos, Ex.

Time of learning.	Tempo de aprender.
Arts of learning.	Arte de aprender.
Desirous of having.	De zejozo de ter.

O Gerundio em, do, *depende de propoziçaõ*, *Ex.*

He spendeth his Time in gaming and drinking.	Elle gasta seu Tempo em jugar e beber.
He taketh great Delight in fishing.	Elle tem grande de leiaçaõ em pescar.
He spends whole Days in reading.	Elle gasta dias emteyros em ler.

O Exemplo está em, *gaming*, *fishing*, *reading*, Gerundios com adependencia da prepoziçao, *in*.

Notese que o fazer mençaõ de gerundio em, *di*, e em *do*, he respeitando a terminaçaõ Latina ; porque

que no *Ingles* tem estes Gerundios aterminaçaõ em, *ing*, como se vê nos Exemplos.

Tambem serve para Dativo, com os Adjectivos, que Significaõ aptidaõ, e utilidade, Ex.

Paper useful for writing.	Papel util para escrever.
Captain idoneous for war.	Capitaõ Capâs para guerra.

O exemplo está em, *for writing*, e *for war*, postos em Dativo aos Adjectivos, *useful*, e *idoneous*.

Da segunda Concordancia.

Os Adjectivos ou sejaõ Nomes, ou pronomes, ou Participios Concordaõ com seus Substantivos, em Genero Numero, e Cazo, antecedendo adittos Substantivos; advertindo que no *Ingles* naõ tem adificuldade, e trabalho como no Latim, para aconcordancia nestes accidentes, por Servir o Adjectivo (na Lingua *Ingleza*) sem mudança determinacois para todo o Numero, e Genero.

E para saberse com clareza qual he o Substantivo; quando na o raçaõ se encontra hum Adjectivo; se fará a pregunta, *who*, quem, ou *what*, que couza, he aquillo que o Adjectivo significa; v. g. branco, negro, ou outra qualquer qualidade, ou accidente; e a palavra, que responder á esta pregunta, essa he o Substantivo, com quem hade Concordar o Adjectivo, Ex.

A beautiful Woman pleases.	A Mulher fermoza agrada.
The weary Traveller sits still.	O Caminhante canssando se a senta quieto.
The filthy Swine are always grunting.	Os porcos Sujos sempre estaõ grunhindo.
My pale Cheeks suddenly grew red.	Minha Face amarela de repente se fes vermelha.
Unjust Gains are esteemed.	Lucros injustos saõ estimados.

O Exemplo está em, *Woman*, *Traveller*, *Swine*, *Cheeks*, *Gains*, que saõ os Substantivos com quem concordaõ os Adjectivos, *beautiful*, *weary*, *filthy*, *my*, *injust*.

Da terceyra Concordancia do Relativo com o antecedente.

Quando se acha hum relativo, se deve tambem fazer a pregunta, *who*, quem? ou *what?* que Couza? he aquillo, que o Verbo, ou Adjectivo que está despois do relativo, significa? e apalavra, que responde a esta pregunta, essa he o antecedente, com quem hade concordar o relativo, em Genero, Numero, e pessoa, *Ex.*

The Man who is wise.	O Homen, que he sabio.
The Woman who speaketh few Words.	O Mulher, qua falla poucas Palavras.

Naõ concorda em Cazo; porque deve estar no Cazo, que o Verbo, ou Adjectivo, seguinte reger, ou outra qualquer dicçaõ, Ex.

The Letters, which you sent, pleased.	As Cartas, que tu mandaste agradaraõ.
He came in that Place in which.	Elle veyo a quelle lugar em o qual.

O Exemplo está em os dois relativos, *which*, estando hum em Acuzativo do Verbo, *sent*; e o outro em Ablativo da Prepoziçaõ, *in*.

Da quarta Concordancia da pregunta com a reposta.

A pregunta concorda com a reposta; isto he que pello mesmo cazo que se fas a pregunta; pello mesmo cazo se da a reposta, *Ex.*

Who bought this? I.	Quem comprou isto? eu.
Of whom is this, of John ou John's?	De quem he isto? de Joaõ?

What

What did you buy? that	Que compraste isso ou aquillo?
To whom did you give? to him.	A quem o deste? ã elle.
By whom was it bought? by him.	Por quem foy comprado? por elle.

O Exemplo esta na pregunta, *who*, que estando em Nominativo, com ella concorda a reposta, *I*; e o mesmo nas mais, *of whom*, *to whom*, *what*, *by whom*, em os quais fazendose a pregunta pellos, Genito, Accusativo, Dativo, e Ablativo; concordaõ com elles nos mesmos Cazos as repostas.

Do Regimen, Governo, e Dependencia, que huã dicçaõ, ou palavra tem da outra.

Em toda Oraçaõ, ou Sentença deve de haver Nominativo, e Verbo, e todo o Verbo pessoal do Modo finito Pede antes de si Nominativo, claro, ou escondido: vejasse o que se disse atrâs na primeyra Concordancia do Verbo com o Nominativo.

Os Verbos, que significaõ o estado, condiçaõ habito, gestos, costume, ou constituiçaõ de alguá pessoa, ou coza regem antes e depois de si Nominativo, Ex.

He stands streight.	Elle está direito.
He is gone to Bed supperless.	Elle foy para acama sem cea.

O Exemplo está em, *streight*, e *gone*, Nominativos depois dos Verbos, *stands*, e *is*, concordando com os Nominativos antedentes, *he*, *he*.

Os Verbos passivos; de estimar, conhecer, nomear, chamar regem antes, e despois de si Nominativo, Ez.

Thy Brother is accounted a learned Man.	Teu Irmaõ he estimado, por hum Homen sabio.

Thou hast been found often false.	Tu tens sido achado muytas vezes falso.
The King is called Father of the Country.	O Rey he chamado Pay da Patria.
My Brother is named John.	Meu Irmaõ se chama Joaõ.

O Exemplo está em *thy Brother*, *thou*, *the King*, *my Brother*, Nominativos antecedentes aos Verbos, *to account*, *to find*, *to call*, *to name*, postos na passiva tendo depois de si os Nominativos, *learned Man*, *false*, *Father*, *John*.

Do Regimen do Genitivo.

Dois Substantivos juntos pertencentes a Couzas diversas, o segundo vay a Genitivo com o signal, *of*, que correspoude ã, dos, das, da, de, da Lingua Portugueza, Ex.

The Sight of a fair Picture delights the Eyes.	A Vista de huã boa Pintura de Leyta ã Vista.
The Beauty of a handsome Woman is pleasant.	A Belleza da Mulher fermoza he agradavel.

O Signal, *of*, que significa, do, da, de, dos, das, em Portugues; posto depois dos Adjectivos, que significaõ dezejo, sabedoria, lembrança, Ignorancia, esquecimento, cuydado, modo, culpa, ou outra qualquer paixaõ do Animo, he signal do Genitivo, que regem dittos Adjectivos, *Ex.*

Those Men that are desirous of Honour, ought to be studious of Learning and good Manners.	Aquelles Homens, que saõ dezejozos de Honra, devem ser dezejozos de aprender, e de bons Costumes.

He,

He, who is always mindful of the Master's Commands, is not fearful of Punishment.	Aquelle que está cuydadozo das ordens do mestre, naõ está medrozo do Castigo.
Thou art ignorant of natural Things, rude of Letters, and uncertain of the Path of Virtue.	Tu estâs ignorante das Couzas naturais, rudo de Letras, e incerto do Atalho da Virtude.
Thou and I are both accused of the same Crime.	Tu e eu somos ambos accuzados do mesmo Crime.
The richest Man, careless of his Affairs, is reduced to Poverty; but a poor Man, careful of his, obtaineth Riches.	O mais rico Homen, descuydado de seus Negocios, he reduzido á Pobreza; porem o pobre cuydadozo dos seus, alcança riquezas.

O Exemplo está em, *of Honour*, *of Learning*, *of good Manners*, *of the Master's Commands*, *of Punishment*, *of natural Things*, *of Letters*, *of the Path*, *of the same Crime*, *of his Affairs*, *of his*; os quais estão em, Genitivo dos Adjectivos, desirous, *studious*, *mindful*, *fearful*, *ignorant*, *rude*, *uncertain*, *accused*, *careless*, *careful*.

Os Nomes Partativos, os Adjectivos partativamente postos, os Interrogativos, e os Numerais regem Genitivo, *Ex.*

Thou hast chosen two Companions, of which one is a Fool, the other idle.	Tu tens Escolhido dois companheyros, dois quais hum he tonto, o outro preguiçozo.
It is a difficult Thing, which of the two Parties I shall take.	He difficultoza Couza, qual das duas Partes tomarey.

Romulus, *who built the famous City of* Rome, *was the first of all the* Roman *Kings.*	*Romulo*, que edificou a famoza Cidade de *Roma*, foy o primeiro de todos os Reys *Romanos.*
None of the Heathenish Gods delivered his Worshipper.	Nenhum dos Deuzes gentilicos livrou seu Adorador.
Which is my Book? neither of these.	Qual he meu Livro? nenhum destes.

O Exemplo está em, *of which*, *of two*, *of all the* Roman *Kings*, *of the Heathenish Gods*, *neither of these*, que estáo em Genitivo do Numeral, *one*, dospurtativos, *whether*, *first*, *none*, *neither*.

Os Verbos de a Cuzar, condemnar, absolver, e admoestar Regem Genitivo da Couza do que se a Cuza condemna absolve, admoesta, e Acuzativo da pessoa como severá adiante em seu proprio lugar, *Ex.*

He accuseth another Man of Dishonesty.	Elle acuza outro Homen de dezonestidade.
He condemns his Son in Law of Wickedness.	Elle condemna seu Genro da Maldade.
We admonish the Grammarians of their Duty.	Nôs admoestamos os Grammaticos da sua Obrigaçaõ.
He is acquitted of Theft:	Elle he absolvido do Furto.

O Exemplo está em, *of Dishonesty*, *of Wickedness*, *of their Duty*, *of Theft*, os quais estaõ em Genitivo dos Verbos, *accused*, *condemns*, *admonish*, *acquit.*

Os Adjectivos de Alegria Regem Genitivo, *Ex.*

He is glad of the Honour.	Elle está alegre da Honra.

Os

Os Verbos de enquirir, ouvir Regem Genitivo da pessoa de quem se *enquire*, ou ouve; e Acuzativo da Couza como severã adiante, *Ex.*

He saith, he came to inquire of him.	Elle dis, que veyo a inquirir delle.
Perhaps you had heard of some Body.	Acazo tu tinhas ouvido de alguem.

As Particulas, *of*, *from*, *without*, quando estão antes de algum Verbo, Regem Gerundio ou Participio do prezente, *Ex.*

I come from drinking.	Eu venho de beber.
I am never weary of reading.	Eu nunca estou cançado de ler.
Can you not speak without laughing?	Naõ podes fallar sem rir?
Cannot Men be merry without quarrelling?	Naõ podem os Homens estar alegres sem contender?

Os Verbos de receber Regem Genitivo da pessoa de quem se recebe, o Acuzativo da Couza, que se recebe, *Ex.*

I receive my Money of Peter.	Eu recebi o meu dinheyro de *Pedro.*

Do Regimen do Dativo.

A perda ou Proveyto se poem em Dativo idest, a pessoa a quem sedá a perda, ou o Proveyto se poem em Dativo, *Ex.*

Corn grows for Man.	O Trigo cresce para o Homen.
Hay is mowed for Horses, and Cows.	O Feno he segado para Cavalos, e Vacas.

Os Adjectivos que significaõ Utilidade, ou aptidaõ regem Dativo da Couza para que he util, ou apto, *Ex.*

Paper useful for writing.	Papel util para escrever.
Captain idoneous to War.	Capitaõ apto para ã Guerra.

Os Verbos, que significaõ, *to promise*, prometer, *to pay*, pagar, *to give*, dar, *to sell*, vender, *to send*, emviar, *to offer*, offeresser, *to bring*, trazer, *to buy*, comprar, *to lend*, empreſtar, *to provide*, prover, *to tell*, dizer, regem Dativo da pessoa aquem se promete, *&c.* e Acusativo a Couza que se promete, *&c.* Ex.

My Father promised great Rewards to me.	Meu Pay me prometeu grandes Premios.
The Debtor pays to the Creditor great Sums of Money.	O Devedor paga ao a Credor grande soma de dinheiro.
My Father's Man brought me Bread and Cheese.	O mosso de meu Pay me Troxe paõ Equeijo.
My little Brother sent me these Gloves.	Meu irmaõ Pequeno me mandou estas Luvas.
My good Uncle will give me many choice Books.	Meu bom tio me dará muytos Livros escolhidos.
Lend your Boots to the Servant of my Father, or my Father's Servant.	Empresta tuas Botas ao Mosso de meu Pay.
When they offered Cæsar *a Crown and Sceptre he refused them.*	Quando offereſseraõ ã *Cæsar* a Coroa, e Ceptro, elle os refuzou.
Thou hast told thy Father many Lyes.	Tu diceste a teu Pay muitas Mentiras.

O Exemplo está em, *to me*, *to the Creditor*, *me*, *me*, *me*, *to the Servant*, Cæsar, *thy Father*, que es-

O

taõ em Dativo dos Verbos, *promise*, *pays*, *brought*, *sent*, *give*, *lend*, *offered*, *told*.

Os Verbos de persuadir regem Dativo da Couza ã que se persuáde, e Acuzativo da pessoa aquem se persuade, *Ex.*

He persuades me to that. Elle me persuade aisso.

O Signal, *to*, que em Portugues significa, aos, â as, a, para, he de Dativo especialmente se se ensinua alguã acquiziçaõ, *Ex.*

To give way to the Time. Dar Tempo ao Tempo.

Antes de palavras Tempo de Movimento insinua-dativo, *Ex.*

He lifteth up his Hands to Heaven. Elle levanta suas maõs ao Ceo.

He came to Genoa. Elle veyo a *Genova*.

Depois de huã palavra antes dos Adjectivos, que significaõ, para, promptidaõ, capacidade, ou inclinaçaõ insinua dativo, *Ex.*

A ready way to Honour. Prompto caminho para Honra.

Depois de huã palavra significante, *in Comparison of*, em comparaçaõ de, insinua dativo, Ex.

Nothing to Perseus, nada a *Perseu*; i. e. *in Comparison of* Perseus, em comparaçaõ de *Perseu*.

Depois de huã palavra ã que se segue, *according*, conforme, insinua dativo, *Ex.*

He speaks all according to his Will. Elle falla tudo conforme ã sua Vontade.

I judge according to my own Sense. Eu julgo conforme ã meu proprio Juizo.

Deante

Deante dapessoa, *to whom*, aquem, ou *before whom*, diante quem, alguem se queixa, acuza, condemna, ou falla, insinuadativo, *Ex.*

He complains to me by Letter.	Elle sequeixa a mim por Carta.
He made Oration to the People.	Elle fês huá Practica ao Bovo.

Depois de huá palavra, que trâs expressaõ de Cortezia, *Courtesy*, ou Favor, *Kindness*, insinua dativo, Ex.

Your Kindness to me have been very manifest, and very great.	Vosso Favor para commigo tem sido muyto manifesto, e muy grande.

De dilassaõ, ou prorogaçaõ, a the tal Tempo, se poem em Dativo, *Ex.*

The Soldier's Hope is put off to another Day.	A Esperança dos Soldados está prorogada outro Dia.

Do Acuzativo.

O Verbo Activo rege Acuzativo, *Ex.*

We must love God.	Nos devemos amar a Deus.

Os Verbos de acuzar, condemnar, absolver, e admoestar regem acuzativo da pessoa, que se condemna, acuza, *&c.* como ja se referio atrâs.

Os Verbos de inquirir, ouvir, e receber regem acuzativo da Couza, que se inquire, ouve, ou recebe, como atrâs se fes mençaõ.

Os Verbos de prometer, pagar, dar, vender, emviar, offeresser, trazer, comprar, empreſtar, prover, dizer, regem Acuzativo da Couza, que se promete, paga, *&c.* como ja sedisse atrâs.

Os Verbos de persuadir regem Accuzativo da pessoa a quem se persuade.

Do

Do Regimen do Ablativo.

O Instrumento, Cauza, ou maneyra, com que alguã Couza he feyta se poem em Ablativo, *Ex.*

The Mind is distracted with Cares and Fears.	O Animo he distrahido com cuydados, e temores.
The Body is broken with Troubles.	O Corpo está quebrado com Trabalhos.
Soldiers overcome Dangers with daring.	Os Soldados vencem Osperigos com a Audacia.
Lions tear Beasts by Strength.	Leõis despedaçaõ Feras com Força.
Nature is polished by Learning and Art.	A Natureza he pulida com a Erudiçaõ e Arte.
Art is perfected by Practice.	A Arte he aperfeiçoada com a Practica.
I struck my Brother, with my Fist and a Stone.	Eu feri meu Irmaõ com meu Punho, e huá Pedra.

Do Ablativo absoluto.

Hum Nome naõ tendo palavra por quem possa ser governado, se poem em Ablativo absoluto, e em Ingles se conhesse este por trazer antes do Verbo os Signais, *having*, *being*, *after*, *when*, ou outros semelhantes, e neste Cazo o Verbo se exprime pello Participio do preterito ou do prezente, *Ex.*

Having thus encouraged his Soldiers.	Animados asim seos Soldados.
Ptolomy *being dead.*	Morto *Potolomeu.*
Antiochus *being cut off, and all his Army.*	Vencido *Antioco*, e todo seu exercito.

Cleo-

Cleopatra, *his Mother-in-law, promising him the Kingdom of* Egypt.	Prometendo a elle *Cleopatra* sua Madrasta o Reino de *Egypto.*
When Demetrius *knew this.*	Cohessendo *Demetrio* isto.

Do Uzo dos Artigos.

Na Lingua Ingleza se uza dos Artigos como na Portugueza, *Ex.*

The Body and the Soul.	O Corpo, e a Alma.
The Head is the highest.	A Cabeça, he o mais alto
The Stomach receiveth Victuals.	o estomago recebe as Comidas.
The Heart dieth last.	O Coraçaõ morre ultimo.
The Sight is a fine thing.	A Vista he huã Bella Couza.

Falando porem de Virtudes, Paixões, Vicios, Artes, e Sciencias, naõ se Uza de Artigo, *Ex.*

Men must respect Wisdom above Strength.	Os Homens devem respeitar o Juizo mais que a Força.
Fools despise Wisdom.	Os Locos desprezaõ o Juizo.
Virtue cannot agree with Vice.	A Virtude naõ pode concordar com o Vicio.
Justice is without Interest.	A Justiça he sem interesse.
Chastity, Modesty, and Humility, are lovely Virtues.	A Castidade, a Modestia, e a Humildade, saõ a maveis Virtudes.
Prudence is the Rule of all Virtues.	A Prudencia he Aregra, de todas as Virtudes.
Pride is the Sin of the Devil.	A Soberba he opecado do Diabo.
Discords are the Ruin of States.	As Discordias saõ Ruinas dos Estados.

Drunken-

Drunkenness is abominable.	A Bebedice he abomivel.
Anger doth breathe but Arms and Blood.	A Ira respira so Armas, e Sangue.
Philosophy is Mistress of Wisdom.	A Philozophia he Mestra do Juizo.
Musick is pleasant to the Ear.	A muzica he agradavel ao ouvido.
Writing knoweth nothing, and teacheth all Things.	A Escritura sabe nada, e ensina todas as Couzas.
Arithmetick is the Science of Numbers.	A Arismetica he Sciencia de Numeros.

Falando de Substancias em geral, principalmente da quellas, que naõ se contaõ, naõ se uza de Artigo, *Ex.*

Bread is the Staff of Life.	O Paõ he bordaõ da Vida.
If Salt lose its Savour.	Se o Sal perde seu Sabor.
I love Milk, Butter, and Cheese.	Eu amo Leito, Manteiga, e queijo.
Beef is the Partridge of England.	A Vaca he aperdîs de *Inglaterra.*
Mutton is sweeter than Bacon.	O Carneiro he mais doce que o toucinho.
Roast Meat is better than boiled Meat.	A comida Assada he melhor, que cozida.
Wine doth rejoice the Heart.	O Vinho alegra o Coraçaõ.
Beer and Ale are good together.	A Cerveja, e Elá juntas, saõ boas.
Gold and Silver do all Things.	O Ouro, e Aprata fazem todas as Couzas.
Wheat, Rye, and Barley make Bread.	O Trigo, Senteyo, e sevadas fazem Paõ.
Grass and Hay is the Food of Cattle.	Aerva, eo Feno saõ o Alimento do Gado.

Parsley,

Parsly, and Sorrel are good in Broth.	O Apio, e as Azedas saõ bons no Caldo.
Garlick stinks.	O Alho fede.
Mustard is good with salt Beef.	A Mostarda he boa com Vaca salgada.
After Dinner Mustard.	Depois de Gentar Mostarda.
Sugar is sweet, but Pepper, Ginger, Nutmeg, and Mace are not.	O a Sucar he doce; mas a Pimenta, Gingivre nos Noscada, e Flor de nos Noscada naõ o saõ.

Todos os Substantivos, que se podem contar recebem artigo no singular, mas naõ no Plurar, *Ex.*

I have a Friend.	Eu tenho hum Amigo.
I have Friends.	Eu tenho Amigos.
I have a good Book.	Eu tenho hum bom Livro.
I have good Books.	Eu tenho bons Livros.
I have bought a Knife.	Eu comprey huá Faca.
I have bought Knives.	Eu comprey Facas.

Notese, que estas Regras só tem Lugar quando se fala de Entidades, e Substancias, em sua Generalidade; porem quando a Generalidade se redúz a Couza particular, em taõ seuzą de Artigo, *Ex.*

The Love of God.	O Amor de Deus.
The Wisdom of Men is Folly.	O Juizo dos Homens he Louquice.
I thank you for the Wine, that you sent me.	Eu te dou as Graças pello Vinho, que me mandaste.
I have spent all the Gold and Silver, that I received Yesterday.	Eu dispendi todo o Ouro, e Prata, que recebi Hontem.

The

The Mutton that we did eat the other Day, was very sweet.	O Carneiro, que nôs comemos o outro Dia, era muyto doce.
The Beer that I drank last Night was good.	A Cerveja que eu bebi a Noyte passada era boa.
The Books, that, I bought, are good.	Os Livros, que comprey saõ bons.

Falando de Couzas differentes naõ se repete o Artigo, *Ex.*

The Kings and Princes.	Os Reys, e Principes.
The Eyes and Ears.	Os Olhos, e Orelhas.
The Arms and Legs.	Os Braços, e Pernas.
The Father, Mother and Children.	O Pay, May, e Crianças.
The Brother and Sister.	O Irmaõ, e Irmãa.
The Butter and Cheese.	A Manteiga, e Queijo.
The Light and Darkness.	A Lûs, e Escuridade.

Quando se fala das Partes do Corpo, em Lugar do Artigo, se Uza dos Pronomes possessivos, *Ex.*

My Head aches.	Medoe aeabeça.
My Eyes are sore.	Meus olhos estaõ chagados.
My Leg is broken.	Minha Perna está quebrada.
I have burnt my Leg.	Queimey a Perna.
Is your Belly full?	Está Chea tua barriga?
I will break your Neck.	Te quebrarey Opescoço.
He hath lost his Sight.	Elle perdeu sua Vista.
Wash your Hands.	Lava tuas Mãos.

O Genitivo de pertençaõ ou possessaõ, como chamaõ os Lanitos, tem Lugar quando se fala deduas

pessoas

pessoas, ou Couzas pertencentes hua ã outra eo tal Genitivo se antepoem sem Artigo, a juntandolhe hum, *s*, e interpondo hum Apostrofe na Forma abaixo.

The King's Son.	O Filho do Rey.
The Queen's Coach.	O Coche da Rainha.
The Brother's Wife.	A Mulher do Irmaõ.
My Father's House.	A Caza de meu Pay.
My Sister's Gloves.	As Luvas de minha Irmaã.
My Cousin's Book.	O Livro de meu Primo.
My Uncle's Son.	O Filho de meu Tio.

Porem quando dois Substantivos vem juntos, e pertencem a Couzas diversas, o segundo vay a Genitivo com o Artigo, *of*, Signal do Genitivo, como se disse no Regimen do Genitivo.

Quando se fala de Materia de que alguã Couza he feyta, a Materia se poem em Genitivo, antecedendo o tal Genitivo a o Nominativo sem Artigo, *Ex.*

A brick House.	Huã Caza depedra.
A silver Dish.	Hum prato de Prata.
A scarlet Cloak.	Huma Capa de escarlate.
A silk Stocking.	Huã meya de Seda.
A wooden Box.	Huã caixa de Paõ.
A horn Comb.	Hum pente de Corno.
Brass Money.	Dinheiro de Cobre.
A holland Shirt.	Huã Camiza de Olanda.

Quando se fala, de Couzas que se pezaõ, contaõ, ou medem, a Couza contada, pezada, ou medida se poem em Genitivo, posposto o tal Genitivo com o Artigo, *of*, Ex.

A Glass of Wine.	Hum Vazo de Vinho.
A Barrel of Beer.	Hum Barril de Cerveja.

A

A Dish of Meat.	Hum Prato de Carne.
A Dozen of Lemons.	Huã Duzia de Limoes.
A Score of Oranges.	Huá Vintena de Laranjas.
A Pint of Wine.	Huá Pinta de Vinho.
A Bushel of Wheat.	Huma Fanega de Trigo.
An Ell of Cloth.	Huã Vara de Pano.
A Pound of Butter.	Hum Arratel de Manteiga.
A Yard of Ribbon.	Huã Jarda de Fita.

Quando se fala de Muzica, ou Instrumentos, se Uza do Verbo, *to play*, com o Artigo, *the*, acompanhado dãs Prepozições, *on*, ou, *upon*, Ex.

To play upon the Fiddle.	tanger Rabeca.
To play upon the Lute.	tanger a Laude.
To play upon the Guitar.	tanger Viola.
To play upon the Virginal.	tanger Cravo.

Falando de Jogos de Gainhar, ou perder, se Uza do mesmo Verbo, *to play*, com a Prepoziçaõ, *at*, Ex.

To play at Piquet.	jugar os Piques.
To play at Cards.	jugar as Cartas.
To play at Pins.	jugar aos Paõs.
To play at Tennis.	jugar a Pella.
To play at Dice.	jugar os Dados.

Da pregunta, where, *aonde?*

Quando a pregunta, ou questaõ se fas por, *where*, sem haver Movimento, a Lingua Ingleza, se serve nos Nomes proprios de Villas, Barrios, Aldeas da Propoziçaõ, *at*, que significa, *em*, na Portugueza, *Ex.*

The King of England, *is at* London, *at* Windsor, *at* New-Market.	O Rey de *Inglaterra*, está em *Londres*, em *Uinsar*, no *Mercado Novo*.

Tambem se uza de, *at*, com a palavra, *Home*, porem fallandose de Provincias ou Reynos, se serve da Propiziçaõ, *in*, Ex.

The King is in England, *in* Holland, *in* Picardy, *in the Country.*	El Rey está em *Inglaterra*, em *Olanda*, em *Picardia*, em o Campo.

Da pregunta, whither, *para onde?*

Quando há Movimento nos Nomes proprios de Villas, cidades, e Barrios se Uza de, *to*, Ex.

I go to London.	Eu vou á *Londres.*
I go to Versailles.	Eu vou á *Varselles.*

Tambem se uza de, *to*, nos Nomes de Reinos, Provincias, havendo Movimento, Ex.

I will go to England.	Eu hirey a *Inglaterra.*
I am going to Holland.	Eu vou a *Olanda.*

Com a palavra, Home, *se suprime o* to, Ex.

He goes Home.	Elle vay a Caza.

Da Pregunta, from whence? *de donde?*

Quando a pregunta se fas, *from whence?* A Lingua Ingleza uza de, *from*, que significa, de, na Portugueza; em todos os Nomes, sem excepçaõ de Reynos, nem Provincias sendo proprios, Ex.

From whence come you?	De donde vens?
I come from England, *from* London, *from* Versailles.	Eu venho de *Inglaterra*, *de* Londres, *de* Varselles.

Mas em os outros Nomes que naõ saõ proprios, se uza de *from*, com, *the*, Ex.

I come from the Market.	Eu venho do Mercado.
I come from the Church.	Eu venho da Igreja.
I come from the Country.	Eu venho do Campo.

Da

Da pregunta, by which way? *porque Parte?*

Em todos os Nomes proprios, uza de, *by*, Ex.

I will go by France, *by* Paris, *by* Versailles.	Eu hirey por *França* por *Pariz*, *por* Varselles.

Em todos outros Nomes, se ajunta o Artigo, *the*, Ex.

I passed by the Window.	Eu passey pella Janella.
I passed by the Door.	Eu passey pella Porta.
I passed by the Master's Country.	Eu passey pello Campo do amo.

Do Uzo de hum Verbo pessoal em todas as acçōis; Affirmativas, Interrogativas, e Negativas.

Prezent.

I do see.	eu vejo.
I do not see.	naō vejo.
Do I see?	vejo eu?
Do I not see?	naō vejo eu?
He doth see.	elle ve.
He doth not see.	elle naō ve.
Doth he see?	vé elle?
Doth he not see?	naō ve' elle?
We do see.	nôs vemos.
We do not see.	nôs naô vemos.
Do we see?	vemos nôs?
Do we not see?	naō vemos nos?
You do see.	vôs vedes.
You do not see.	vos naō vedes.
Do you see?	vedes vôs.
Do you not see?	naō vedes vôs?
They do see.	elles veem.
They do not see.	elles naō veem.
Do they see?	veem elles?
Do they not see?	naō veem elles?

Imperf.

I did see.	en via.
I did not see.	eu naõ via.
Did I see?	via eu?
Did I not see?	naõ via eu?

Perf.

I have seen.	eu tenho visto.
I have not seen.	eu naõ tenho visto.
Have I seen?	tenho eu visto?
Have I not seen?	naõ tenho eu visto, *&c.*
You have done.	vos tendes feito.
You have not done.	vos naõ tendes feito.
Have you done?	tendes vos feito?
Have you not done?	naõ tendes feito?

Plusq.

I had Love.	eu tinha Amado.
I had not Loved.	eu naõ tinha Amado.
Had I Loved?	tinha eu Amado?
Had I not Loved?	naõ tinha eu Amado?

Futuro.

I will do.	eu farey.
I will not do.	eu naõ farey.
Shall I do?	farey eu?
Shall I not do?	naõ farey eu?

Imperf.

Let him do.	faça elle.
Let him not do.	naõ faça elle.
Let us go.	vamos.
Let us not go.	naõ vamos.
Speak.	falla.
Do not speak, &c.	naõ falles.

Do

Do Uzo de hum Verbo Impessoal na vôz activa.

It rains.	chove.
It doth not rain.	naõ chove.
Doth it rain?	chove?
Doth it not rain?	naõ chove?
It did rain.	chovia.
It did not rain.	naõ chovia.
Did it rain?	chovia?
Did it not rain?	naõ chovia?
It hath rained.	tem chovido.
It hath not rained.	naõ tem chovido.
Hath it rained?	tem chovido.
Hath it not rained?	naõ tem chovido.
It will rain.	choverá.
It will not rain.	naõ choverá.
Will it rain?	choverá?
Will it not rain?	naõ chovera?
Let it rain.	chova.
God grant it may rain.	Oxalá chova.
O would to God it might rain.	Oxalá chovera.

E por esta forma se seguem os mais.

It blows, ou *it doth blow.*	aventa.
It freezes, ou *it doth freeze.*	gella.
It thaws, &c.	desgella.
It doth snow.	neva.
It grieves me.	me ancea.
It behoveth me.	me convem.
It concerns me.	me importa.
It concerns you.	te importa.
It is hot.	está quente.
It is cold.	está frio.
It is fair Weather.	está bom Tempo.

It is foul Weather.	está maõ Tempo.
It is dirty.	está lamacento.
It is dry.	está seco.
It falls out sometimes.	a contece alguás vezes.
It is good to be here.	está bom para estar aqui.
It is not good to travel in Winter.	Naõ he bom caminhar de Inverno.
It is dangerous.	he perigozo.
It is better to be alone, than with bad Company.	he melhor estar só que com má Companhia.
It is better to dine late, than never.	melhor he gentar tarde, que nunca.
It is better to bow than to break.	melhor he dobrar, que quebrar.

Do uzo do Verbo, *to be*, impessoalmente affirmando.

there is.	está.
there was.	estava.
there hath been.	esteve ou tem estado.
there had been.	tinha estado.
there will be.	estará.
let there be.	esteja.

Preguntando.

is there?	esta?
was there?	estava?
hath there been?	esteve, ou tem estado.
had there been?	tinha estado?
will there be?	estará?
would there be?	estaria?

Do uzo do Verbo, *must*, dever, ou necessitar.

He Verbo defectivo, se uza de Tempo prezente fazendo hum sentido de futuro.

I must go.	eu devo ou necessito hir.
I must do that.	eu devo fazer aquillo.
You must do that.	deves fazer aquillo.
You must prepare.	necessitas preparar.
They must learn.	devem aprender.
We must have Care.	devemos ter Cuydado.
We must all die.	devemos morrer todos.
We must not wonder.	naõ devemos admirar.

O Imperfeyto deste Verbo se, Expressa pella particula, *should.*

You should have done that.	devias ter feito aquillo.
I should have gone there.	eu devia ter hido lá.

Para os outros Tempos he necessario uzar de Paraphrazes, formandoos com o auxiliar, *to be*, e o Adjectivo, *needful*, que significa Couza necessaria, v. g. para formar o preterito perfeito, se dirá.

It hath been needful.	foy necessario.

E da mesma Sorte os mais, *&c.*

Do uzo do Verbo impessoal na voz passiva.

O Verbo impessoal nesta vôz passiva, na Lingua Ingleza; huãs vezes se exprime pella dicçaõ. *they*, v. g.

they speak.	falasse.
they speak good French *at* Blois.	falasse bom *Frances* em *Blois.*
they drink good Wine in France.	bebesse bom vinho em *França.*
they speak better English *in* London, *than any where else.*	falasse melhor *Ingles* em *Londres*, que em outra qualquer parte.
they eat good Cream at Blois.	comesse boa nata em *Blois.*

Outras vezes se exprime pellas dicçois, *Men*, *People*, *one*, v. g.

Men know that well.	sabesse bem isso.
Men have not all that they wish for.	naõ se tem quanto se dezeja.
One commanded me to do.	emcomendosse a fazer.
Men lose many things, for Want of asking.	perdense muytas Couzas, por falta de Preguntar.
People talk of that.	falasse disso.
One told me so.	asim se medice.
People tell a great many Lies.	se dizem muytas Mentiras.

Mas mais commummente se uza do Verbo, *to be*, e do Participio do preterito do Verbo, conforme o que sequer expressar, v. g.

It is said.	se dis.
Good Wine is drank in France.	bom Vinho se bebe em *França.*
The best English *is spoken at* London.	o melhor *Inglês* se falla em *Londres.*
That is well known, I have been commanded.	isso bem sesabe, fuy mandado.
Many Things are lost, for want of asking	muytas Couzas se perdem por falta de Preguntar.
It will be found.	se achará.
It will be done.	se fará,
Roses are found among Thorns.	se achaõ Rozas entre Espinhos.
A Friend is known in Necessity.	o Amigo se conhesse na Necessidade.

Pe-

Pequenos Dialogos para Principiantes.	Small Dialogues for Beginners.
Palavra por palavra.	Verbatim.

I.

De donde vens tu Senhor ?	*From whence come you Sir ?*
Eu venho da nossa Igreja comminha May.	*I come from our Church with my Mother.*
Tens tu ouvido hum bom Sermaõ ?	*Have you heard a good Sermon ?*
Muyto bom, e muyto cientifico.	*Very good and very learned.*
Quem ha pregado esta Manham ?	*Who hath preached this Morning ?*
Elle he o Senhor *Lucas* vosso amigo.	*It is Mr.* Lucas *your Friend.*
Elle he hum honesto homem.	*He is a very honest Man.*
Elle faz muyto bons Sermoins.	*He maketh very good Sermons.*
Onde vas tu a gora ?	*Whither go you now ?*
Agentar, e entaõ a ver hum Amigo.	*To dinner, and then to see a Friend.*
Novamente vindo do Campo.	*Newly come from the Country.*
Queres tu gentar com migo ?	*Will you dine with me?*
Que tens tu para gentar ?	*What have you for Dinner ?*
Nos temos alguã Vaca, algum Carneiro.	*We have some Beef, some Mutton.*
Alguma Vitela, algum Cordeyro, alguns Graõs.	*Some Veal, some Lamb, some Peas.*
Hum par de Coelhos, huã Salada.	*A couple of Rabbits, and Sallad.*

Eu

Eu naõ posso gentar com tigo hoje.	*I cannot dine with you to-day.*
Elle será para outra ocaziaõ.	*It shall be for another Time.*
A Deus, eu sou teu Servidor.	*Farewell, I am your Servant.*
Eu sou vosso com todo meu Coraçaõ.	*I am yours with all my Heart.*

II.

Onde queres tu hir ésta tarde.	*Whither will you go this Afternoon?*
Vamos a *Greenwich* ou *Windsor*.	*Let us go to* Greenwich *or* Windsor.
Quereis vos hir a Pé, ou em Coche?	*Will you go on Foot, or in a Coach?*
A Cavalo, ou em Batel?	*On Horseback, or in a Boat?*
Vamos em hum Batel eute rogo.	*Let us go in a Boat I pray you.*
Porem antes bebamos juntos.	*But before let us drink together.*
Huã Botelha de Vinho em ésta Taverna.	*A Bottle of Wine in this Tavern.*
Rapâs, chama teu Amo; onde está elle?	*Boy, call your Master; where is he?*
Senhor, elle he hido a o Campo.	*Sir, he is gone into the Country.*
Com sua Mulher e suas Crianças.	*With his Wife and his Children.*
Eu posso tirar hum taõ bom Vinho como qualquer homem em *Inglaterra*.	*I can draw as good Wine as any Man in* England.
Vay depressa, aviate, despacha, corre.	*Go quickly, make haste, run.*

Entre

Entre tanto concertemos hum Batel.	*In the mean Time let us bargain for a Boat.*
Com este Barqueiro.	*With this Waterman.*
Quanto tomarás tu da qui a *Greenwich* ?	*What will you take from hence to* Greenwich.
Dois Xilins, Senhor.	*Two Shillings, Sir.*
Isso he muyto tu terâs hum.	*It is too much, you shall have one.*
Vay, traze teu Batel, corre depressa.	*Go fetch your Boat, run quickly.*
Rapâs tira outra Botelha devinho.	*Boy, draw another Bottle of Wine.*
Traze hum vidro, lava o bem.	*Bring a Glass, wash it well.*
A vossa saude, Senhores, acabemos.	*To your health, Gentlemen, let us make an End.*
Bebe todo, paguemos e vamos.	*Drink all, let us pay and begone.*
Vos estais muy apressado ; porque taõ sedo.	*You are very hasty, why so soon.*
Eu quero tornar sedo; e eu tambem:	*I will return betimes ; and I also.*

III.

Eres tu o Mestre da tenda ?	*Are you the Master of the Shop ?*
Sim, Senhor, a vosso Serviço.	*Yes, Sir, at your Service.*
Entre Vmce.	*Come in, Sir.*
Tens tu alguãs boas Luvas ?	*Have you any good Gloves ?*
Mostrame alguãs das melhores.	*Shew me some of the best.*
A palpa estas, provaas.	*Feel this Pair, try them.*
Ellas saõ muyto brandas, e huã boa Cor.	*They are very soft, and a good Colour.*

Ellas

Ellas saõ muy pequenas, ellas saõ muy estreytas.	*They are too little, they are too narrow.*
Quanto pedes tu por estas aqui?	*What do you ask for these here?*
Meya Coroa.	*Half a Crown.*
Esse preço naõ he razoavel.	*That Price is not reasonable.*
Tem, ahy estaõ dois Xilins.	*Hold, there is two Shillings.*
Tens tu Camaras para alugar?	*Have you Chambers to lett?*
Vem dentro se te agrada, tu as veras.	*Come in if you please, you shall see them.*
ésta Caza he muyto bella.	*This House is very fine.*
Mas as escadas saõ muyto escuras.	*But the Stairs are very dark.*
Quanto pedes tu por estas duas Camaras?	*What do you ask for these two Chambers?*
Queres tu darme trez Livras a o mez?	*Will you give me three Pounds a Month?*
Dame Sinal, o Concerto esta feito.	*Give me Earnest, the Bargain is made.*
Ahy está huã Coroa, estas tu contente?	*There is a Crown, are you content.*
Sim, Senhor, vem quando tu quizeres.	*Yes, Sir, come when you will.*

IV.

Sois vôs *Ingles*, Senhor?	*Are you an* Englishman, *Sir?*
Sim, Madama, a teu serviço.	*Yes, Madam, at your Service.*
Eu estou muyto alegre de encontrar a ty aqui.	*I am very glad to meet you here.*

Que

Que dizes tu de este Pays?	*What say you of this Country?*
Elle he o mais bello Pays do Mundo.	*It is the finest Country in the Word.*
Tens tu estado em *Veneza?*	*Have you been at* Venice?
Sim, Madama, ella he huã bella Cidade.	*Yes, Madam, it is a fine City.*
Sabes tu falar *Italiano?*	*Can you speak* Italian?
Eu emtendo melhor do que falo.	*I understand better than I speak.*
Queres tu gentar com migo hoje?	*Will you dine with me to-day.*
Eu me alegrarey de vossa Companhia.	*I shall be glad of your Company.*
Naõ posso porcerto, tenho que fazer.	*I can't indeed, I have Business to do.*
Mas eu virey a Menhã sem falta.	*But I will come tomorrow without fail.*
Vos sereys sempre pre bem vindo.	*You shall be always welcome.*
Trazey vossa Irmã com vôs.	*Bring your Sister along with you.*

V.

Irmaõ, aqui está vosso Mestre.	*Brother, here is your Master.*
Vinde a escrever.	*Come to write.*
Eu naõ posso em verdade, eu estou muy doente.	*I cannot indeed, I am very sick.*
Vos estais sempre indisposto quando vos vedes vosso Mestre.	*You are always indisposed when you see your Master.*
Vos estais prequiçozo, minha May estara agastada.	*You are lazy, my Mother will be angry.*

Eu

Eu aprenderey mais a manhã de Manhã.	*I will learn more tomorrow Morning.*
Senhor, demorate mais com migo.	*Sir, stay longer with me.*
Eu tenho huã grande vontade de aprender hoje.	*I have a great Mind to learn to-day.*
Agora eu começo a estar cançado.	*Now I begin to be weary.*
Eu imagino que he bastante por Agora.	*I think it is enough for this Time.*
Onde queres tu hir está tarde?	*Whither will you go this Afternoon?*
Eu quero hir ver nosso Amigo *Thomas.*	*I will go to see our Friend* Thomas.
Te rogo lhe des meus Recados.	*I pray you give him my Compliments.*
Eu quero, eu naõ faltarey.	*I will, I shall not fail.*

Huã Collecçao de Verbos *Inglezes* e *Portuguezes* para expressar as acçõis mais ordinarias.

A Collection of Portuguese *and* English *Verbs to express most common Actions.*

To eat, comer.	*To be hungry*, ter fome.
To drink, beber.	*To be dry*, ter sede.
To taste, provar.	*To fill or satisfy*, satisfazer.
To chew, Mascar.	*To have a Stomach*, ter apetite.
To gnaw, roer.	*To drink hard*, beber muito.
To swallow, emgulir.	*To get drunk*, embebedarse.
To fast, jejuar.	
To breakfast, almoçar.	
To dine, gentar.	
To sup, Cear.	
To treat, convidar.	

To

to go to Bed, hir para acama.
to sleep, dormir.
to awake, acordar.
to watch, vegiar.
to rest, or repose, descançar.
to snore, roncar.
to dream, sonhar.
to rise, levantar.

to dress oneself, comporse, ou vistirse.
to undress oneself, dispirse.
to put on one's Stockings, calçar as meyas.
to put on one's Shoes, calçar os Sapatos.
to pull off one's Stockings, or Shoes, descalçar as meyas ou os Sapatos.
to comb one's Head, pentear a Cabeça.
to dress one's Head, toucar a Cabeça.
to powder one's Hair, polvilhar o Cabelo.
to curl one's Hair, emcrespar o Cabello.
to paint oneself, pintarse.
to wash one's Hands, lavarse as maõs.
to put on one's Hat, porse o Chapeo.
to button oneself, abotoarse.
to lace oneself, atacarse.

Acçõis naturais dos Homens.

Natural Actions of Men.

to laugh, rir.
to sing, cantar.
to cry, or weep, chorar.
to sigh, suspirar.
to groan, gemer.
to sob, saluçar.
to sneeze, espirrar.
to gape, bocejar.
to blow, soprar.
to whistle, suviar.
to hearken, escutar.
to hear, ouvir.
to spit, cuspir.
to smell, cheirar.
to blow one's Nose, asoar.
to see, ver.
to look, reparar.
to bleed, sangrar.
to sweat, suar.
to wipe, limpar.
to rub, esfregar.
to shake, chocalhar.

to tremble, tremer.
to scratch, arranhar.
to pinch, beliscar.
to tickle, fazer cocegas.
to feel, apalpar.

To study, Estudar.

ler, *to read.*
escrever, *to write.*
aprender, *to learn.*
decorar, *to get by Heart.*
aproveytar, *to improve.*
asignar, *to sign, or subscribe.*
dobrar, *to fold up.*
selar, *to seal.*
por Osobréscri, *to put the Superscription.*
corregir, *to correct.*
borrar, *to blot out.*
traduzir, *to translate.*
começar, *to begin.*
continuar, *to continue, to go on.*
acabar, *to make an end.*
finalizar, *to finish.*
poder, *to be able.*
querer, *to be willing.*

To speak, falar.

pronunciar, *to pronounce.*
fazer accento, *to accent.*
dizer, *to say.*
contar, *to tell.*
relatar, *to relate.*
gritar, *to cry out.*
chamar, *to call.*
preguntar, *to ask.*
responder, *to answer.*
calar, *to hold one's Tongue.*
ensinar, *to teach.*
instruir, *to instruct.*
mandar, *to command*, ou *to bid.*
reprehender, *to chide.*
obedecer, *to obey.*
confessar, *to confess*, ou *to own.*
asegurar, *to assure.*
negar, *to deny.*
prohibir, *to prohibit*, ou *forbid.*
queicharse, *to complain.*
contender, *to contend.*
disputar, *to dispute.*
razoar, *to reason.*

Ef-

Effects of the Mind.

Efeitos do Pençamento.

conhecer, *to know.*
imaginar, *to imagine.*
agradar, *to fancy.*
crer, *to believe.*
duvidar, *to doubt.*
suspeitar, *to suspect.*
cuidar, *to think.*
lembrar, *to remember.*
esquecer, *to forget.*
dezejar, *to wish.*
esperar, *to hope.*
temer, *to fear.*
dissimular, *to dissemble.*
fingir, *to feign.*
provar, *to try.*
julgar, *to judge.*
concluir, *to conclude.*
rezolver, *to resolve.*
decider, *to decide.*

Of Love and Hatred.

Do Amor, e Odio.

amar, *to love.*
acariciar, *to caress.*
lizonjear, *to flatter.*
abraçar, *to embrace.*
beijar, *to kiss.*
saudar, *to salute.*
reverenciar, *to make a Bow or Courtesy.*
louvar, *to praise or commend.*
nutrir, *to feed.*
corrigir, *to correct.*
castigar, *to chastise.*
ameaçar, *to threaten.*
bater, *to beat.*
açoitar, *to whip.*
perdoar, *to forgive.*
aborrecer, *to hate.*
culpar, *to blame.*
comprimentar, *to compliment.*
felicitar, *to wish Joy.*
congratular, *to congratulate.*
acuzar, *to accuse.*
escuzar, *to excuse.*
condenar, *to condemn.*
abuzar, *to abuse.*
punir, *to punish.*
querelar, *to quarrel.*
peleijar, *to fight.*
vencer, *to overcome.*
despir, *to strip.*
despojar, *to plunder.*

matar, *to kill.*
afogar, *to stifle*, ou *to choak.*
roubar, *to rob.*
furtar, *to steal.*

To take one's Pleasure.

Tomar Divertimento.

cantar, *to sing.*
dançar, *to dance.*
saltar, *to leap*, ou *jump.*
esgrimir, *to fence.*
cavalgar, *to ride.*
zombar, *to p'ay the Fool.*
jugar as Cartas, *to play at Cards.*
gainhar, *to win.*
perder, *to lose.*
apostar, *to lay a Wager.*
aventurar, *to venture.*
cortar, *to cut.*
baralhar, *to shuffle.*
enganar, *to bubble*, ou *to cheat.*
zombar, *to jeer*, *or banter.*
rirse, *to laugh at.*

To be sick.

Estar doente.

tratar de hum doente, *to tend or nurse a sick Body.*
ter cuydado, *to take Care.*
curar, *to dress a Wound*, ou *Cure.*
melhorar, *to recover.*
sangrar, *to let Blood*, ou *bleed.*
dar hua ajuda, *to give a Clyster.*
tomar Medicina, *to take Physick.*
vendar, *to bind with a Fillet.*

Of Bargains.

De Contratos.

comprar, *to buy.*
vender, *to sell.*
entregar, *to deliver.*
trocar, *to change*, oũ *truck.*
pagar, *to pay.*

pedir

pedir emprestado, *to borrow.*
prestar, *to lend.*
dever, *to owe.*
dar, *to give.*
alugar, *to hire.*
aceytar, *to accept.*
refuzar, *to refuse.*
negar, *to deny.*
tomar, *to take.*
receber, *to receive.*
enganar, *to cheat.*
tirar, *to take away.*
prometer, *to promise.*
guardar, *to keep.*
mandar, *to bid.*
empenhar, *to pawn.*
perder, *to lose.*
rogar, *to pray.*
suplicar, *to beseech.*
obter, *to obtain.*

Of Life.

Da Vida.

parir, *to be delivered*, ou *brought to Bed.*
nascer, *to be born.*
baptizar, *to baptize*, ou *to christen.*
crescer, *to grow.*
viver, *to live.*
morrer, *to die.*
enterrar, *to bury.*

Of Motion.

Do Movimento.

mover, *to move*, ou *stir.*
hir, *to go.*
vir, *to come.*
partir, *to depart.*
hirse, *to go away.*
aportar, *ou* arribar, *to arrive.*
tornar atras, *to come back.*
Ir atras, *to go back.*
chegar, *to go near*, ou *come near.*
estar de pe, *to stand:*
passear, *to walk.*
caminhar, *to march.*
desaparecer, *to disappear.*
correr, *to run.*
fugir, *to run away.*
seguir, *to follow.*
evitar, *to shun.*
escapar, *to escape.*
tornar, *to turn.*
alcançar, *to overtake.*
escorregar, *to slide.*
arrimar, *to lean.*

cahir, *to fall.*
tropeçar, *to stumble.*
continuar, *to go on.*
avançar, *to advance.*
distanciar, *to go from.*
hir, ao encontro, *to go to meet.*
entrar, *to go*, ou *come in.*
sahir, *to go*, ou *come out.*
subir, *to go*, ou *come up.*
baixar, *to go*, ou *come down.*
embasbacar, *to amuse oneself.*
enviar, *to send.*
apressar, *to make haste.*
deter, *to tarry.*
sentarse, *to sit down.*
nadar, *to swim.*
margulhar, *to dive*, ou *duck.*
sumergir, *to drown.*
caminhar, *to travel.*

Handy Works.

Obras de Maõs.

trabalhar, *to work.*
tocar, *to touch.*
manejar, *to manage.*
fechar, *to shut.*
tapar, *to stop.*
abrir, *to open.*
levantar, *to lift up.*
encher, *to fill.*
derramar, *to spill*, ou *shed.*
molhar, *to dip*, ou *steep.*
alcançar, *to reach.*
armar, *to arm.*
tirar, *to draw, ou pull.*
arrebatar, *to snatch.*
arrancar, *to pluck out.*
mostrar, *to shew.*
misturar, *to mingle.*
estender, *to pull out*, ou *stretch out.*
plantar, *to plant*, ou *set.*
pezar, *to weigh.*
atar, *to tie*, ou *bind.*
desatar, *to untie.*
anodar, *to knit.*
amontoar, *to heap.*
ajuntar, *to gather.*
quebrar, *to break.*
despedaçar, *to tear.*
cortar, *to cut.*
pizar, *to bruize.*
espremer, *to squeeze.*
ter, *to hold.*
esconder, *to hide.*
cubrir, *to cover.*
descobrir, *to discover.*
buscar, *to seek*, ou *look for.*
achar, *to find.*
sujar, *to stain.*
enlamear, *to dirt.*
limpar, *to cleanse.*

bar-

barrer, *to sweep.*
lavar, *to wash.*
enchagoar, *to rinse.*
pintar, *to draw Pictures.*
gravar, *to engrave.*
entalhar, *to carve.*
edificar, *to build.*
acender, *to kindle,* ou *light.*
estender, *to spread out.*
imprimir, *to print.*
encadernar, *to bind a Book.*
tocar o sino, *to ring.*
pentear, *to comb.*
remendar, *to mend.*
cozer, *to sew.*
pespontar, *to stitch.*
ferrar, *to shoe a Horse.*

Of the Sound of Beasts.

Do Son dos Animais.

O Cavallo rincha, *the Horse neighs.*
O Asno zurra, *the Ass brays.*
O Leaõ brame *the Lion roars.*
O Boy berra, *the Ox bellows.*
O Porco grunhe, *the Hog grunts.*
O Lobo uva, *the Wolf howls.*
O Caõ ladra, *the Dog barks.*
A Ovelha berra, *the Sheep bleats.*
A Cobra asobia, *the Snake hisses.*
O Gato mya, *the Cat mews.*

The Birds are used.

Os Passaros saõ costumados.

cantar, *to sing.*
chirriar, *to chirp.*
picar, *to pick.*
o Galo canta, *the Cock grows.*
o Corvo grasna, *the Raven croaks.*
o Papagayo fala, *The Parrot talks.*
a Pega grasna, *the Magpye chatters.*
a Galinha poem Ovos, *the Hen lays Eggs.*

Frazes familiares.	*Familiar Phrases.*
eu vos peſſo dame ſe te agrada.	*I pray you, or pray give me if you pleaſe.*
trazeme.	*bring me.*
empreſtame.	*lend me.*
eu te agradeço.	*I thank you.*
eu vos dou Graças.	*I give you Thanks.*
vay e traze.	*go and fetch.*
logo.	*preſently.*
amado S^r^. fazeme, eſte Favor.	*dear Sir, do me that Kindneſs or Favour.*
amada Senhora concedeme eſte Favor.	*dear Madam, grant me that Favour.*
eu vos ſuplico.	*I beſeech you.*
eu vos rogo ou eu vos conjuro a fazelo.	*I entreat you,* ou *I conjure you to do it.*
eu volo peſſo por Favor.	*I beg it as a Favour.*
obrigame a tanto.	*oblige me ſo far.*

Expreſſõis de Carinho.	*Expreſſions of Kindneſs.*
minha Vida.	*my Life.*
meu Amor.	*my Love.*
minha querida Alma.	*my dear Soul.*
meu Brinquinho.	*my little Darling.*
meu Coraçaõzinho.	*my little Heart.*
meu doſe Coraçaõ.	*my ſweet Heart.*
meu Melzinho.	*my little Honey.*
meu querido Minino.	*my dear Child.*
meu lindo Anjo.	*my pretty Angel.*
meu Tudo.	*my all.*

Para

Para agradecer e Comprimentar, ou mostrar Benignidade.	*To thank and compliment, or shew Kindness.*
Eu vos agradeço.	*I thank you.*
Eu vos dou as Graças.	*I give you Thanks.*
Eu vos rendo mil Graças.	*I render you a thousand Thanks.*
Eu o farey com Gosto.	*I will do it with Pleasure.*
com todo meu Coraçaõ.	*with all my Heart.*
de Coraçaõ.	*heartily.*
eu vos sou obrigado.	*I am obliged to you.*
eu sou todo vosso.	*I am wholly yours.*
eu sou vosso servidor.	*I am your Servant.*
vosso humildissimo servidor.	*your most humble Servant.*
vos estais muito obrigador.	*you are too obliging.*
vos vos dais muito Trabalho.	*you give yourself too much Trouble.*
eu nenhum acho em vos servir.	*I find none in serving you.*
Tu eres muy benigno ou muito civil.	*you are very kind, or very civil.*
Isso he muito benevolo.	*That is very kind.*
que dezejas tu ter.	*What will you be pleased to have.*
eu dezejo que tu sejas livre commigo.	*I desire you to be free with me.*
sem Comprimento.	*without Compliment.*
sem Ceremonia.	*without Ceremony.*
eu te amo com todo meu Coraçaõ.	*I love you with all my Heart.*
eu tambem.	*and I also.*
fiate de mim.	*rely or depend upon me.*
mandame.	*command me.*

honrame com teus mandatos.	*honour me with your Commands.*
tens tu em que mandarme?	*have you any Thing to command me,* ou *have you any Commands for me?*
tu necessitas so mandarme.	*you need but command me.*
dispoem de teu Criado.	*dispose of your Servant.*
eu sô espero porteus mandatos.	*I only wait for your Commands.*
naõ tens mais que falar.	*do but speak.*
tu me fazes muito favour.	*you do me much Honour.*
deichemos Comprimentos eu rogo, pesso.	*let us forbear Compliments I pray.*
deichemos Cerimonias.	*let us forbear Ceremonies.*
pois na primeira Ocaziaõ,	*well then on the first Occasion,*
me valerey de teus Favores.	*I'll value myself of your Favours.*

Para afirmâr, negar, consentir.	*To affirm, deny, consent.*
he verdade.	*it is true.*
he verdade?	*is it true?*
naõ he mais que muita verdade.	*it is but too true.*
para vos dizer averdade.	*to tell you the Truth.*
realmente assim he.	*really it is so.*
quem o duvida?	*who doubts it? who questions it?*
naõ ha duvida.	*there is no doubt on it.*
eu creo que sim.	*I believe yes.*
eu creo que naõ.	*I believe not.*
eu digo que sim.	*I say yes.*

eu

eu digo que naõ.	*I say no.*
eu aposto que he.	*I lay it is.*
eu aposto que naõ he.	*I lay it is not.*
em minha consciencia.	*in my conscience.*
por minha vida.	*upon my Life.*
morra eu se te digo fabula, ou mintira.	*let me die if I tell you an Untruth or a Lye.*
sim, eu juro.	*yes, I swear.*
eu juro como sou Cavalheiro.	*I swear as I am a Gentleman.*
comó sou homem de bem.	*as I am an honest Man.*
sobre meu honor ou Credito.	*upon my Honour, or Credit.*
credeme.	*believe me.*
eu posso dizerte.	*I can tell you.*
eu posso a segurarte.	*I can assure you.*
eu apostaria alguma couza.	*I could lay something.*
naõ zombes.	*don't you jest.*
falas serio ?	*are you serious, or are you in earnest ?*
eu falo serio.	*I speak, or I am in earnest.*
sem duvida.	*I warrant you.*
tu tens ádivinhado.	*you have guessed right.*
metefte ó prego na Cabeça.	*you have hit the right Nail on the Head.*
eu te creyo.	*I believe you.*
pode crersete.	*one may believe you.*
isso naõ he impossivel.	*that is not impossible.*
tudo pode ser.	*all may be.*

Dehir,

Dehir, devir, de se mover.	*Of going, coming, stirring, &c.*
de onde vens?	*from whence come you?*
a onde vas?	*whither do you go,* ou *where are you going?*
eu venho, eu vou.	*I come, I go.*
vem asima, vem abaixo.	*come up, come down.*
vem dentro, say.	*come in, go out.*
apressate.	*make haste.*
naõ te movas da qui.	*do not stir from thence.*
espera ahy.	*stay there.*
vem junto amim.	*come near me.*
vaite.	*get you gone.*
vay teu caminho.	*go your ways.*
chegate, *ou* arredate atras, hum pouco.	*go back a little.*
vem aqui.	*come hither.*
espera hum pouco.	*stay a little.*
espera por mim.	*stay for me.*
naõ vas taõ depressa.	*do not go so fast.*
tu vas muy depressa.	*you go too fast.*
tirate da minha Vista.	*get you out of my Sight.*
naõ me toques.	*do not touch me.*
deicha isso.	*let that alone.*
porque?	*why?*
porque, por cauza.	*because.*
eu estou bem aqui.	*I am well here.*
a Porta está fechada.	*the Door is shut.*
a Porta esta aberta.	*the Door is open.*
abre a Porta.	*open the Door.*
fecha a Porta.	*shut the Door.*
abre Ajanella.	*open the Window.*
fecha Ajanella.	*shut the Window.*
vem por este caminho.	*come this Way.*

vay

vay por aquelle caminho.	*go that way.*
passa por este caminho.	*come*, ou *pass by that way.*
que buscas?	*what do you look for?*
que perdeste?	*what have you lost.*

Das Sezõis.	*Of the Seasons.*
que sezaõ te agrada melhor.	*what Season pleases you best?*
a Primavera he mais agradavel de todas as Sezõins.	*the Spring is the most pleasant of all Seasons.*
tudo seri comforme sua Natureza.	*every thing smiles in Nature.*
o Tempo he muy suave.	*the Weather is very mild.*
o Ar he temperado.	*the Air is temperate.*
nem he muy quente, nem muy frio.	*it is neither too hot, nor too cold.*
todas as Criaturas fazem emtaõ o Amor.	*all Creatures then make Love.*
nos naõ temos Primavera este Anno.	*we have no Spring this Year.*
nada, avança, adiante.	*nothing forward.*
a Sezaõ está bem atrazada.	*the Season is very backward.*
nos temos hum quente veraõ?	*we have a very hot Summer.*
que quente que está?	*how hot it is?*
está excessivamente quente.	*it is excessive hot.*
languido, anceado Tempo	*it is faint Weather.*
naõ posso aturar calor.	*I cannot endure Heat.*
eu suo, estou todo em hum suor.	*I sweat, I am all over in a Sweat.*

eu

eu nunca Exprimentey tal Calor, ou Tempo taõ quente.	*I never felt such Heat*, ou *such hot Weather.*
está hum bello Tempo para os Frutos da Terra.	*it is very fine Weather for the Fruits of the Earth.*
ha muita Abundancia de Fruta.	*there is Abundance of Fruit.*
todas as Arvores estaõ cheas de Fruta.	*all the Trees are full of Fruit.*
nos necessitamos de huã pouca de Chuva.	*we want a little Rain.*
o Tempo da segada he chegado.	*harvest Time draws near.*
começasse a segar o Trigo.	*they begin to cut down the Corn.*
os Prados estaõ segados.	*the Meadows are mowed.*
necessitamos recolher o Trigo.	*we must get in the Corn.*
nos estamos na Canicula.	*we are in the Dog-Days.*
o veraõ passou, ou se foy.	*the Summer is gone.*
o Outono, ou o cahir da Folha, tem tomado seu lugar.	*Autumn, or the Fall of the Leaf, has took its Place.*
vem chegando a Vindima.	*Vintage draws near.*
ha huma bella Vindima.	*there is a very fine Vintage.*
nos Vindimaremos em tres ou quatro Dias (para fazer Vinho).	*we shall gather Grapes (to make Wine) in three or four Days.*
os Vinhos seraõ bons este Anno.	*the Wines will be good this Year.*

Huã Collecçaõ de Adjectivos expressando diversas Qualidades.

good, bom.
ill, *bad*, ou *naughty*, mau.
wise, sabio.
great, grande.
small, pequeno:
thick, grosso.
thin, delgado.
tall, ou *high*, alto.
low, baixo.
long, longo, comprido.
short, curto, breve.
wide, ou *broad*, largo.
narrow, *strait*, estreito.
right, direito.
left, esquerdo, canhoto.
new, novo.
old, velho.
fat, gordo.
lean, magro,
heavy, pezado.
dull, entorpecido.
light, leve, ligeiro.
full, cheo.
empty, vazio.
hard, duro.
soft, molle, brando.
hard, *difficult*, difficultozo.
easy, facil.
sweet, doce.
bitter, amargo.
sour, azedo.
clean, limpo.

A Collection of Adjectives, expressing several Qualities.

neat, puro.
dirty, *nasty*, sujo.
sluttish, immunda.
sloven, immundo.
hot, quente.
cold, frio.
dry, seco.
wet, molhado.
moist, humido.
strong, forte.
weak, fraco.
stiff, tezo.
handsome, bello.
proper, proprio.
comely, bemparecido.
pretty, bonito.
ugly, *homely*, feo malfeito.
flat Nose, nariz chato.
one Eye, monoculo, de hum ollo.
squinty, vesgo, torto.
blind, cego.
purblind, peticego.
lame, coxo.
maimed, estropeado.
crooked, curvo, encurvado, corcovado.
bald, calvo.
dumb, mudo.
deaf, surdo, mouco.
toothless, desdentado.
dressed, vestido.

na-

naked, nu.
rich, rico.
poor, pobre.
odd, desigual.
expert, experto.
skilful, entendido.
unskilful, desemtentido.
drunk, bebedo.
healthy, saudavel.
sick, doente.
happy, feliz.
unhappy, infeliz.
true, verdadeyro.
false, falso.
troublesome, trabalhozo.
peevish, rabugento.
merry, alegre.
glad, alegre.
sad, *sorrowful*, triste.
imprudent, imprudente.
wise, sabio.
mad, louco.
just, justo.
unjust, injusto.
valiant, valente.
couragious, animozo.
coward, cobarde.
loyal, leal.
faithful, fiel.
unfaithful, infiel.
holy, santo.
prophane, profano.
godly, piadozo.
ungodly, impio.
charitable, caritativo.
proud, *lofty*, soberbo.
humble, humilde.
innocent, innocente.
sincere, sincero.
liar, mentirozo.
deceitful, enganador.
cunning, astuto.
sharp, agudo.
chaste, casto.
wanton, lascivo.
modest, modesto.
bashful, vergonhozo.
bold, atrevido.
fearful, medrozo.
affable, afavel.
courteous, cortêz.
rude, rudo.
clownish, grosseiro.
agreeable, *pleasant*, agradavel.
civil, civil.
kind, benigno.
clement, clemente.
merciful, misericordiozo.
pitiful, piadozo.
cruel, cruel.
revengeful, vingativo.
stubborn, teimozo, pertinaz, cabeçudo.
prodigal, prodigo.
obstinate, obstinado.
liberal, liberal.
covetous, cobiçozo.
niggardly, escaço.
grateful, agradecido.
ungrateful, desagradecido, ingrato.
glutton, glotaõ.
idle, ociozo.
lazy, preguiçozo.
slothful, vagarozo.

hasty,

hasty, apressado.
constant, constante.
inconstant, inconstante.
all, todo
none, nenhum.
any, qualquer.
some, algum.
somebody, alguem.
certain, certo.
few, pouco.
other, outro.
another, esse outro.
alone, sô.
either, o hum, ou outro.
neither, nem hum, nem outro.
both, ambos.

Cartas

Cartas Sobre a Mercancia ou Negocio.

Senhor F. F. *Londres*, 30 de *Janeiro*, 1750.

AS de vm^ce. de 3e 15 do mez passado receby em 5 do Corrente, pello Navio *F. F.* Capitaõ *B. B.* Mestre, e nellas advirto q^~. carregara Vm^ce. abordo do primeiro bom Navio destinado p^a. esta praça, as fazendas q' recommendey a seu cuydado na minha ultima, com esta vaó mais mostras mais o q' lhe peço he, de emcomendar a otintureiro q^~. ascorres tenhaõ viveza e q^~. sejaõ dedura; pello ultimo, Navio mandey avm^ce. a conta davenda da partida das meas de seda como tam bem dos 3 Caxiõs de chapeos q^~. me vieraõ consignados pello Navio A se se offerecerem mais de qual quer dos generos sobreditos sendo acomodados bem pode mandalos, por serem agora pedidos, com esta condicam q^~ sejam da moda e de bom, feitio; tenho contradado por suas 20 Pipas de azeite pellos primeiros navios deçafra e as 20 Pipas de Vinho tinto com as 20 Pipas e 3 quatros de Branco ja estam abordo do Navio *S. F.* Capitaõ *F* mestre dos quaes a Factura vay incluza e os conhecimentos iraõ pello correyo queyra Deos que cheque a salvamento sendo o que por oras se offerece

Mais obrigado Servidor de Vm^ce. q^~. S.M.B.

Mr.

Letters on Business, or Mercantile Affairs.

Mr. F. F. London, *the* 30*th of* January, 1750.

YOURS of the 3*d and* 15*th of last Month, came to hand on the* 5*th Current by the Ship* F. F. *Captain* B. B. *Commander; and therein I take notice, that you intend to put on board the next good Ship bound hither, the Goods I recommended to your Care in my last, herewith I send you more Patterns, but I would desire you to be solicitous with your Dyer, that the Colours may be lively and durable: By the last Ship I remitted you Account of Sales, of the Parcel of Silk, Stockings, and the three Boxes of Hats, by the Ship* A; *and if you meet with a Parcel of either, or both, to your Mind, you may please to send them, being now in Demand, but great Care must be taken of the Fashion and Make. I have taken care to secure your twenty Pipes of Oil for the first Ships in the Season, and put on board the Ship* N. *your twenty Pipes of Red, and twelve Pipes and three Hogsheads of White Wine, Capt.* F. *Commander, of which the Invoice goes herewith, and the Bills of Loading shall be sent by the Post, and hope will come safe to hand; which being the Necessary at present, I remain,*

SIR,

Your humble Servant,

Senhor Jasinto Jones,

Meu Senhor,

ESTAS servem para avizar a Vm^{ce}. como por este Navio, o *Derby*, tenho feito o Retorno do seu Cabedal em meu Poder em duas Bolsas de Diamantes montando a Pagodas 4396, 25 *Fan.* 10 *Casks* tendoas registrado comforme sua Ordem nos Livros da Companhia, incluzo está Conhecimento, junto com a Factura e sua Conta Corrente feichada a qual dezeijo q$^{\bar{}}$. chegue a Salvamento e q$^{\bar{}}$, lhe fasa boa Conta; como eu estou para Tornar com este Trespasso para *Europa*, a minha chegada a *Londres* terey o Honor dever aVm^{ce}. e darlhe huma exacta, conta do Negocio na *India*, e sou Enteiramente.

Forte St. George,
Nov. 12, 1750.

Mais humilde Servidor,
de Vm^{ce}. Q, S, M, B.

Abraham Truelock.

Londres, a 4 *Marco*, 1750-1.

A Lisboa. *Sr. Joaõ Ferrier.*

Meu Senhor,

ESTOU favorceido com a de Vm^{ce}. de 3do Corrente, e acho que em Comprimento a minha Ordem tem Vm^{ce}. comprado os quinhentos Barils de Arenques de fumo a Livras onze por Lastre eu naõ tenho duvida que esse foy o menor preso porque Vm^{ce}. os podia ter, e que sua boa Qualidade o Corresponda, meu Navio se esta preparando com toda a pressa para hir Buscalos elle se pode carregar

Mr. James Jones.

Sir,

THESE will advise you, that by this Ship the Derby, *I have made the Return of your Stock in my Hands in two Bulses of Diamonds amounting to Pagodas* 4396, 25 *Fan.* 10 *Casks, having enregistered them according to your Order in the Company's Books, inclosed is a Bill of Lading, together with Invoice, and your Account current closed, which I wish may come safe to you, and turn to a good Account, as I am returning by this Conveyance into* Europe, *at my Arrival at* London, *I shall have the Honour to see you, and give you an exact Account of the Trade in* India, *I am entirely,*

Sir,

Fort St. George,
Nov. 12. 1750.

Your humble Servant,

Abraham Truelock.

London, 4 *March*, 1750-1.

To Lisbon. Mr. John Ferrier.

Sir,

I Am favoured with yours of the 3d Current, and find, in Compliance to my Order, you have bought the five hundred Barrels of red-Herrings, at 11*l. per Last, I make no doubt, but that was the lowest Price that you could get them for, and the Goodness does answer it, my Ship is getting ready with all Speed to go down to fetch them, and she may be laden at your Key, being she draws no more than nine Foot*

gar em o seu Cáys, sendo que naõ tira mais de que nove Pes de Agua; como Vm^{ce}. he servido de apontarme, que me apoparia de Gastos quatro peniques por Baril, eu julgo que elle podera levar sette centos Barils ou mais, se assim for, quando elle chegar, Vm^{ce}. o podera despachar, o Capitaõ naõ tera Ocaziaõ de qualquer dinheiro, assim que naõ havera mister de nemhum Suprimento. Agradeso a Vm^{ce}. pella Informaçaõ que meda em relaçaõ dos Cambios de *Lisboa* a este Lugar mas como eu olho para Remessas do Dinheiro aquy taõ ariscado em Lettras do Exchequer. Vm^{ce}, sera servido de sacar sobre mim ao mais acomodado Cambio que lhe for possivel e suas Lettras a o uzual Curso as quais teraõ todo o divido Honor,

Muy serto Servidor de Vm^{ce}. que S. M. B.

Ambrozio Nimble-Tongue.

Londres 18, *Março*, 1750-1.

A Cadiz. *Senhor Joao Fryér,*

Meu Senhor,

DIversas Cartas de Vm^{ce}. me vieraõ a maõ a seu Tempo, como tambem minha conta Corrente a qual tenho notado em Conformidade com Vm^{ce}. sua ultima foy de 29 do Mez passado, na qual me da Vm^{ce}. recibo das trez Letras importantes seis Mill Pieces de Oito as quais meo Irmao *Joseph* mandou a Vm^{ce}. por minha Conta, e por minha Ordem; eu farey hum triste Negocio com ellas depois do desembolso de meu Dinheiro ha tanto Tempo, ademais que o Cambio me custou caro, eu Acho que seus limites a Vm^{ce}. foraõ mais somenos que o Preço, daPrata e Cambio; agora sendo que tenho esperado

Water, as you are pleased to mention, which will save me the Charge of four Pence per Barrel, I judge she will carry about seven hundred Barrels, or more, if so when she arrives, you may fit her up the Captain will not have Oceasion, for any Money so will want no Supply. I thank you for the Information you give me in relation to the Exchange between Lisbon, *and this Place, but as I look upon the Remittance of the Money hence, as hazardous in Exchequer Bills, you will be pleased to draw on me at the most commodious Exchange, that is possible, and your Bills at the usual Course, which shall meet with all due Honour from,*

Sir,

Your humble Servant,

Ambrose Nimble-Tongue.

London, March 18, 1750-1.

To Cadiz. Mr. John Fryer,

Sir,

YOUR several Letters came to Hand in due Time, as did my Accompt Current, which have noted in Conformity with you; your last to me was of 29 of last Month, wherein you give me Receipt of the three Bills, amounting to Six Thousand Pieces of Eight, which my Brother Joseph *sent to you for my Account and by my Order; I shall make but a sorry Bargain in them, after so long a Disbursement; besides they cost me a dear Exchange, I find his Limits to you were much under the Price of Plate and Exchange: Now since I have waited all this Time, and there being no Probability of their falling, be pleased to send*

perado todo este Tempo e naõ havendo Probilidade de sua baixa seja Vm^ce^. servido de mandarme meu Dinheiro como vem o Cambio tanto para esta praça, ou *Amsterdam*, como Vm^ce^. julgar me fará melhor Conta, se a Prata ou Cochonilha baixar a preço que a Vm^ce^. lhe pareça ser melhor do que por remessa de Cambio, em tal cazo invista Vm^ce^. meu Dinheiro em qualquer destes generos o que deixo inteiramente a Vm^ce^. estando persuadido que Vm^ce^. actuara em meus Negocios como se foraõ seus proprios, eu me alegraria ouvir da chegada da Frota que podera ser que dese algum alento a o Negocio para que huã pessoa podece fazer algum emprego que a o prezente naõ. Convida a nada sendo quanto se offrece

Servidor de Vm^ce^. que M. B.

Londres, Março 21, 1751.

A Cadiz, Senhor Joaõ Fryer,

Senhor,

DO outro lodo, está a Copia da minha ultima de 18 do Corrente, eu soponho que meu Irmaõ *Joseph* tem feito algumas Remesas a Vm^ce^. por minha Conta, do que saberey a quantia pello primeyro Correyo de Olanda; com esta mando a Vm^ce^. tres Letras, importantes quatro Mil pezos de Outo, sobre aboa pessoa de Vm^ce^. a quem as endousey, valor em minha Conta, cujo Dinheiro, Vm^ce^. será servido empregar, junto com aquelle que meu Irmaõ *Joseph* lhe tiver remetido, em dous, ou tres, Navios de Guerra, e me alegrarey que isto chegue a Tempo bastante para alcançar Senhor *John Trueman*, e os outros Navios de Guerra, em tal Cazo, e naõ de outro modo, podera Vm^ce^. sacar mais do que se lhe

my Money as the Exchange comes either for this Place or Amsterdam, *which you judge will turn most to Account. If the Plate or Cochineal should fall to a Price, which you may conceive will answer better than by remiss of Exchange, in such Case invest my Money in either of them, which I do intirely leave to you, being persuaded, you will act in my Affairs equal to your own. I should be glad to hear of the Fleet's Arrival, for, perhaps, might give some Heat to Business, that a Body could make some Employ, for at present, it does not invite to any thing, which is all from*

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

Londres, March 21, 1750-1.

To Cadiz, Mr. John Fryer.

Sir,

ON the other Side is Copy of my last to you of the 18th Instant; I suppose my Brother Joseph *has made you some Remittances for my Account, of which I shall know the Sum by the first Dutch Post. I herewith send you three Bills amounting to four Thousand Pieces of Eight on your goodself, to whom I have indorsed them Value in my Account, which Money please to employ, together with that my Brother* Joseph *has remitted you in two or three Men of War, and should be glad this should get Time enough to reach Sir* John Trueman's, *and the other Men of War: In such Case, and no other, you may draw, over and above what is remitted you for my Account, ten Thousand Ducats, and put it with my other Inte-*

lhe tem remetido por minha Conta, Dez Mil Ducados, e ponhaõs Vmce. com o meu outro Interese, em tres ou quatro Navios de Guerra, e seja servido de observar que sem embargo que eu ordeney a Vmce. na Copia da minha antecedente, para carregar em huã Galera ou Navio Marcante tres Mil Ducados, e em Navio de Guerra des Mil Ducados, e para sacar; eu revoco a Ditta Ordem, e peso a Vmce. que naõ carregue em Galera, ou Navio Marcante, mais de dous Mil Ducados, e que naõ sa que a o presente, mas somente que empregue o que tenho remetido a Vmce. e seja servido mandarme hua distincta Conta, com inteira informaçaõ do Negocio para meu Governo, e ficou com todo o devido respeyto.

Muy certo Servidor de Vmce: Q. S. M. B.

Hum escritinho que vay aberto a hum vezinho, ou Amigo, em qualquer ocasiam.

AO Senhor *G. S.* que *T. M.* o seu servo e criado beja a *S. M.* as maos mil vezes e que lhe faça amerce de lhemandar pello portador desta sendolhe precisamente necessario nesta ocasiam, e sempre ficara may promto as suas Ordens.

A. Q. D. G.

A Carta ou Instrumento de Procuraçam.

SAibam todos quantos este instrumento ou Carta de procuraçam virem que eu *A. B.* de *Londres* homem de negocio tenho nomeado e constituido e por

rest on three or four Men of War, and please to observe, that notwithstanding I ordered you in the foregoing Copy for to load in any Gally or Merchant-man, three Thousand Ducats, and in a Man of War, Ten Thousand Ducats, and for to draw, I do revoke the said Order, and desire you not to load in any Galley or Merchant-man, more than two Thousand Ducats, and for the present not to draw, but only employ what have remitted you, and please to send me a distinct Account of the Cost with full Information of the Business for my Government, and remain with due Respect,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

A short open Escrito, or Message, to a Friend or Neighbour, for any Thing upon Occasion.

TO Mr. *G. S.* that *T. M.* his most humble Servant, desires the Favour of him to send by the Bearer
having at present immediate Occasion for it, and he shall always remain obliged to him as his

Humble Servant.

A Letter of Attorney.

KNOW all Men, by these Presents, That I *A. B.* of *London*, Merchant, have named and constituted, and by these Presents do name, ordain, appoint,

por estes presentes, nomeo, ordeno, constituyo e faço o Senhor *B. C.* de o meo verdadeiro e ligitimo procurador, por mim e em meu Nome e ao meu uso pode demandar, arecadar e reçeber de *T. B.* Mercador, asoma de amim devida por ditto *T. B.* dando e por esta concedendo ao meu ditto Procurador o meu poder plenario e autoridade de exercitar e usar de todas taes auçoes e outras cousas em dereito necessarias para a cobrança da ditta divida, e em meu nome de dar e façer quitaçoes ou outras descargas, e geralmente de fazer e executar na materia sobre ditta taõ plenariamente como se eu mesmo fizese ou pudese fazer, estando pessoalmente presente ratificando, confirmando, e outor gando tudo e qualquer cousa que o ditto meu procurador legitimamente fizer ou causar de se fazer nella põr estes presentes. Em testemunha do que Assiney e selley esta em aos 20 dias demez de de 17 por *A. B.*

Assinado e Sellado adiante
de *T. A.*, *M. B.*, } Testimunhas.

A Carta ou o Instrumento de Fretamento.

ESTA Carta ou instrumento de Fretamento contratado feito aos vinto Sinco dias do mez de de *Anno* de mil este centos do nacimento de noso Senhor *Jesus Christo*, &c. Entre *T. B.* Mestre de baixo de Deos do bom navio nomeado, de dozentas e sincoenta toneladas de carga *P. M.* que ao presente esta Surto e ancorado no Rio de de hua parte e *E. T. M. B. L*, *&c.* homens de negocio da outra parte: Certificaõ que o ditto Mestre tem dado em alguer e fretado o Ditto Navio aos dittos homens de negocio e que elles os

appoint, and make my trusty Friend, *B. C.* of Merchant, my true and lawful Attorney, for me, and in my Name, and to my Use, to demand, sue for, recover, and receive of *T. B.* of Merchant, the Sum of to me due and owing by and from the said *T. B.* giving, and hereby granting unto my said Attorney my full Power and Authority to use and exercise all such Acts, Things, and Devices in the Law, as shall be necessary for recovering of the said Debt, and Acquittance, or other Discharges, in my Name, to make and give and generally to do and execute in the Premises, as fully as I myself might or could do, being personally present; ratifying, confirming, and allowing all and whatsoever my said Attorney shall lawfully do, or cause to be done therein, by these Presents. In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal, in the 20th of 17

Sealed and delivered
in the Presence of *A. B.*
T. A.
M. B.

The Copy of a Charter Party of Affreightment.

THIS Charter-party of Affreightment, indented, made the of the Month of *Anno Domini*, between *T. B.* Master, under God, of the good Ship or Vessel, called the of the Burthen of Tuns, or thereabouts, now riding at Anchor, in the River of of the one Part, and *E, T, M, B, L,* &c. Merchants, of the other Part, witnesseth, that the said Master hath granted and letten the said Ship to freight unto the said Merchants, and that they the said Merchants have accordingly

os dittos Homens de negocio tem tomado em aluger pella viagem aos concertos eas condiçoes, a Saber o ditto Mestre faz concerto, promete e otorga, por elle mesmo, ou seus Testamenteiros e Administradores e com os dittos homens de negocio, e qualquer delles, ou seus e a qualquer dos seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes, por estes presentes; que o ditto Navio forte e saõ de quilha, e bem bastantemente provido de mantimentos, enxarcias e gente, e aparelhado de todas as cousas convenientes e necessarias para fazer a viagem pordiante declarada; com o primeiro vento favoravel e bom tempo que Deos premitira despois da data destes presentes, partira do porto de com todas as taes fazendas e Mercadorias que os dittos homens de negocio ou os Seus Constituintes entrementes carregaram ou meteram abordo delle, e com ella em dereitura dara a vela eaplicara ao como ovento eo tempo mais favorecerem ao ditto Navio na sua viagem; e em chegando tao' perto do ditto lugar de elle o ditto Mestre ou os Seus Constituintes dentro de Dias detraballo para se contarem logo despois de tal sua chegada, naõ somente descaregaram entergaram as dittas fazendas e mercadorias metidas bordo do dito Navio a o sobre ditto, aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Feitores ou Constituintes ou a alguns ou algum delles em Salvamento e bem acondicionadas salvante o risco dos mares e o tolhimento de principes e Governadores mas tambem receberam, tornaraõ a caregar e tomaram abordo do ditto Navio de e dos ditto homens de negocio, dos seus Feitores ou Constituintes ou de alguns ou algum delles todas as taes fazendas e mercadorias que elles ou qualquer delles ali caregaram ou meteram abordo delle athe o comprimento inteiro da carga do ditto Navio; a Saber: tanto quanto bem sem podra arrumar debaixo da cuberta

no

cordingly hired her for the Voyage, and upon the Terms and Conditions following: That is to say, the said Master doth covenant, promise and grant for himself, his Executors, and Administrators, to and with the said Merchants, and either of them, their and either of their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents; That the said Ship, strong and staunch, and well and sufficiently victualled, tackled, manned, and apparelled, with all Things meet, needful, and necessary for the Performance of the Voyage hereafter mentioned, shall with the first fair Wind and Weather, which God shall send, after the Date of these Presents, depart from the Port of with all such Goods and Merchandises as the said Merchants, or their Assigns, shall in the mean time lade and put on board her, and therewith directly sail, and apply unto as Wind and Weather shall best serve for the said Ship to sail, and being arrived as near to the said Place of he the said Master, or Assigns, shall and will within working Days next, from and after such her Arrival to be accounted, not only unlade and deliver the said Goods and Merchandises put on board the said Ship at aforesaid, unto the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one of them, in Safety, and well conditioned, the Dangers of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes and Rulers excepted, but also shall and will receive, relade, and take on board the said Ship, of and from the said Merchants, their Factors or Assigns, or some or one of them, all such Goods and Merchandises as they or any of them shall there please to lade and put on board her, to the said Ship's full and compleat Lading; that is to say, as much as can conveniently be stowed in the whole Hold, and between Decks, afore the Main-mast, Room only reserved for the said Ship's Provisions, Tackle, and

Apparel,

no conves, e adiante do masto grande, Salvante so lugar pellos mantimentos enxarcias e a parelhos do ditto Navio, eos dittos dias de trabalho sendo a cabados ou o ditto navio sendo ali mais depressa despachado, o que primeiro soceder elle o ditto Mestre ou os seus Constituintes com a primeira boa ocasiam de tempo e vento favoravel em dereitura navegaraõ e tornaraõ a vir com o ditto Navio e a Sua Carga do ditto porto de descaregar, e recaregar de aqui dentro de dias de trabalho logo despois da entrada do ditto Navio dada na alfandega desta ditto elle o ditto Mestre ou o Seus Constituintes descaregam e entregaraõ as dittas fazendas e mercadorias carregadas abordo do ditto Navio ao seu descarregar e recarregar sobre ditto aos dittos homens de negocio, e os seus Testamenteiros, Administradores ou Constituintes em salvamento, salvante o risco dos mares e o tolhimento de Principes e Governadores, easim se acabara a ditta destinada Viagem Eos dittos homens de negocio concertam prometem e otorgam por elles mesmos e qualquer delles, ou seus e qualquer de seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes por estes presentes: que os Seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, Feitores o Constituintes naõ somente descaregaram e recaregaram o ditto, navio ao seu porto de descaregar e recaregar de sobre ditto, e despacharam e descaregaram o mesmo neste na maneira e forma asima declatado; e dentro dos certos dias e tempos sobre nomeados; Mas tambem por inteiro de todo o frete que se vencer, para se pagar e pedir por e durante esta presente destinada viagem; bem e verdadeiramente pagaram ou Cousaram que se pague ao ditto Mestre, aos seus Testamenteiros Administradores ou Constituintes a Conthia de de dinhero corrente de na maneira e

forn a

Apparel, and the said working Days being expired, or the said Ship there sooner dispatched, which first shall happen, he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will, with the then next Opportunity of Wind and Weather from her said unlading and relading Part of aforesaid, directly sail, return, and come back with the said Ship and Lading unto the Port of and here within working Days next after the said Ship shall be entered in the Custom-House of this said he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will unlade, and deliver the said Goods and Merchandizes, laden on Board the said Ship at her lading and relading aforesaid, unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, or Assigns in Safety, and well-conditioned, the Danger of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes, and Rulers excepted, and so end the said intended Voyage; and the said Merchants do covenant, promise and grant, for themselves, and either of them, their, and either of their Executors and Administrators, to and with the said Master, his Executors and Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents, that their Executors, Administrators, Factors, or Assigns, shall and will not only unlade and relade the said Ship, at her unlading and relading Port of aforesaid, and dispatch and discharge the same at this in Manner and Form as above expressed, and within the respective Days and Times above mentioned, but also shall and will, in full of all Freight to be due, payable, or demandable, for or during this present intended Voyage, well and truly pay, or cause to be paid, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, the Sum of of lawful Money of in Manner, and Form following: That is to say, Part thereof within

Days

forma seguinte A saber parte delle dentro em dias despois da entrada do ditto navio dado na alfandega de

Item mais delle dentro em dias proximo seguintes, e o restante do ditto frete inteiro dentro em dias logo despois da descarga do ditto Navio aqui em sobre ditto, E acordarse reciprocamente por e entre ambas as partes por elles mesmos, os seos particulares Testamenteiros, e Administradores que todos os gastos dos portos que se vencerem para pagarse ou pedirse, durante esta presente destinada viagem ; seram pagos e satisfeitos na maneira e, forma seguinte ; Asaber delles pellos dittos homens de negocio ou seus Testamenteiros ou Constituintes : Alem disso por este se concerta que prodra ser e seja licito aos e pellos ditto homens de negocio, os seus feitores ou Constituintes de reter o ditto navio em detença ao seu porto de descarga e recarga sobre ditto, e tambem a sobre ditto tanto tempo e tantos dias que se requeiram, alem dos dias certos acima apontados salvo que nam passem os, dias por inteiro ; Elles os dittos homens de negocio os seus Feitores Constituintes por cada hum e cada tal dia pagando ao ditto Mestre ou aos seus Constituintes de dia em dia como mesmo se vencer para se pagar, qualquer cousa sobreditta em contrario nao' obstante ; e pello comprimento de todas e de cada hua das cousas acima declaradas, as quaes por parte epello que toca ao ditto Mestre, aos seus Testamenteiros Administradores ou Constituintes e cada hum delles sam e devem de ser avidas, tidas, observadas e compridas, O ditto Mestre se obriga a sy mesmo os seus Testamenteiros e Administradores, juntamente com o ditto Navio, o seu frete, enxarcias e parelhos aos dittos homens de negocio aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes e cada hum delles na soma ou pena de de dinheiro corrente de

para

Days after the said Ship shall be entered in the Custom-house of *Item*, more thereof within Days then next following, and the remaining Part of the said whole Freight within Days next after the said Ship shall be delivered after lading here at aforesaid, and it is mutually agreed by and between the said Parties to these Presents, for themselves, their several Executors and Administrators, That all Port Charges which shall grow due, payable, or demandable, during this present intended Voyage, shall be paid and satisfied in Manner and Form following; That is to say thereof by the said Merchants, their Executors, Factors, or Assigns, and the other thereof by the said Master, his Executors or Assigns: Further, it is hereby agreed, that it shall and may be lawful unto and for the said Merchants, their Factors or Assigns, to keep the said Ship in Demurrage at her unlading and relading Port above mentioned, and also at aforesaid, over and above the respective Days aforementioned, such other Time and Number of Days as will be requisite so as the same exceed not Days in the whole, they the said Merchants, their Factors, for each and every such Day, paying unto the said Master or his Assigns Day by Day, where the same shall grow due and payable, any Thing aforesaid to the contrary notwithstanding; and for the Performance of all and singular the Premises, which on the Part and Behalf of the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, are and ought to be well and truly holden, observed and performed, the said Master doth bind and oblige himself, his Executors and Administrators, together with the said Ship and her Freight, Tackle and Apparel unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every

para ſe pagar bem everdareiramente por eſtes preſentes e tambem pello comprimento de todas e de cada huã nas couſas ſobre dittas, os quaes por parte epello que toca aos dittos homens de nogocio, aos ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores, Conſtituintes ou qualquer delles, Sam edevem de ſer guardadas, pagas e Compridas; os dittos homens de negocio ſe obrigam a ſy meſmos os ſeus Teſtamenteiros e Adminiſtradores, junta e ſeparadamente com a ſuas fazendas que ſe caregaram abordo do ditto Navio neſta preſente deſtinada viagem, ao ditto Meſtre aos ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes, e a cada hum delles, na ſemelhante Soma de pena de de Semelhante dinheiro corrente de para ſer pago bem e verdadeimente por eſtas preſentes; Em Teſtimunha do que as partes Sobredittas aſſinaram e Selaram reciprocamente eſtas preſentes Cartas de fretamento contratadas, ao dia e anno primeiro acima declarado

T. B.

Sellado e entregue
adiante de
A. B. C. D.

A Police de Seguro.

EM o Nome de Deos, *Amen*

Tanto no ſeu propio nome como por ou em o nome ou os nomes de todos e cada peſſoa ou peſſoas aquem o meſmo pretence, poſſa ou podra pertencer, em parte ou em todo faço Seguro, cauſa aſy meſmo e a elles, e a cada hum delles de aſſegurarſe, perdidos ou naõ perdidos

ſobre qualqer genero de fazendas e Mercadorias qualqer carregadas ou para ſe carregarem abordo do bom Navio por nome da Carga

de

of them, in the Sum or Penalty of Pounds of lawful Money of well and truly to be paid by these Presents, and likewise for the Performance of all and singular the Premises, which on the Part and Behalf of the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, or any of them, are and ought to be kept, paid, and performed, the said Merchants do bind and oblige themselves, their Executors, and Administrators, jointly and severally, together with their Goods, to be laden on board the said Ship, this present intended Voyage, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, in the like Sum and Penalty of of like lawful Money of also well and truly to be paid by these Presents. In Witness, whereof, the Parties aforesaid to these present Charter-parties indented, have interchangeably put their Hands and Seals the Day and Year first above written.

T. B.

Sealed and delivered in
the Presence of
A. B. C. D.

A Policy of Assurance.

IN the Name of God, *Amen*,
as well in his own Name, as for and in the Name and Names of all and every other Person and Persons to whom the same doth, may, or shall appertain, in Part, or in all, doth make Assurance, and causeth himself and them, and every of them, to be insured, lost, or not lost upon any Kind of Goods and Merchandise whatsoever, loaden or to be loaden aboard the good Ship called the Burthen Tons,

de toneladas, *P. M.* do que he Mestre debaixo de Deos *C. T. M.* ou quem quer que ſor por Meſtre do ditto Navio ou o Meſtre delle ſe nomea ou nomeara; principiando a aventura ſobre as dittas fazendas e Mercadorias de e logo deſpois de carregallas abordo do ditto Navio e aſſim ſe cõntinuara e ficara ate que o ditto Navio com as dittas fazendas e Mercadorias quaeſquer chegar eas meſmas ahi deſcarregadas em Salvamento; e ſera licito pello ditto navio; neſta viagem, deparar e deterſe em quaſquer portos ou lugares ſem prejuizo a eſte Seguro. As dittas ſazendas e, Mercadorias por concerto, ſam e ſeram avaliadas em Sem que ſede outra conta dellas meſmas, Tocante as Venturas e riſcos com que nos ou aſſeguradores contentamonos e que tomamos ſobre nos neſta viagem, Ellas ſam dos Mares, das naos de guerra, de fogo, inimigos. Coſſairos, ladrões, Roubadores, Jettezonas ou fazendas perdidas e deitadas no mar lettras de Marte, e contra Marte, ſobreſaltos tomadias no Mar, citaçoes, tolhimentos e detenças de todos os Reys, Princẽpes e povos de naçam condiçam ou qualidade qualquer barratria e contraſtes enganoſas do meſtre e dos Marinheiros, ede todos os outros perigos; perdas e deſaſtres que ja vieram ou que viram ou prejuizo deſaproveitamento ou dano das dittas fazendas e mercadorias ou de alguã parte dellas. E ſe a caſo ſoceder alguã perda ou deſventura, ſera licito aos Aſſeguradores Feitores, Servos e Conſtituintes de mandar fazer deligencias e trabalhar por, em a acerca da defeza Salvamento e recobramento das dittas fazendas e mercadorias ou de alguã parte dellas ſem prejuizo ao deſte Seguro, aos, gaſtos do que nos os Aſſeguradores contribuiremos cada hum conforme a Sua conthia nelle aſſegurada; e nos os Aſſeguradones eſtamos de acordo e concerto que eſta eſcritura e ſeguro tera tanta fotça evalor como amais

or thereabouts; wherefore *P. M.* is Master, under God, for this present Voyage or whosoever else shall go for Master in the said Ship, or by whatsoever Name or Names the said Ship, or the Master thereof, is or shall be named or called; beginning the Adventure upon the said Goods and Merchandise from and immediately following the Loading thereof aboard the said Ship
and so shall continue and endure until the said Ship, with the said Goods and Merchandise whatsoever, shall be arrived and the same there safely landed; and it shall be lawful for the said Ship in this Voyage to stop and stay at any Port or Places without Prejudice to this Assurance.
The said Goods and Merchandises, by Agreement, are and shall be valued at without further Account to be given for the same, touching the Adventures and Perils which we the Assurers are contented to bear, and do take upon us in this Voyage, they are of the Seas, Man of War, Fire, Enemies, Pirates, Rovers, Thieves, Jettezons, Letters of Mart and Counter-mart, Surprizals, Takings of Sea, Arrests, Restraints, and Detainments of all Kings, Princes, and People, of what Nation, Conditions, or Quality soever, Baratry of the Master and Mariners, and of all other Perils, Losses, and Misfortunes, that have or shall come to the Hurt, Detriment, or Damage of the said Goods and Merchandizes, or any Part thereof; and in Case of any Loss or Misfortune, it shall be lawful to the Assured Factors, Servants, and Assigns, to sue, labour, and travel, for, in, and about the Defence, Safeguard, and Recovery of the said Goods and Merchandises, or any Part thereof, without Prejudice to this Assurance, to the Charges whereof, we the Assurers will contribute each one according to the Rate and Quantity of his Sum herein assured: And it is agreed by us the Insurers,

amais authentica Police ou escritura de Seguro dantes feita em qualquer parte de Eassim nos os Asseguradores somos contentes e por este prometemos e obrigamonos cada hum por sua propria parte, os nossos Eredeyros, Testamenteiros. Administradores e Constituintes pello verdareiro comprimento das cousas acima declaradas, confessando que estamos pagos e satisfeitos do que se nos deve aconta deste Seguro.

Em testimunha do que nos os Asseguradores, assinamos ao pe deste com as conthias asseguradas, *&c.*

Eu *A. B.* Sou Contente com este Seguro por cem livras Esterl. *L.* em de } 100 *£.*
1745.

O Conhecimento.

DIGO eu *T. B.* de Mestre ou Capitaõ que sou do Navio que Deos salve por Nome que ao presente esta surto e ancorado no porto de para com o favor de Deos seguir viagem ao porto de aonde he minha dereita descarga, que he verdade, que receby, e tenho carregado dentro do ditto Navio debaixo de cuberta enxuto e bem acondicionada de . Marcado da marca defora o qual me obrigo e prometo, levandome Deos abom salvamento o ditto Navio ao ditto Porto de entregar em nome do sobreditto a *T. M.* auzente aquem seus poder tiver pagando me de frete para asim comprir e guardar, obrigo minha pessoa e bems e ditto Navio em certeza do qual dey tres conhecimentos de hum theor assinados gor mim ou por meu Escrivaõ, hum comprido

that this Writing and Assurance shall be of as much Force and Effect as the surest Policy or Writing of Assurance heretofore made in or elsewhere in and so we the Assurers are contented, and do hereby promise and bind ourselves, each one for his own Part, our Heirs, Executors, and Goods, to the Assured, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, for the true Performance of the Premises, confessing ourselves paid the Consideration due unto us for this Assurance, by In Witness whereof, we the Assurers have subscribed our Names and Sums assured in.

I *A. B.* am contented with this Assurance for One hundred Pounds. Witness my Hand } 100 £.
1745.

A Bill of Lading.

SHIPPED, by the Grace of God, in good Order, and well-conditioned, by in and upon the good Ship called the whereof is Master under God, for this present Voyage and now riding at Anchor in and, by God's Grace, bound for to say being marked and numbered as in the Margin and are to be delivered in like good Order, and well-conditioned, at the aforesaid Port of the Danger of the Seas only excepted, unto Mr. or his Assigns, he or they paying for the said Goods with Primage and Avarage, as is accustomed. In Witness whereof, the Master and Purser of the said Ship hath affirmed to three Bills of Lading, all of this Tenor and Date; the one of which three Bills being accomplished, the other two to

prido os outros naõ valham ; feito em
em de . de 1745 Annos.
Do que contem naõ sey.

Ou Instrumento ou Escritura de Compromisso.

A Todos quantos este presente Instrumento ou Escritura de Compromisso, virem, de nos Acredores de *G. M.* Mercardor de Saude ; Em como ditto *G. M.* ao presente sica devendo e em dereito deve a nos os Acredores delle ditto *G. M.* varias e deversas somas de Dinhero, *&c.* As quaes em rasam de muitas dividas e alguas dellas muy grandes, que tambem em dereito se lhe devem a elle, nem se podem arrecadar sem algua dilaçam de tempo, epor serem alguas dellas irrecuperaveis sem demanda, elle esta por ora muito desabilitado de fazer, pagamento a nos os seus Acredores da, nosa inteira e justa divida conforme asua vontade e desejo ; ao respeito de que, elle nos pede com todo o encarecimento que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada hum de nos fossemos servidos de dar e conceder a elle o Ditto *G. M.* aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, ou Constituintes, tanta largeza o dilaçam de tempo pello pagamento e satisfaçam de nossas dividas particulares que lhe parecer justo e razaõ pello alcance e cobrança das dittas dividas, A saber, que nos e cada hum de nos ficassemos contentes a tomar e receber de nossas dividas inteira sem
para se repartirem em partes, para sepagarem em pagamentos diversos na maneira e forma Seguinte A Saber, o primeiro pagamento della hade ser e o resto pagarsea em proximo pella inteira paga e Satisfaçam das dittas dividas especeficadas ; E pello mais plenario comprimento dos varios pagamentos sobre-

dittos

ſtand void. And ſo God ſend the good Ship to her deſired Port in Safety. *Amen.* Dated in on of 1745.

Inſide and Contents unknown.

A Letter of Licence.

TO all People, to whom this preſent Writing ſhall come, We the Creditors of *G. M.* of Merchant ſend greeting. Whereas the ſaid *G. M.* at this preſent Time, doth ſtand indebted, and doth juſtly owe unto us the ſaid Creditors of him the ſaid *G. M.* diverſe and ſundry Sums of Money, *&c.* which by reaſon of many Debts, and ſome of them very great, that are likewiſe juſtly owing unto him, and cannot be had or recovered without ſome Reſpite of Time, and ſome of them not without Suit, he is very much diſabled at preſent to make Payment unto us the ſaid Creditors, our whole and juſt Debt, as he ſeemeth willing and deſirous; in Conſideration whereof, he inſtantly deſireth us, That we the ſaid Creditors, and every of us, would be pleaſed to give and grant unto the ſaid *G. M.* his Executors, Adminiſtrators, or Aſſigns, ſuch Liberty or Reſpite of Time for the Payment and Satisfaction of our ſeveral Debts, as he thinketh reaſonable for the obtaining, getting, and recovering of the ſaid Debts, *viz.* That we and every of us would be content to take, and accept of our whole Debts in to be divided in Parts, to be paid at ſeveral Payments, in Manner and Form following, *viz.* The firſt Payment thereof to be and the Reſidue to be paid at next in full Payment and Satisfaction of the ſaid ſeveral Debts: And for the more full Performance of the ſaid ſeveral Payments aforeſaid, in ſuch Manner and Form

dittos em tal maneira e forma como acima se limita e declara, ao verdadeiro intento destas presentes, elle o ditto *G. M.* ao ou antes do sera obrigado a nos os dittos acredores na mesma conformidade, por hua obrigaçam que sefara na melhor forma de dereito com todos e cada hum dos pagamentos na maneira em cima limitada, hum certo lugar ou lugares convinientes de nos os dittos Acredores nomeados, e apena de cada huã das obrigacoes hade ser dobrada da Soma inteira incluza nella mesma para ser a nos entregue e acada hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros ou Constituintes, ao ou antes do proximo Seguinte data esta; por esta causa Saibase; que nos os dittos Acredores a qui em baixo assinados, e cada hum de nos para sy em particular, e por seu. Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes ao respeito do em cima especificado e declarado, por estes presentes devontade propria consentimentos, contratamos, propetemos e concordamos ao e com o ditto *G. M.* ou seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes por estes presentes que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes aceitaremos do ditto *G. M.* dos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, todas e cada huã de taes dividas e conthias dinheiro do ditto *G. M.* a nos e cada hum de nos, devidas evencidas na vertude de taes obrigaçones, Segurança ou Seguranças sobredittas para se pagarem em tal modo e maneira, e aos taes dias e tempos que acima se limitaõ e requerem. E alem, disso, que nos os dittos Acredores e cada hnm de nos, ou nossos, e cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes em comformidade ao entregue da ditta Obrigaçam anos e a cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros Administradores, e Constituintes ao custo do ditto *G. M.* os seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes, Sellaremos assinaremos e

na

Form as is above limited and declared, according to the true Meaning of these Presents, he the said *G. M.* shall and will, at, or before the become bound unto us the said Creditors respectively, by one Obligation in due Form of Law to be made, including all and every the Payments in such Sort as is above limited, at some convenient Place or Places by every of us the said Creditors to be nominated and appointed, and the Penalty of every Obligation to be double the whole Sum included in the Condition of the same to be delivered to us, and every of us, our Executors or Assigns, at or before the next ensuing the Date hereof: Know ye therefore, that we the said Creditors, whose Names are here under written, and every of us for his own Part, and for his Executors, Administrators and Assigns, for the Consideration above specified and expressed, do by these Presents willingly consent, covenant, promise and agree to and with the said *G. M.* his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, to accept of the said *G. M.* his Executors and Assigns, all and every of the said Debts and Sums of Money by the said *G. M.* unto us, and every of us, owing and paying upon such Obligations, Assurance and Assurances, as aforesaid, to be paid in such Manner and Sort, and at such Days and Times, as is above limited and required. And further, that we the said Creditors, and every of us, our, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, respectively upon the Delivery of the said Obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, shall and will, at the Charge of the said *G. M.* his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, seal, subscribe, and, in due Form of Law, deliver to the said *G. M.* our sufficient general Release, for him, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, to bear Date and

na melhor forma e dereito entregaremos ao ditto *G. M.* a nossa geral e sufficiente descarga, para ser rendida por elle o ditto *G. M.* ou seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes a data ea limitaçam ante o do dia e data desta obrigaçam nova; em testimunha do que a esta temos assinado e sellado ao dia e no anno, *&c.*

A Letra de Cambio.

Londres, por 300 Milreis.

A Vista desta minha primeira Letra de Cambio pagara Vm. ao Senhor *T. M.* ou Ordem a Conthia de trezentos Milreis em dinheiro corrente de Portugal, o Valor, recebido de Senhor *T. D.* a tempo fara bom pagamento. lançandoa na conta como por avizo de

Ao Senhor *T. M.* Mercador *S. D. V. M.*
em Lisboa. *T. M.*

Lisboa em do 1746, por 250 £. Starl.

A Quarenta Dias Vista desta minha Segunda Letra de Cambio, a primeira naõ sendo paga, pagara Vm. ao Senhor *F. G.* & Compania, ou Ordem a Soma de dozentas e Cinquenta libras Esterlinas em moeda corrente de Ingalaterra, o valor recebido de Senhor *J. D.* a tempo fara bom pagamento assentandoa na conta com por avizo de

Ao Senhor *T. B.* Mercador *H. S.*
em Londres.

and Limitation, before the Day of the Date of this New Obligation to be made for the Debt. In Witness whereof, we have hereunto set our Hands and Seals. Dated the
of *&c.*

Bills of Exchange.

London of 1744 for 300 Milreas.

AT Sight of this my first Bill of Exchange, please to pay to Mr. *T. M.* or Order, the Sum of Three Hundred Milreas, in current Money of *Portugal*, Value received of Mr. *T. D.* at Time. Make good Payment, placing it to Account, as *per* Advice, from, *S I R*,
To Mr. T. M. Merchant *Yours*, H. S.
in *Lisbon.* *T. M.*

Lisbon of 1744, for 250 *£*. Sterl.

AT Forty Days Sight, of this my second Bill of Exchange, my first and third not being paid, please to pay to Mr. *F. G.* and Company, or Order, the Sum of Two Hundred and fifty Pounds *Sterling* in current Money of *England*, Value received of Mr. *J. D.* at Time. Make good Payment, and place it to Account, as *per* Advice, from *S I R*,
To Mr. T. B. *Merchant* *Yours*, H. S.
in *London*, *F. P.*

O Protesto de huã Letra de Cambio.

SAIBAM todos a quem esta presente escritura tocar que aos domez de, do anno de ao requerimento de *P. C.* Mercador de eu *M. N.* Tabaliaõ de notas jurado e admitido pella autoridade del Rey, *&c.* fuy a casa de morada de Senhor *T. B.* sobre quem a Letra de Cambio em cima referida he sacada, e mostrey a original ao ditto *T. B.* requerendo a sua aceitaçam della; o que merespondeo que naõ aceitaria a ditta Letra por huãs' razoens que escrevesse ao Senhor *T. P.* o sacador; pella qual razaõ eu o ditto Tabaliaõ prostetey, e por estes presentes protesto, tanto contra o ditto *F. P.* o sacador como tambem contra o ditto *T. B.* sobre quem he sacada, demais contra todas as outras pessoas, Endorsadores, ou outras nella interessados, por todos os Cambios, Recambios, danos e interesses quaesquer: Em precença de *H. J. S. T.* chamados por Testemunhas a este presente acto feito no meu Escritorio em o dia e anno acima declarado.

M. N. Notario Publico.

Varias Formas de Recibos.

Dinheiro recibido por inteiro.

REceby 1 *Janeiro*, 1750, do Senhor *Thomas Crew*, Ceis Livras Cete Xilins e Ceis peniques por inteiro comprimento de todas as contas, por

Dinheiro recibido por Conta de meu Amo.

REciby a 22 de *Fevereiro* 1750, do Sr. *Jonas Lee*, quatro Livras e Cinco Xillins por Conta de meu amo *Moises Trust*, por.

Din-

A Protest of a Bill of Exchange.

KNOW all Persons whom this present Writing may concern. that the of in the Year at the Request of Mr. *P. C.* of Merchant, *T. M. N.* Publick Notary, sworn and admitted by Authority of his most sacred Majesty, did go to the Dwelling-house or Habitation of Mr. *T. B.* upon whom the abovenamed Bills of Exchange is drawn, and shewed the Original unto the said Mr. *T. B.* demanding his Acceptance of the same, who answered me he should not accept the same Bill for some Reasons he should write Mr. *F. P.* the Drawer: Wherefore I the said Notary did protest, and by these Presents protest, as well against the said *F. P.* the Drawer, as likewise against the said *T. B.* upon whom it is drawn; as also against all other Persons, Indorsers, or others therein concerned, for all Changes, Rechanges, Damages, and Interest whatsoever, in Presence of *H. J.* and *S. T.* called for Witnesses to this present Act, done in my Office in the Day and Year above mentioned. *M. N.* Notary Publick.

Various Forms of Receipts.

Money received in full.

REceived 1st *January*, 1750, of Mr. *Thomas Crew*, Six Pounds Seven Shillings and Sixpence, in full of all Demands, *per*

For another's Use.

REceived 22d *February*, 1750, of Mr. *Jonas Lee*, Four Pounds Five Shillings, for the Use of my Master *Moses Trust*, *per*

Money

Dinheiro recebido em parte.

REciby a 30de Março, 1751, do Sr. *Jacinto Cook*, Cincõ Livras Cinco Xilins, em parte de doze Livras e dez Xilins, por Conta de meu pay *Antonio Truelove*, por

Dinheiro recebido em parte de Contas que nao' estam ajustadas.

REciby a 24 de *Abril*, 1751, da Senhora *Martha Rich*, por maõs de Pedro Cornet, onze Livras á Conta, *por*

Quando hum Rol ou Conta se paga por inteiro.

REceiby a 15 de Mayo 1751, a conthia de esta Conta, *por*

Quando se pagua dinheiro a Conta dehum rol.

REceiby 6 de *Junho* 1751, cete livras emparte desta Conta, *por*

Notas ou Obrigacoens que faz hum Homem quando toma dinheiro emprestado.

Londres, 4 de *Junho* 1751.

EU abaixo firmado premeto pagar a o Sr. *E. D.* Banqueiro do Thezouro de sua Majestade do Excise, ou asua ordem quarenta dias despois da data desta obrigaçaõ quatro centas e trinta livras por valor recebido.

£ 430 *p Christovo Wade.*

EU abaixo firmado premeto pagar a o Sr. *Paulo Barker* cavalheiro ou sua ordem em sendo requerido trezentas, e noventa, e quatro livras dous Xilins

Money received in Part.

RReceived 30th of *March*, 1751, of Mr. *James Cook*, Five Pounds Ten Shillings, in Part of Twelve Pounds Ten Shillings, for my Father *Anthony Truelove*, *per*

Money received on Accounts unsettled.

REceived 24th *April*, 1751, of Mrs. *Martha Rich*, by the Hands of *Peter Cornet*, Eleven Pounds on Account. *per*

When a Bill is paid in full.

REceived 15th *May*, 1751, the full Contents hereof, *per*

When a Bill is paid in Part.

REceived 26th *June*, 1751, Seven Pounds in Part hereof, *per*

Promissory Notes, for a Man's self, &c.

London, *June* 4th, 1751.

IPromise to pay to Mr. *Edward Draper*, Cashier of his Majesty's Revenue of Excise, or Order, forty Days after Date. Four hundred and thirty Pounds. Value received.

£ 430 *per Christopher Wade.*

IPromise to pay to *Paul Barker*, Esq; or Order on Demand, Three hundred and ninety-four Pounds, Two Shillings, and Six-pence,

Xilins e ceis peniques por valor recebido hoje 17 de *Julio*, 1751.

£ 394 2 6 *p Philip Venham.*

EU abaixo firmado premeto pagar ao Sr. *J. T.* ou sua ordem quarenta, e nove livras, e tres Xilins 6 mezes despois da data desta obrigaçao' por valor recebido em verdade do que a asigney hoje 24 de Agosto 1751.

£ 49 3

N. B. Observece q̃. em notas ou obrigaçoens sempre se declara a soma recebida sem a qual nao' sao' de nenhuma força nem tem Authoridade.

F I N I S.

Value received this 17th of *July*, 1751.

£ 394 2 6 *per Philip Venham.*

I Promise to pay to Mr. *J. T.* or Order, Forty nine Pounds Three Shillings, six Months after Date, Value received. Witness my Hand this 24th of *August*, 1751.

£ 49 3 *per William Jones.*

N. B. Observe in promissory Notes that the Value received is mentioned, or they are of no Force.

F I N I S.

one hu
two
three
four
five
Six
Seven
Eight
Nine — athousand — mi
Ten
Eleven
Twelve
thirteen
fourteen
fifteen
Sixteen
Seventeen
Eighteen
Nineteen
Twenty.

Thirty — Trinta
Forty — quarenta
fifty — Sincoenta
Sixty — Secenta
Seventy — Setenta
Eighty — Oitenta
Ninety — Noventa
a hundred — Cento

[illegible]

[redacted]

[redacted] [redacted]

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
A 000 090 476 3